



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



2286.11

ARVARD COLLEGE  
From the  
EDWARD I  
Pope Pr





3 2044 036 355 0

for ~~the~~ ~~following~~ ~~part~~

I. Chap. 27-

§ 9, § 10

§ 44 rem. 3.

Circumstantial 1 rel. sent.

Final Clauses. Consecutive  
 + Causal  
Modes -  
 Tabulated Scheme.  
Circumstantial

Tenses

and 3<sup>rd</sup> Appendix (Arabic as  
 sent. of Hebrew)

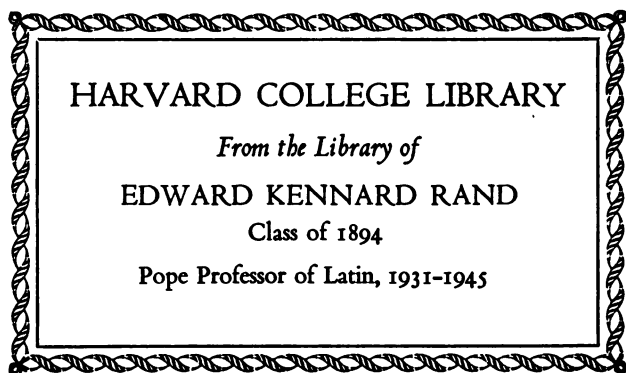
VII Accents (not necessary)  
 Driver & Moore



\$1.88

April 26. 1895

2286.11



Edward Kennard Rand

31 Divinity Hall

Cambridge





ante in the second half. 'Kinner the ex line, never. Israel has not been.' True fall compound sentences

## Complex Sentences

contains subordinate clause introd. (or not) by a particle. (e.g. some circumstantial clauses).

Clause may be of 11 varieties.

I. Descriptive Parenthetic (Circumstantial)

II. Relative either a) Complementary (adding) 1-

'This series is one of great importance to the biblical scholar, and as regards its general execution it leaves little or nothing to be desired.'—*Edinburgh Review*.

## KEIL AND DELITZSCH'S COMMENTARIES ON AND INTRODUCTION TO THE OLD TESTAMENT.

INTRODUCTION, 2 VOLS. . . . . (Keil).	PSALMS, 3 VOLS. . . . . (Delitzsch).
PENTATEUCH, 3 VOLS. . . . . (Keil).	PROVERBS, 2 VOLS. . . . . (Delitzsch).
JOSHUA, JUDGES, AND RUTH, 1 VOL. . . . . (Keil).	ECCLESIASTES AND SONG OF SOLOMON . . . . . (Delitzsch).
SAMUEL, 1 VOL. . . . . (Keil).	ISAIAH, 2 VOLS. . . . . (Delitzsch).
KINGS, 1 VOL., AND CHRONI- CLES, 1 VOL. . . . . (Keil).	JEREMIAH AND LAMENTA- TIONS, 2 VOLS. . . . . (Keil).
EZRA, NEHEMIAH, AND ESTHER, 1 VOL. . . . . (Keil).	EZEKIEL, 2 VOLS. . . . . (Keil).
JOB, 2 VOLS. . . . . (Delitzsch).	DANIEL, 1 VOL. . . . . (Keil).
	MINOR PROPHETS, 2 VOLS. . . . . (Keil).

THE above Series (published in CLARK'S Foreign Theological Library) is now completed in 27 Volumes, and Messrs. CLARK will supply any EIGHT VOLUMES for TWO GUINEAS (Complete Set, £7, 2s.).

Separate volumes may be had at the non-subscription price of 10s. 6d. each.

So complete a Critical and Exegetical Apparatus on the Old Testament is not elsewhere to be found in the English language; and at the present time, when the study of the Old Testament is more widely extended than perhaps ever before, it is believed this offer will be duly appreciated.

'Very high merit, for thorough Hebrew scholarship, and for keen critical sagacity, belongs to these Old Testament Commentaries. No scholar will willingly dispense with them.'—*British Quarterly Review*.

subject) or b) restrictive III. Final (Purpose).  
II. Consecutive (Result). I. Comparative.  
VI. Temporal. VII. Locative (of Place). VIII.  
Exceptional. IX. Causal. X. Conditional.  
XI. Substantive.

Possible for the subordinate clause to be of more than one class.

*Recently published, in demy 8vo, Eleventh Edition, price 7s. 6d.,*

# AN INTRODUCTORY HEBREW GRAMMAR

*WITH PROGRESSIVE EXERCISES IN READING AND WRITING.*

By A. B. DAVIDSON, M.A., LL.D.,

PROFESSOR OF HEBREW, ETC., IN THE NEW COLLEGE, EDINBURGH.

'A text-book which has gone into its tenth edition needs no recommendation here. . . . Certain changes, in the introduction to new examples and the enlargement of some parts where brevity tended to obscurity, will add to the already great merits and widely acknowledged usefulness of the book.'—*Critical Review*.

# HEBREW SYNTAX



PRINTED BY MORRISON AND GIBB,

FOR

T. & T. CLARK, EDINBURGH.

LONDON : SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, HAMILTON, KENT, AND CO. LIMITED.

NEW YORK : CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS.

TORONTO : THE WILLARD TRACT DEPOSITORY.

Introductory Hebrew Grammar

# HEBREW SYNTAX

BY

REV. A. B. DAVIDSON, LL.D., D.D.

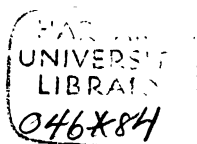
PROFESSOR OF HEBREW AND OLD TESTAMENT EXEGESIS  
NEW COLLEGE, EDINBURGH

EDINBURGH

T. & T. CLARK, 38 GEORGE STREET

1894

2286.11  
✓ ~~6~~





## PREFACE

---

THE following pages consist of notes on Syntax, partly dictated for a number of years to a class. These notes have been expanded and connected together so as to complete my *Introductory Hebrew Grammar*. It was intended that the Syntax should be on the same scale as the earlier half of the Book, though it has become perhaps rather fuller. The main principles have been printed in larger type, and the less common, poetical or anomalous usages thrown into the form of notes. The illustrative examples, at least the earlier ones in each case, have been taken as much as possible from the classical prose, but references have been multiplied under the impression that they might be useful in forming exercises for prose composition, and the purposes of composition have been had in view in the form given to a number of the sections. Fuller details on individual points must be sought in special treatises, such as Canon Driver's *Tenses*, a work which the student should always keep beside him. The same author's treatment of the Particles in the new Oxford *Lexicon* promises to be of great utility.

A number of points in Syntax are still involved in obscurity, such as the use of the Imperf. and its interchange with other Tenses, especially in poetry; the use of the Conversive or Consecutive Tenses, and the use of the Jussive,

▼

particularly in later writings. What has been said on these points, if it do nothing more, may make intelligible the state of the question regarding them.

From the assumption, perhaps, that the Predicate is the principal element in the Sentence, Arabic Grammars begin Syntax with the verb, and this order has been followed in some recent Hebrew Grammars. It may be disputed which order is the more logical in analysing the Sentence. The order here followed, Pronoun, Noun, Verb and Sentence, was adopted in order to make the book run somewhat parallel to the *Introductory Grammar*, and in the hope that the two might partly be read simultaneously. An occasional section on Syntax is felt by students to be a relief amidst the drudgery of committing forms and paradigms. In order to avoid repetition, treatment of Infin. and Ptcp., which have both a nominal and verbal character, was postponed till the sections on the Government of the verb had been completed.

Ewald's *Syntax* is a complete thesaurus of the language, and is indispensable. It is, however, not so well suited for practical teaching. The *Syntax* of Gesenius has recently been very successfully recast by Professor Kautzsch. An announcement made some time ago led to the hope that a translation of this work would come from the Oxford press. If this expectation had been fulfilled the present book might not have appeared. The *Syntax* of Müller's *Schulgrammatik*, so worthily rendered by Professor Robertson of Glasgow University, though rather defective in examples, can never be superseded. The fine sensibility of the author, too early lost to Oriental learning, for Shemitic idiom and expression is felt on every page. Useful contributions to Syntax have also

been recently made by American scholars, such as Professor Green's *Grammar* and the *Syntax* of President Harper. I trust that the present compendium may also be of some service in its own place in helping readers to understand the language of the Old Testament.

I have to express my great obligations to Mr. Charles Hutchison, M.A., Hebrew tutor, New College, Edinburgh, who has read over the proofs, and whose accurate scholarship has helped me greatly.

EDINBURGH, *September* 1894.





# TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
<b>SYNTAX OF THE PRONOUN</b>	<b>I</b>
Personal Pronoun	1
Demonstrative Pronoun	3
Interrogative Pronoun	6
Relative Pronoun	8
Other Pronominal Expressions	12
<b>SYNTAX OF THE NOUN</b>	<b>15</b>
Gender	15
Number	17
Case	20
Determination. The Article	22
The Genitive. Construct	30
Nominal Apposition	39
The Adjective	44
The Adjective. Comparison	47
The Numerals	50
<b>SYNTAX OF THE VERB</b>	<b>58</b>
The Perfect	58
The Imperfect	64
Imperfect with Strong Vav	70
Perfect with Strong Vav	78
Perf. and Impf. with Light Vav	84
The Moods	86
The Moods with Light Vav	90
<b>GOVERNMENT OF THE VERB. THE ACCUSATIVE</b>	<b>95</b>
Absolute Object	96
Free Subordination of Words in Acc.	97
Accusative of Direct Object	102
Verbs with two Acc. of the Obj.	107

	PAGE
Construction of the Passive . . . . .	112
Subordination of one Verb to another . . . . .	113
Infinitive Absolute . . . . .	116
Infinitive Construct . . . . .	123
The Participle . . . . .	130
Subordination by Prepositions . . . . .	138
<b>SYNTAX OF THE SENTENCE . . . . .</b>	<b>144</b>
The Sentence itself . . . . .	144
Nominal Sentence . . . . .	145
Verbal Sentence . . . . .	146
Compound Sentence . . . . .	148
Expression of Subject . . . . .	151
Complement of Verbal Sentence . . . . .	155
Agreement of Subj. and Pred. . . . .	156
<b>PARTICULAR KINDS OF SENTENCE . . . . .</b>	<b>162</b>
Interjectional Sentence . . . . .	162
Affirmative Sentence . . . . .	164
Interrogative Sentence . . . . .	166
Negative Sentence . . . . .	171
Conditional Sentence . . . . .	175
Optative Sentence . . . . .	182
Conjunctive Sentence . . . . .	184
Circumstantial Clause . . . . .	185
Relative Sentence . . . . .	190
Temporal Sentence . . . . .	193
Subject and Object Sentence . . . . .	196
Causal Sentence . . . . .	198
Final Sentence . . . . .	199
Consequential Sentence . . . . .	200
Comparative Sentence . . . . .	201
Disjunctive Sentence . . . . .	201
Restrictive, Exceptive, &c., Sentence . . . . .	202
<b>INDEX OF PASSAGES . . . . .</b>	<b>205</b>
<b>INDEX OF SUBJECTS . . . . .</b>	<b>230</b>

# HEBREW SYNTAX

## SYNTAX OF THE PRONOUN

### PERSONAL PRONOUNS

§ 1. In their full form the Personal pron. are employed only in the Nom. case. In the oblique cases (Gen., Acc.) they are attached in the form of suffixes to other words. On the Cases, cf. § 18, Gr. § 17.

When a pron. in the oblique case is repeated for the sake of emphasis, it is put in the absolute form. *Gen.* as suff. 1 K. 21. 19 בְּדָמָהּ בְּמֶלֶךְ גַּם אֶתָּה *thine own* blood. 2 S. 17. 5 מִמֶּלֶךְ בְּפִי גַם־הוּא what is in *his* mouth also. Nu. 14. 32, 2 S. 19. 1, Jer. 27. 7, Ez. 23. 43, Ps. 9. 7, Pr. 23. 15. Or gen. with prep. 1 S. 25. 24 בִּי־אֲנִי הָעוֹן on *me* be the guilt. 1 K. 1. 26, Ezr. 7. 21. In the acc. Gen. 27. 34 בְּרַכְנִי גַם־אֲנִי bless *me* too. Pr. 22. 19. So when emphasis falls on noun in the oblique case. Gen. 4. 26 לֵשֶׁת גַּם־הוּא *to Seth* also. Gen. 10. 21.—Cf. these exx. Gen. 30. 20; 41. 10, 1 Chr. 23. 13.

Rem. 1. Occasionally oblique case has full form. 2 K. 9. 18 עַד הֵם if reading right, cf. v. 20. Neh. 4. 17 אֲנִי the pron. being co-ordinated with the following nouns. Cases like Is. 18. 2 are different, מִן־הוּא being = מִי־הוּא (הִיא) *since it was*. Nah. 2. 9 מִי־הָיָה אֲשֶׁר הָיָה = מִי־הָיָה *since the days she was*, i.e. *all her days*, cf. 2 K. 7. 7. Such a sense is usually מִי־הָיָה (1 S. 25. 28, 1 K. 1. 6, Job 27. 6; 38. 12), and the text is doubtful. Jer. 46. 5 הָיָה חֲתִים is a clause, חֲתִים pred. and הָיָה subj., though the consn. is more

usual with finite form than with ptc. Jud. 9. 48, 2 S. 21. 4, Lam. 1. 10, Neh. 13. 23. Ps. 89. 48 אני stands for emphasis first: remember, *I, what transitoriness!* But cf. v. 51. In 1 Chr. 9. 22 הִפַּח seems really *obj.* to verb as in Aram. Ezr. 5. 12. So Moab. Stone, l. 18.

Rem. 2. When 3 p. pr. is used neuterly for *it*, it may be mas. or fem. In Pent., where הוּא is common, the *gend.* is matter of pointing, Ex. 1. 16; and everywhere the pron. is apt by attraction to take the *gend.* of pred., Deu. 4. 6; 30. 20, Ez. 10. 15, Ps. 73. 16, Job 31. 11, Jer. 10. 3. The *fem.*, however, is usual when pron. refers back to some action or circumstance just spoken of, particularly if suff., Jos. 10. 13, Jud. 14. 4, Gen. 24. 14 וְכָה אֵרַע *and thereby* (the circumstance) shall I know. Is. 47. 7 לֹא זָכַרְתָּ אַחֲרֵיתָהּ *thou thoughtest not on the issue of it* (the conduct described). Gen. 42. 36; 47. 26, Ex. 10. 11, Nu. 14. 41; 23. 19, 1 S. 11. 2, 1 K. 11. 12. So the verb, Jud. 11. 39 וַתְּהִי חֹק *and it became a rule.* Is. 7. 7; 14. 24.

Rem. 3. By a common gramm. negligence the *mas.* pron., esp. as suff., is used of *fem.* subjects. Is. 3. 16 וּבְרָגְלֵיהֶם תַּעֲפֹסְנָה make a tinkling *with their feet.* Gen. 26. 15; 31. 9; 32. 16; 33. 13, Ex. 1. 21, Nu. 27. 7, 1 S. 6. 7, 10, Am. 4. 1, Ru. 1. 8, 22, Song 4. 2; 6. 8.

§ 2. The oblique cases of the Pers. pron. appear in the form of suffixes to nouns, verbs, and particles. (a) Suffixes to nouns are in *gen.*, and are equivalent to our possessive pron. Gen. 4. 1 אִשְׁתּוֹ *his* wife, 4. 10 אָחִיו *thy* brother. This *gen.* is usually *gen.* of subj., as above, but may be *gen.* of obj., Gen. 16. 5 חָמְסִי *my* wrong (that done me). 18. 21. Cf. § 23, R. 1.

If several nouns be coupled by *and*, suff. must be repeated with each. Deu. 32. 19 בָּנָיו וּבָנֹתָיו *his* sons *and* daughters. Gen. 38. 18 חֲתָמָהּ וּפְתִילָהּ *thy* seal *and* string *and* staff. Exceptions are very rare even in poetry. Ex. 15. 2, 2 S. 23. 5.

The suff. of prep. and other particles, which are really

nouns, must also be considered in *gen.* Gen. 3. 17 בְּעִבְרָהּ for *thy* sake, 39. 10 אֶצְלָהּ beside *her* (at *her* side).

(b) The verbal suff. is in acc. of direct *obj.* Gen. 3. 13 הַנָּחָשׁ הִשְׁיֵאֲנִי the serpent beguiled *me*. 4. 8 וַיַּהַרְגֵהוּ and slew *him*. See § 73, R. 4. The suff. to אָת is also acc. Gen. 40. 4 וַיַּשְׁרֵת אֹתָם he served *them*. 41. 10.

§ 3. The adj. being but feebly developed the relation of a noun to its material, quality, and the like is often expressed by the *gen.* הַר קָדֵשׁ hill of holiness, *holy* hill. In such cases the suff. is *gen.* to the whole expression. Ps. 2. 6 הַר קָדְשִׁי *my* holy-hill. Is. 2. 20 אֱלִילֵי זָהָב *his* idols-of-gold. 13. 3; 30. 22, 23; 53. 5. On constructions like Lev. 6. 3 כְּדוֹ בָד *his linen garment*, see Nomin. Appos.

The noun with suff., forming a definite expression, the qualifying adj. has the Art. Gen. 43. 29 הַיָּחִיד אֲחִיכֶם הַקָּטָן *this your youngest brother*.

Rem. 1. The suff. to some particles which have a certain verbal force, as הִנֵּה *behold*, יֵשׁ *there is*, אֵין *there is not*, עוֹד *still*, are partly verbal in form (Gr. § 49). But suff. of 1st pers. is בְּעוֹרִי in the sense *while I have being*, Ps. 104. 33; 146. 2, and מֵעוֹרִי *since I had being*, Gen. 48. 15 (Nu. 22. 30). In ordinary sense Ps. 139. 18.

Rem. 2. These uses of the suff. are to be noted. Ex. 2. 9 אֶתֶן אֶת־שִׂכְרָהּ I will give *thy hire*, i.e. give *thee* hire. Gen. 30. 18, Jud. 4. 9 לֹא תִהְיֶה תַפְאֲרוֹתָי the glory shall not be *thine*. Gen. 39. 21 וַיִּתֵּן חֲנוּן gave *him* favour. Ez. 27. 15 rendered *thee* tribute. Nu. 12. 6, text doubtful. Ps. 115. 7? Job 6. 10, Hos. 2. 8 (her wall = a wall against her).

Rem. 3. 1 S. 30. 17 לְמַחֲרָתָם *their following day*, the use of suff. is unique in Heb., though something analogous is common in Ar. The text is dubious.

#### DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS

§ 4. The Demons. pron. זֶה and הוּא are used as in Eng. Jud. 4. 14 זֶה הַיּוֹם *this is the day*. Gen. 41. 28 הוּא הַדָּבָר *this*

*that* is the thing. Deu. 1. 1 **אֵלֶּה הַדְּבָרִים** *these* are the words. On their use as adj. § 32, and R. 3.

In usage **זֶה** refers to a subject when first mentioned, or when about to be mentioned (= the following), while **הוּא** refers back to a subj. already spoken of. Jud. 7. 4, of whom I shall say **זֶה יֵלֵךְ אִתְּךָ הוּא יֵלֵךְ** *this one* shall go with thee, *that one* shall go. Gen. 42. 14 **הוּא אֲשֶׁר דִּבַּרְתִּי** *that* is what I said to you. 32. 3; 44. 17. So the common prophetic phrase **בְּיוֹם הַהוּא** on *that day* (time just spoken of), Is. 4. 2.

The pron. **זֶה** is used almost as a noun in all the three cases. Gen. 29. 27 **שָׁבַע זֹאת** the week of *this one*. 1 K. 21. 2. Gen. 2. 23 **לְזֹאת יִקְרָא** *this* shall be called. 1 S. 21. 12, 1 K. 22. 17. Is. 29. 11 **קְרֹא נָא זֶה** read *this* (writing). 2 S. 13. 17 **שְׁלַחֲנָה אֶת־זֹאת** send *this person* away; and *mas.* with same contemptuous sense, 1 K. 22. 27 (1 S. 21. 16). 2 K. 6. 20 **פָּקַח אֶת־עֵינֵי־אֵלֶּה** open the eyes of *these men*. Gen. 29. 33. Pron. **הוּא** is not used in this way, though cf. 1 K. 20. 40.

Rem. 1. When *this, that* are used neuterly while **הוּא** is perhaps more common than *fem.* (Gen. 42. 14, Am. 7. 6), **זֹאת** is much oftener used than *mas.* Gen. 42. 18 **עָשׂוּ וְחָיִי** do *this* and ye shall live. 42. 15 **בְּזֹאת** by *this* shall ye be proved. Is. 5. 25 **בְּכֻלָּזֹאת** for (amidst) *all this*. Is. 9. 11, 20; 10. 4, Hos. 7. 10, Am. 7. 3. The *mas.*, however, is not unusual, esp. in the sense of *such*, Gen. 11. 6, 2 K. 4. 43. The distinction between *this* and *that* stated above is usually preserved, but *this* thing, *these* things seem exclusively used. Gen. 24. 9; 15. 1; 20. 8.

§ 5. When **זֶה** is repeated it is equivalent to *this . . . that, the one . . . the other*. Is. 6. 3 **וְהָאֵלֹהִים זֶה וְהַאֲחֵרָה** and *the one* called to *the other*. 1 K. 3. 23 **זֹאת אֵמַרְתָּ . . . וְזֹאת אֵמַרְתָּ** *this one* says . . . and *the other* says. Jos. 8. 22 **אֵלֶּה מִן־הַ**



וְאֵלֶּה מִזֶּה *some on this side and some on that side.* Ex. 14. 20, 2 S. 2. 13, 1 K. 20. 29; 22. 20, Ps. 20. 8; 75. 8, Job 1. 16, Dan. 12. 2. Comp. 1 K. 20. 40 thy servant עֹשֶׂה הַזֶּה *עֹשֶׂה הַזֶּה* was busy *with this and that*, where *gen.* as Deu. 25. 16 עֹשֶׂה אֵלֶּה.

§ 6. As in other languages, the Demons. have come to be treated as adjectives. They necessarily make their noun definite, and then conform so much to the usage of adj. as themselves to take the Art. Is. 4. 2 בַּיּוֹם הַהוּא *on that day.* Occasionally, however, Art. is wanting, Gen. 19. 33 בַּלַּיְלָהָה *that night*, 30. 16; 32. 23, 1 S. 19. 10, Ps. 12. 8. The Art. is always wanting when Demons. adj. qualifies a noun determined by a suff. Ex. 10. 1 אֶתֵּי אֵלֶּה *these my signs.* With another adj. or several Demons. stands last. Gen. 41. 35. See § 32. The form הַלָּזֶה *yonder* is generally used as adj. Gen. 24. 65; 37. 19, Jud. 6. 20, 1 S. 17. 26, 2 K. 4. 25; as pron. Dan. 8. 16.

Rem. 1. In some cases the Demons., as a substantive definite of itself, seems to stand in appos. with the defined noun, Ps. 104. 25, Ezr. 3. 12, Song 7. 8. Text of 1 K. 14. 14 is obscure, and 2 K. 6. 33, 1 Chr. 21. 17 are doubtful. With proper names, Ex. 32. 1 זֶה מֹשֶׁה, Jud. 5. 5. With noun defined by suff., Josh 9. 12, 13, Hab. 1. 11. The noun is rarely undefined, Ps. 80. 15 נֶפֶץ זֶה *this vine*, Mic. 7. 12 (text uncertain). Phenic. says קֶבֶר זֶה *this grave*, and הַקֶּבֶר. Cf. Moab. St. 1. 3 הַבֵּמָה זֶה *this high place*. In Ar. Demons. being a noun, stands in appos., before the noun if defined by Art., and after if a proper name or defined by suff.

Rem. 2. The Demons., particularly זֶה, is used with interrogatives to add emphasis or vividness to the question. Gen. 27. 21 זֶה בְּנִי זֶה הָאָדָם *art thou my son Esau?* See § 7c.

In the same way force is added to adverbial and particularly *temporal* expressions. 1 K. 19. 5 וְהִנֵּה-זֶה מַלְאָךְ *and lo! an angel.* 1 Kings 17. 24 זֶה יָדַעְתִּי עַתָּה *now indeed I know!*

2 K. 5. 22 have *just* come to me. Gen. 27. 36 **וְהָ עַתָּה** *now* twice; 31. 38 **וְהָ עַתָּה שְׁנָה** *twenty years now*. 31. 41; 43. 10; 45. 6, Nu. 22. 28, Deu. 8. 2, Jud. 16. 15, 1 S. 29. 3, 2 S. 14. 2, Job 19. 3.

Rem. 3. The form **וְהָ** is often a *relative* in poetry (as in Aram., Eth.). Like **אֲשֶׁר** it suffers no change for *gend.* and *number*. Job 19. 19 **וְהָ אֶהְיֶה נֹחֵפֶכְרִי** and *they-whom* I loved are turned against me. Ps. 74. 2; 78. 54; 104. 8; Pr. 23. 22, Job 15. 17. The form **וְהָ** (Ps. 132. 12 **וְהָ**) is still oftener used. Ex. 15. 13, Is. 42. 24; 43. 21, Ps. 9. 16; 10. 2; 17. 9; 31. 5; 32. 8; 68. 29; 143. 8.

Rem. 4. The Demons. unites with *prepp.* to form adverbial expressions. See Lex. On its union with **כִּי** to express *such*, cf. § 11, R. 1e.

#### INTERROGATIVE PRONOUN

§ 7. The pron. **מִי** *who?* is used of persons, *mas.* and *fem.*; and **מָה** *what?* of things. Both are invariable for *gend.* and *number*.

(a) The pron. **מִי** may be used in the three cases. Gen. 3. 11 **מִי הִגִּיד לְךָ** *who* told thee? 24. 65; 33. 5, Is. 6. 8. The *gen.*, Gen. 24. 23 **בַּת־מִי אַתָּה** *whose* daughter art thou? 32. 18 **לְמִי אַתָּה** *to whom* belongest thou? 1 S. 12. 3; 24. 15, Ps. 27. 1. And *acc.*, Is. 6. 8 **אֶת־מִי אֶשְׁלַח** *whom* shall I send? 1 S. 28. 11, 2 K. 19. 22. The *acc.* is always preceded by **אֶת**. Like other words **מִי** may be repeated to particularise or distribute. Ex. 10. 8 **מִי וְמִי הָהֵלָכִים** *who all* are they that are to go?

(b) The *neut.* **מָה** is also used in all the cases. Gen. 31. 36 **מָה פִּשְׁעִי** *what* is my offence? 32. 28, 2 K. 9. 18. The *gen.* by *prepp.*, Gen. 15. 8 **בְּמָה אֵדָע** *by what* shall I know? Rarely after a noun, Jer. 8. 9 wisdom *of what* (what sort of w.)? Nu. 23. 3. The *acc.*, Gen. 4. 10 **מָה עָשִׂיתָ** *what* hast thou done? 15. 2. The **אֶת** is not used before

*what.* In Jer. 23. 33 אַתֶּם הַמֶּשָׁא *rd.* אַתֶּם הַמֶּשָׁא *ye are the burden.*

With adj. and verbs מַה has the sense of *how*. Gen. 28. 17 מַה נִּזְרָא *how terrible!* 2 K. 4. 43 מַה אֶתֵּן זֶה לִפְנֵי מֶלֶךְ הַמָּלְכִים *how shall I set such a thing before a hundred people?* Ex. 10. 26, Job 9. 2, Ps. 133. 1.

(c) The interrog. pron. strengthen themselves by זֶה &c. to add vividness to the question. 1 S. 17. 55 בְּרִמְיָה הַנֶּעֶר *whose son (I wonder) is the lad?* 1 S. 10. 11 מַה־זֶּה הָיָה לְבִנְיָמִן *what in the world has come over the son of Kish?* Gen. 3. 13; 27. 20, Jud. 18. 24, 2 S. 12. 23, Ps. 24. 8.

§ 8. In the indirect sentence the interrog. remains without change. Gen. 21. 26 לֹא יָדַעְתִּי מִי עָשָׂה I do not know *who did it.* 43. 22, Jud. 13. 6, 1 S. 17. 56. The interrog. are also used as indef. pron., *whoever, whoso, whatever, aught.* Jud. 7. 3 יָשָׁב... יִרְאָה מִי *whoever is afraid* let him return. Ex. 32. 26 מִי לְיְהוָה אֵלַי *whoever is for Je.,* Unto me (let him come)! 2 S. 18. 12 מִי שָׁמְרוּ *have a care whoever ye be!* Ex. 24. 14, Is. 54. 15.—1 S. 19. 3 לֹא יִגְדַּלְתִּי לְךָ *and if I observe aught* I will tell thee. 2 S. 18. 23 יִהְיֶה מַה *be what may* I will run! Nu. 23. 3, Job 13. 13; 26. 7, Pr. 9. 13. In some sentences of this form, however, the strict interrog. sense is probably still to be retained. Deu. 20. 5, Jud. 10. 18; 21. 5, Is. 50. 8. The form מִי אֲשֶׁר is also used, Ex. 32. 33, 2 S. 20. 11, cf. מַה־שֶּׁ Ecc. 1. 9.

Rem. 1. The neut. מַה may be used of persons if their circumstances or relations be inquired of, as 1 S. 29. 3 *what are these Hebrews?* On the other hand, מִי is used of things when the idea of a person is involved, Jud. 13. 17 *who is thy name?* (as usual in Syr.), but generally *what* in this case, Gen. 32. 28. Mic. 1. 5, cf. 1 S. 18. 18 (*rd.* חַיִּי *my clan*), 2 S. 7. 18, Gen. 33. 8, Jud. 9. 28. Some cases are peculiar, and suggest a provincial or colloquial use of מִי for מַה; e.g. Ru. 3. 16 מִי־אֶת־בְּתִי with Jud. 18. 18 מַה אֶתֵּם, Am. 7. 2, 5

כַּמּוֹךְ מִי יָקוּם *how* shall J. stand? Is. 51. 19. The Mass. on Mic. 6. 5 states that the Orientals use מִי for כַּמּוֹךְ.

Rem. 2. In phrases like מַה־בִּנְעָה *what profit?* Gen. 37. 26, the original consn. was probably What is the profit? (appos. at least is not allowable in Ar.). Ps. 30 10, Is. 40. 18, Mal. 3. 14, Ps. 89. 48, Job 26. 14. In a number of cases the words are separated, Jer. 2. 5 מַה־מַּעֲשֵׂי בִי עוֹל *what evil?* and second word might be adverb. acc. 1 S. 26. 18; 20. 10, 2 S. 19. 29; 24. 13, 1 K. 12. 16. The similar use of מִי is against acc., Deu. 3. 24; 4. 7, Jud. 21. 8, 2 S. 7. 23, 1 Chr. 17. 21.—Song 5. 9 מַה־מְדוּר מִי *what sort of beloved?* is no evidence for *gen.*, which cannot be the relation of the words.

Rem. 3. These uses of מַה are to be noted. Jud. 1. 14 מַה־לְּךָ *what hast thou?* i.e. what ails thee? what dost thou mean, want, &c.? Gen. 21. 17, 1 S. 11. 5, Jon. 1. 6.—Jud. 11. 12 מַה־לִּי וְלָךְ *what have I to do with thee?* 2 S. 16. 10; 19. 23. 2 K. 9. 18, 19 מַה־לְּךָ וְלַשָּׁלוֹם. Cf. Jer. 2. 18, Ps. 50. 16. Without *and* with second word, Hos. 14. 9. Passages like 1 K. 12. 16, 2 Chr. 10. 16, Song 8. 4, show how מַה naturally passes over to be a negative, *not*. (Ar.).

Rem. 4. The expression מַה־אֵינִי is an interrog. adj. *which?* *what?* Jon. 1. 8 מַה־עִם אֶתְּהָא *of what people art thou?* 2 S. 15. 2 מַה־עִיר אֶתְּהָא *of what city?* 1 K. 13. 12; 22. 24, 2 K. 3. 8, 2 Chr. 18. 23, Is. 66. 1, Jer. 6. 16, Job 38. 19, 24, Ecc. 11. 6. The *fem.*, Jer. 5. 7 מַה־לָּאֵהָ *for what?* In many cases מַה־אֵינִי is merely *where?*

#### THE RELATIVE PRONOUN

§ 9. The word מִשֵּׁר is of uncertain derivation. Its usage differs according as it is preceded by what we call the antecedent, or is not.

When the antecedent is expressed מִשֵּׁר seems a conjunctive word, serving to connect the antecedent with what we call the relative clause. In this case מִשֵּׁר, besides being uninflected, is incapable of entering into regimen, admitting neither prep. nor אֶת of acc., but possibly stands in apposi-

tion with the antecedent. It is neither subj. nor obj. of the relative clause. The subj. or obj. of this clause is a pronoun referring back to the antecedent, and agreeing with it in gend., numb., and person. This pronoun may be expressed, but is often merely understood when no ambiguity would arise from its omission.

(a) When the retrospective pron. is subj. it may be expressed in a nominal sentence, as Gen. 9. 3 **כָּל־רֶמֶשׂ אֲשֶׁר הוּא־חַי** every creeping thing *which is alive*. But it is oftener omitted. Gen. 3. 3 **הָעֵץ אֲשֶׁר בְּתוֹךְ הַגֶּן** the tree *which is in the midst of the garden*. In a verbal sent. the pron. is represented by the verbal inflection, as 15. 7 **אָנֹכִי י' אֲשֶׁר הוֹצֵאתִיךָ** I am Je. *which brought thee out*. The separate pron. is hardly ever expressed, 2 K. 22. 13.

(b) When the pron. is the obj. (in a verbal clause) it is often expressed. Gen. 45. 4 **אֲנִי יוֹסֵף אֲשֶׁר מָכַרְתֶּם אֹתִי** I am Jos. *whom ye sold*. Ps. 1. 4 **כַּמֶּץ אֲשֶׁר תִּדְפְּנוּ רוּחַ** like the chaff *which the wind drives*. Gen. 21. 2, Jer. 28. 9; 44. 3, Ex. 6. 5, 2 K. 19. 4 (if not 2 acc. as 1 S. 21. 3). But often omitted. Deu. 13. 7 **אֱלֹהִים אֲשֶׁר לֹא יָדַעְתָּ** gods *whom thou hast not known*. Gen. 2. 8; 6. 7; 12. 1, Jud. 11. 39; 16. 30, 1 S. 7. 14; 10. 2, 2 S. 15. 7.

(c) When the retrospective pron. is gen. by noun or prep. Deu. 28. 49 **גּוֹי אֲשֶׁר לֹא־תִשְׁמַע לְשׁוֹנוֹ** a nation *whose tongue* thou shalt not understand. Gen. 24. 3, the Canaanite **אֲשֶׁר אֲנֹכִי יוֹשֵׁב בְּקִרְבּוֹ** *in whose midst* I dwell. 28. 13 **הָאָרֶץ אֲשֶׁר אַתָּה שֹׁכֵב עָלֶיהָ** the land *upon which* thou liest. Gen. 38. 25, Ex. 4. 17, Nu. 22. 30, Deu. 1. 22, Ru. 2. 12. Here the pron. requires to be expressed.

After words of time the prep. and suff. is very much omitted, so that **אֲשֶׁר** is equivalent to *when*. Gen. 45. 6, Deu. 4. 10, Jud. 4. 14, 2 S. 19. 25 **עַד הַיּוֹם אֲשֶׁר בָּא** until the day *when* (in which) he came in peace. 1 K. 22. 25, cf. Gen. 6. 4; 40. 13.

(d) With adverbs of place. Gen. 13. 3 **הַמָּקוֹם אֲשֶׁר הָיָה** the place *where* was his tent. 20. 13 **כָּל הַמָּקוֹם** **אֲשֶׁר נָבוֹא שָׁמָּה** every place *whither* we shall come. 3. 23 **הָאֲדָמָה אֲשֶׁר לָקַח מִשָּׁם** the ground *whence* he was taken. Gen. 19. 27; 31. 13; 35. 15; 40. 3, Ex. 20. 21, 2 S. 15. 21.—Ex. 21. 13, Nu. 14. 24, Deu. 30. 3.—Gen. 24. 5. The adverbial *there*, &c., may be omitted, Gen. 35. 13, esp. when the antecedent noun has prep.

Rem. 1. The part. **אֲשֶׁר** is usually separated from the pron. or adverb of the rel. clause by one or more words (see exx. above), but there are exceptions esp. in nominal sentences, Gen. 2. 11, Deu. 8. 9; 19. 17, 1 S. 9. 10. Sometimes **אֲשֶׁר** and pron. have an emphasis which must be brought out by expressing a pronom. antecedent. Jer. 32. 19 **אֲשֶׁר עֵינֶיךָ** **לֹא הָיָה לִי** Is it not Je.? *he* against *whom* we have sinned. Hos. 14. 4, Ez. 11. 12, Neh. 2. 3; cf. Dan. 2. 37; 4. 6.

Rem. 2. The expression of the separate pron. in nominal sent. occurs mostly when the pred. is an adj. or ptcp., e.g. Gen. 9. 3; it is less necessary when pred. is an adverb or a prep. with its gen. after the verb *to be*, as Gen. 3. 3. When the nominal sent. is positive the pron. usually precedes the pred., Gen. 9. 3, Lev. 11. 26, 39, Num. 9. 13; 14. 8, 27, Deu. 20. 20, 1 S. 10. 19, 2 K. 25. 19, Jer. 27. 9, Ez. 43. 19, Ru. 4. 15, Neh. 2. 18, Ecc. 7. 26, cf. Jer. 5. 15. When the sent. is neg. the pron. follows the pred. Gen. 7. 2; 17. 12, Nu. 17. 5, Deu. 17. 15; 20. 15, Jud. 19. 12, 1 K. 8. 41. Although the expression of pron. in nominal sent. is genuine Shemitic idiom, it is still mainly in later writings that it occurs.

Rem. 3. It is rare that **אֲשֶׁר** takes prep. or **אֵת** when antecedent is expressed. Neither Is. 47. 12 nor 56. 4 is a case. Is. 56. 4 **בְּאֲשֶׁר** is under preceding verb *choose*, cf. 66. 3, 4. In 47. 12 the prep. is carried on from previous clause, *in that which*, &c., the complement of **יָנַעַת** being unexpressed. Zech. 12. 10 (text obscure). In other cases **אֲשֶׁר** is distant from anteced. and **אֵת** resumptive, Lev. 22. 15 *that*

*which* they offer. Ez. 23. 40, Jer. 38. 9 might be, *in that* they have thrown.

§ 10. The word **אֲשֶׁר** often includes a pronominal antecedent, *i.e.* it is equivalent to *he-who*, *that-which*, *they-who*, *whom*, or indefinitely *one-who*, &c. In this case it is susceptible of government like a substantive, admitting prep. and **את** of acc. When used in this way **אֲשֶׁר** has the case which, according to our mode of thought, the pronom. antecedent would have. Gen. 7. 23 **וַיֵּשְׁאֶר נֹחַ וְאֲשֶׁר אִתּוֹ** and N. was left, and *they-who* were with him. 43. 16 **וַיֹּאמֶר לְאֲשֶׁר עַל-בֵּיתוֹ** he said *to him-who* was over his house. 44. 1 **וַיִּצְוֵנוּ אֶת-אֲשֶׁר עַל-בֵּיתוֹ** and he commanded *him-who* was, &c. 31. 1 **וּמֵאֲשֶׁר לְאָבִינוּ** of *that-which* is our father's. 9. 24 **וַיַּדַּע אֵת אֲשֶׁר-עָשָׂה לוֹ בְּנוֹ** he knew *what* his son had done to him. 2 K. 6. 16 **רַבִּים אֲשֶׁר אִתָּנוּ** more are *they-who are* with us *than they-who are* with them (later for **אִתָּם**). Jud. 16. 30 the dead whom he slew in death **רַבִּים מֵאֲשֶׁר הָיִיתָ בְּחַיָּיו** were more *than those-whom* he slew in his life. Gen. 15. 4; 27. 8; 47. 24, Ex. 4. 12; 20. 7; 33. 19, Lev. 27. 24, Nu. 22. 6, Jos. 10. 11, 1 S. 15. 16, 2 K. 10. 22, Is. 47. 13; 52. 15, Ru. 2. 2, 9. Ez. 23. 28 **בְּיַד אֲשֶׁר שָׁנֵאתָ** into the hand of *those-whom* thou hatest.

Rem. 1. The consn. in this case is quite the same as in § 9. The so-called rel. clause is complete in itself apart from **אֲשֶׁר**, which has no resemblance to the rel. pron. of classical languages. Cf. Lev. 27. 24, Ru. 2. 2, Nu. 5. 7. Cases like Gen. 31. 32 **אֲשֶׁר עִם** *with whomsoever*, are unusual, cf. Gen. 44. 9.

Rem. 2. In § 10 the retrospective pronoun is greatly omitted except when gen., cf. Lev. 5. 24; 27. 24, Ru. 2. 2, Is. 8. 23; and even prep. and gen. are sometimes omitted where they would naturally stand, Is. 8. 12; 31. 6—particularly with verb *to say*, *e.g.* Hos. 2. 14; 13. 10.



Rem. 3. The adverbial complement *there, thither, &c.*, is omitted after the compound באשר, בכל אשר, אל אשר, אשר, מאשר, &c., in designations of *place*, Ex. 5. 11; 32. 34, Jos. 1. 16, Jud. 5. 27, 1 S. 14. 47; 23. 13, 2 S. 7. 9; 8. 6; 15. 20, 1 K. 18. 12, 2 K. 8. 1. In Gen. 21. 17 *there* is expressed in the nominal sent. (Ar. *haithu hua*).

Rem. 4. On use of וְ, &c. as Rel. § 6, R. 3, and on Art. as Rel. § 22, R. 4.

#### OTHER PRONOMINAL EXPRESSIONS

§ 11. The want of a reflexive pronoun is supplied in various ways. (a) By the use of reflexive forms of the verb (Niph., Hith.). Gen. 3. 10 וַאֲחֵרָא וַאֲחֵרָא I was afraid, *and hid myself*. 45. 1 לֹא יָכַל לְהִתְאַפֵּק he was unable *to control himself*. 3. 8; 45. 1; 42. 7, 1 S. 18. 4; 28. 8, 1 K. 14. 2; 20. 38; 22. 30.

(b) By the ordinary personal pron., simple or suff. Is. 7. 14 יְהוָה יִתֵּן אֶדְנִי הוּא *the Lord Himself* will give. Ex. 32. 13 אֲשֶׁר נִשְׁבַּעְתָּ לָהֶם בְּךָ *to whom thou didst swear by thyself*. Jer. 7. 19 הֲאֵתִי הֵם מְכַעֲסִים הֲלֹא אֲתָם *do they provoke me? is it not themselves, &c.* Gen. 3. 7; 33. 17, Ex. 5. 7, 11, Is. 3. 9; 49. 26; 63. 10, Hos. 4. 14, Pr. 1. 18, Job 1. 12.

(c) By a separate word, esp. נַפְשׁ. Am. 6. 8 נִשְׁבַּע יְ' בְּנַפְשׁוֹ Je. has sworn *by himself*. 1 S. 18. 1, 3. Plur., Jer. 37. 9. So לֵב קָרַב *heart*. Gen. 8. 21 וַיֹּאמֶר י' אֶל־לִבּוֹ and Je. *thought with himself*. 18. 12 וַתִּצְחַק ש' בְּקִרְבָּהּ Sarah laughed *within herself*. Gen. 24. 45, 1 S. 1. 13; 27. 1, 1 K. 12. 26, Hos. 7. 2. Also פָּנִים *face, presence, self*, esp. in later style. 2 S. 17. 11 וּפָנֶיהָ הִלָּכִים בְּקִרְבָּהּ *thou thyself* going into battle (*rd. perh. בְּקִרְבָּם among them*). Ez. 6. 9 וְנִקְמוּ בְּפָנֵיהֶם they shall loathe *themselves*. Ex. 33. 14, Deu. 4. 37, Ez. 20. 43; 36. 31, Job 23. 17. In ref. to *things*, עֶצְם *bone, self-same, self*. Ex. 24. 10; chiefly PC. and Ez. Gen. 7. 13, Ez. 24. 2.

Rem. 1. Some other quasi-pronominal expressions are these: (a) *Some, several*, may be expressed by plur. Gen. 24. 55 יָמִים *some* days (a time); 40. 4 (cf. 27. 44; 29. 20 יָמִים אֲחֵרִים *a few* days). Ez. 38. 17. By prep. בֵּן with noun. Gen. 30. 14 give me בְּנֵי בְרָחָי *some of* thy son's mandrakes. Jer. 19. 10 מִזִּקְנֵי הָעָם *some of* the elders. Ex. 17. 5, Ps. 137. 3, and often in later style.

(b) *Any, every* by כָּל. Deu. 16. 21 an Ashera כָּל עֵץ *any* (kind of) wood. *Any one, one*, by אִישׁ. Gen. 13. 16 אִם אִישׁ יוּכַל *if one* were able. *Anything*, דָּבָר Gen. 18. 14. *No, none*, by אִישׁ... לֹא; *nothing*, דָּבָר... לֹא, the neg. placed before the verb. Gen. 45. 1 לֹא עָמַד אִישׁ *none* stood. Hos. 2. 12 אִישׁ לֹא יוֹצִינָה *none* shall deliver her. 2 K. 10. 25 אִישׁ לֹא חָסְדָה *let no one* go out. Ex. 16. 19. Deu. 2. 7 חָסְדָה לֹא דָבָר thou didst want *nothing*; 22. 26, 2 S. 17. 19, 1 K. 18. 21. Sometimes strengthened by כָּל, 2 S. 18. 13. Cf. Gen. 3. 1, thou shalt eat of *no tree*. Ex. 12. 48. The phrase... לֹא חָסְדָה *nothing*, 1 S. 12. 4, cf. Gen. 22. 12.

(c) *This... that, the one... the other*, by זֶה... זֶה Is. 6. 3 (§ 5), or אֶחָד... אֶחָד, Ex. 17. 12, 1 K. 3. 25. *One another* by אֶחָד... אִישׁ or רֵעֵהוּ... אִישׁ, Gen. 13. 11; 11. 3, Ex. 16. 15; 32. 27, Is. 3. 5; *fem.* Ex. 26 3, 5, Ez. 1. 23, Is. 34. 16.

(d) *Each* distributively by אִישׁ, Jud. 9. 55 הָיָה אִישׁ לְמִטָּתוֹ Jud. 7. 7, 1 S. 8. 22; 10. 25, 2 S. 6. 19, the noun usually sing., but usually plur. with tents, Jud. 7. 8 שָׁלַח אִישׁ לְאֹהֲלָיו the men of Israel he dismissed, *every one to his tents*. 1 Sam. 13. 2.—Also by אֶחָד Is. 6. 2, Jud. 8. 18. When אִישׁ would be in the gen. it is placed as *casus pendens* with a retrospective suff. Gen. 42. 35 הֵנָּה אִישׁ צִרּוֹר־בָּסָפוֹ *every man's* bundle of money; 15. 10; 41. 12; 42. 25, Nu. 17. 17. So Gen. 9. 5 בְּיַד אִישׁ אָחִיו at the hand of *every man's* brother, unless אִישׁ אָחִיו had become a single expression like *one another*, and the phrase mean at the *hand of one another*. Comp. Zech. 7. 10 do not plot רָעַת אִישׁ אָחִיו the hurt of *one another*, cf. 8. 17 for the sense.

(e) *Such* is expressed by כֵּן with זֶה or suff. Gen. 44. 7 הִנֵּה כֵּן דְּבָרְךָ *such a thing*, כְּדִבְרֵי הָאֱלֹהִים *such things*. 41. 38 כֵּן *such a one*. Jer. 5. 9 גֹּי אֲשֶׁר כֹּה *such a nation*. Gen. 44. 15 אִישׁ אֲשֶׁר קָמְנִי *such as I*. 2 S. 9. 8.—2 S. 17. 15

כְּזֹאת וְכֹזֶה *such and such a thing*. Jos. 7. 20, 2 K. 5. 4; 9. 12, cf. 1 K. 14. 5. For *so and so* (person) Ru. 4. 1. Cf. 1 S. 21. 3, 2 K. 6. 8.

(f) The pronouns *mine, ours, yours, theirs*, &c., must be expressed by prep. and suff. Is. 43. 1 אֲתָהּ לִי thou art *mine*; Gen. 48. 5. Gen. 26. 20 לְנֵי הַמַּיִם the water is *ours*. Jer. 44. 28 they shall know מִי יִקוּם מִן הַכֶּתֶב whose word shall stand, *mine or theirs*.

## SYNTAX OF THE NOUN

### GENDER OF THE NOUN

§ 12. Of the two genders, mas. and fem., the mas. is the prevailing one, and by a natural inaccuracy the writer often falls into it even when speaking of a fem. subject, especially in using suffixes. § 1, R. 3. The distinctive fem. termination *a*, i.e. *at* (Gr. § 16, R. *b*) is generally used in adj. and ptcp. referring to a fem. subject.

In the case of living creatures, distinction of gender is indicated—

(a) By the fem. termination, as אֵיל *a hart*, fem. אֵילָת, עֶלְמָה *a youth*, fem. עֶלְמָה, עֵגֶל *a calf*, fem. עֵגֶלָה.

(b) By different words, as אָב *father*, אִם *mother*, חֲמֹר *he-ass*, אֲתוֹן *she-ass*, אֵיל *ram*, רֵחַל *ewe*, עֶבֶד *servant*, אֲמָה *maid*.

(c) Or the same word may be used for both genders, and differentiated only in construction, as Hos. 13. 8 דֵּב שָׁבוּל *a bear* robbed of her whelps, 2 K. 2. 24 שְׁתֵּי דְבִים *two bears*. So גְּמָלִים *camels*, mas. Gen. 24. 63, fem. 32. 16; אֱלֹהִים *goat*? 1 K. 11. 5. The grammatical difference, however, does not seem always meant to express a real difference of gend., cf. Jer. 2. 24. Anciently נָעַר appears to have been of common gend.

(d) Or a word of one gend. may be used as name of the class or genus, without distinction of individuals, as כָּלָב *dog*, זָאֵב *wolf*, mas.; אֲרִנֶּבֶת *hare*, יוֹנָה *dove*, fem.

§ 13. Of inanimate things the following classes are usually fem. (Gr. § 16):—

(a) Proper names of countries and cities, as **בָּבֶל** *Babylon*, **צִדּוֹן** *Sidon*. Words like **מוֹאָב** *Moab*, &c., when used as name of the people, are usually mas., but fem. when the name of the country, and also when used for the population as a collective personified (§ 116, R. 5). So the word **בֵּת** *daughter* of inhabitants or people, as **בֵּת צִיּוֹן**, **בֵּת בָּבֶל**.

(b) Common names of definite places, as districts, quarters of the earth, &c., as **עִיר** *city*, **הָעוֹלָם** *the world*, **כֶּכֶר** *the circle* (of the Jordan), **שְׁאוֹל** *hades* (mas. as personified Is. 14. 9), **תֵּימָן** *the south*, **צָפוֹן** *north*, Is. 43. 6. But there are exceptions.

(c) The names of *instruments, utensils* used by man, and members of the body, particularly such as are double, as **חֶרֶב** *sword*, **כּוֹס** *cup*, **נֶעֱל** *shoe*; **עֵינַי** *eye*, **אָזְנוֹ** *ear*, **רֶגֶל** *foot*, &c. So of animals, **קָרְנוֹ** *horn*. Again there are exceptions, as **אָף** *nose, nostril*, **עֵרְפוֹ** *neck*, **פֶּה** *mouth*.

(d) The names of the elements, natural powers and unseen forces, as **אֵשׁ** *fire*, **נֶפֶשׁ** *soul*, **רוּחַ** *wind, spirit* (usually), **שֶׁמֶשׁ** *the sun* (usually), but **יָרֵחַ** *moon*, is mas.

§ 14. Some other classes of nouns are fem. 1. Abstract nouns, as **אֱמֶת** *truth*, **גְּבוּרָה** *strength*, **צִדְקָה** *righteousness*, though there is often also a mas. form, as **עֵזֶר** and **עֲזָרָה** *help*, **נֶקֶם** and **נִקְמָה** *vengeance*. So adj. and ptcp. used nominally, as we should say as neuters, as **רָעָה** *evil* (physical), Hos. 5. 9 **נֶאֱמָה** *a sure thing*, Am. 3. 10 **נִכְחָה** *what is straightforward*, Mic. 3. 9 **הַיִּשְׁרָה**. And often in the plur. Gen. 42. 7 **קָשׁוֹת** *harsh things, harshly*, Is. 32. 4, 8 **צָחוֹת** *clear things, plainly*, **נְדִיבוֹת** *liberal things*. Zeph. 3. 4 The mas. plur. is sometimes used in poetry, Ps. 16. 6, 11, Pr. 8. 6 **נְגִידִים**. Cf. Is. 26. 10; 28. 22; 30. 10; 42. 9; 43. 18; 48. 6; 58. 11; 59. 9; 64. 2, Nu. 22. 18; 24. 13, Jos. 2. 23; 3. 5, 2 S. 2. 26, 2 K. 8. 4; 25. 28.

2. Collectives, which are often fem. of ptcp., as **אֲרָחָה**

a caravan (from אָרֶחַ *a traveller*), גִּזְלָה *captivity* (גִּזְלָה one going captive), יֹשְׁבֵי *inhabitants*, Is. 12. 6, אֹיְבֵת *enemy* (of a people), דָּלָה *the lower classes*, 2 K. 24. 14, Jer. 40. 7, plur. Jer. 52. 15, 16. Cf. Mic. 4. 6, Zeph. 3. 19, Ez. 34. 4.

3. The *fem.*, however, sometimes is used as *nomen unitatis* when the *mas.* is collect., as אֲנִי *fleet*, 1 K. 9. 26, אֲנִיָּה *a ship*, Jon. 1. 3, 4; שֵׁעַר *the hair*, 2 S. 14. 26, שְׂעָרָה *a hair*, Jud. 20. 16, 1 K. 1. 52, but probably coll. Job 4. 15; שִׁירָה *a song*, Is. 5. 1, *mas.* generally coll. 1 K. 5. 12, though also singular, e.g. Is. 26. 1. So מֶרְכָּבָה *a chariot*, Gen. 41. 43 with מֶרְכָּב 1 K. 5. 6. Perhaps פִּשְׁתָּה *wick*, Is. 42. 3; 43. 17, cf. Hos. 2. 7, 11, *flax*.

Rem. 1. Sometimes when a parallel is seen in lifeless things to some organ or feature of living creatures the *fem.* is used, as יָרֵךְ *the thigh, loins* (sing. and plur.), יִרְכָתַי *the sides*, furthest back parts, of a locality; מִצֵּחַ *forehead, front*, מִצְחָה *shin-front, greave*. And in a wider way, יוֹנֵק *suckling, child*, יוֹנֵקֶת *sucker, shoot*. So such words as *horns, feet* when transferred to things are used in plur. with *fem.* termination.

Rem. 2. The *fem.* is used where other languages would use the neut., e.g. זאת *this*, שְׁתֵּי אֵלֶּה *these two things*, Is. 47. 9; אֶחָת מֵהֵנָּה *one of these things*, 1 Chr. 21. 10; particularly in ref. to something previously mentioned, Is. 22. 11; 37. 26; 41. 20; 43. 13; 46. 11; 47. 7; 48. 16; 60. 22. See § 109, R. 2. Occasionally the plur. seems used as a neut., where *fem.* might have stood, Job 22. 21 בָּהֶם = בָּהֶם *thereby*. Ez. 33. 18, Is. 30. 6. The passages Is. 38. 16; 64. 4 are obscure.

## NUMBER

§ 15. Of the three numbers the *dual* is now little used. On its use cf. Gr. § 16, R. a.

The plur. of compound expressions like אָב בֵּית *a father-house or clan*, גִּבּוֹר חַיִּל *a man of valour* (wealth), is formed variously.

1. **בֵּית אֱבֹדֹת** plur. of second. 1 S. 31. 9 **בֵּית עֲצֻדֵיהֶם** *their idol temples*. 1 K. 12. 31, 2 K. 17. 29, 32, Mic. 2. 9, Dan. 11. 15, Ps. 120. 1, &c. **שָׁרֵי הַמַּעֲלֹת** ?

2. **עָרֵי הַמִּבְצָר** plur. of first. Jer. 8. 14 **עָרֵי הַמִּבְצָר** *fenced cities*, Is. 56. 6 **בְּנֵי הַנָּכַר** *strangers*, cf. v. 3. 1 S. 22. 7, 1 Chr. 5. 24; 7. 2, 9, 2 Chr. 8. 5; 14. 5.

3. **גְּבוּרֵי חֵילִים** plur. of both. Gen. 42. 35 **אֲרוֹתֵיהֶם** *their bundles of money*. 1 K. 13. 32 **הַבָּמוֹת**. 1 K. 15. 20, 2 K. 9. 1 (cf. sing. Am. 7. 14); 23. 19; 25. 23, 26, Is. 42. 22, Jer. 5. 17; 40. 7, Mic. 1. 16, 1 Chr. 5. 24; 7. 5, 7, 11, 40. Cf. Neh. 10. 37.

§ 16. Many words are used only in plur. (a) Such words as express the idea of something composed of parts, *e.g.* of several features, as **פָּנִים** *face*, **צווארִים** *neck* (also sing.), or of tracts of space or time, **שָׁמַיִם** *heaven*, **מַיִם** *water*, **עֲבָרִים** *region on the other side*, Is. 7. 20; **חַיִּים** *life*, **עוֹלָמִים** *eternity*, Is. 45. 17, **נְצָחִים** *id.*, **נְעוּרִים** *time of youth*, **זְקֵנִים** *time of old age*, &c. Comp. **סִפְרִים** *a letter* (also sing.), 2 K. 20. 12, Jer. 29. 25.

(b) Abstract nouns. As **סְנַוִּירִים** *blindness*, **בְּתוּלִים** *virginity*, **מִישָׁרִים** *uprightness*, **נִפְאָרִים** *atonement*, **זְנוּנִים** *whoredom*, **שִׁלְמִים** *requital*, **תְּהַפְּכוּת** *perversity*, &c. The plur. in this case may express the idea of a combination of the elements or characteristics composing the thing, or of the acts realising it.

(c) The plur. of *eminence* or excellence (majesty) also expresses an intensification of the idea of the sing.; *e.g.* **אֱלֹהִים** *God*, and analogically **קְדוּשִׁים** *Holy One*, Hos. 12. 1, Pr. 30. 3, **עֲלִיוֹנִים** *Most High*, Dan. 7. 18; so ptc. referring to God, Is. 54. 5, Ps. 149. 2, Job 35. 10. Similar words are **אֲדֹנִים** *lord, master*, **בָּעָלִים** *owner*, cf. Is. 10. 15, Pr. 10. 26. So **תְּרָפִים** *Teraphim*, even of one image. On the consn. of such plur. cf. § 31, and § 116, R. 4.

§ 17. Many words in sing. have a collective meaning, and do duty for the plur., as **בָּקָר** *cattle*, **צֹאן** *sheep, goats*, **טף** *children*, **רֶמֶשׂ** *creeping things*, **עוֹף** *birds*, **בְּהֵמָה** *cattle, beasts, &c.*, **רֶכֶב** *chariots*. Almost any word may be used in the sing. as collective, as **אִישׁ** *men*, **נֶפֶשׁ** *persons*, **עֵץ** *trees*, Gen. 3. 8, **שׁוֹר** *oxen*, Gen. 49. 6, **אֲרֵבָה** *locusts*, **עִיר** *cities*, **אֶבֶן** *stones*. 1 K. 22. 47 **הַקְּרָשׁ** *hierodouli*, 2 K. 11. 10 **הַחֲנִית** *spears* (beside a plur.), 2 K. 25. 1. 1 K. 16. 11 **רֵעָהוּ** *his comrades* (beside a plur.), 1 Chr. 20. 8. Particularly in enumerations, where the emphasis is on the number, and it is sufficient to state the *kind* or class of thing enumerated, e.g. **חָלָל** *slain*, 2 S. 23. 8, **נְעִרָה בְּתוּלָה** *young virgins*, Jud. 21. 12, **מְלָךְ** *kings*, 1 K. 20. 1 (more usual Jud. 1. 7), **גֶּפֶן** *vines*, Is. 7. 23, **מָשָׁל** *proverbs*, 1 K. 5. 12; and expressions like **עֹשֵׂה מִלְחָמָה** *warriors*, 2 Chr. 26. 13, **רֵעָה צֹאן** Gen. 47. 3, cf. 2 K. 24. 14, **הַסֹּבֵל** *the burden bearers*, Neh. 4. 4 (1 K. 5. 29 *rd.* perhaps **סֹבֵל**). It is, however, chiefly words that express *classes* of persons or things that are used in the sing., and words of *time, weight, and measure*. Cf. § 37.

Rem. 1. The plur. is quite natural in such instances as **עֵצִים** *timber* (pieces of wood), **חִטִּים** *wheat in grain*, 2 S. 17. 28 (*wheat in crop*, Ex. 9. 32). So **שְׂעִירִים** and **שְׂעִירָה** *barley, &c.*

Rem. 2. The plur. seems often used to heighten the idea of the sing., 1 S. 2. 3 **דַּעוֹת** *knowledge*, Jud. 11. 36 *vengeance*, 2 S. 4. 8, Is. 27. 11 *understanding*, 40. 14; Ps. 16. 11 *joy*, Ps. 49. 4; 76. 11; 88. 9 *abomination*, Pr. 28. 20, Job 36. 4. Cf. § 16b. In poetry the plur. comes to be used for sing. without difference of meaning, Gen. 49. 4 *bed* sing. and plur., 1 Chr. 5. 1, Ps. 63. 7; 46. 5; 132. 5, Job 6. 3 (*seas*).

Rem. 3. The plur. is sometimes used to express the idea in a general and indefinite way. Jud. 12. 7 **בְּעָרֵי גִלְעָד** *in (one of) the cities of Gilead*, 1 S. 17. 43 *staves*, 2 K. 22. 20 *thy graves*, Job 17. 1, Gen. 21. 7, Ex. 21. 22, Zech. 9. 9, Neh. 6. 2. The word **דְּבָרֵי** *matters of* seems to convey the same meaning, Ps. 65. 4.



Rem. 4. Such words as *hand, head, mouth, voice, &c.*, when the organ or thing is common to a number of persons, are generally used in the sing. Jud. 7. 16 put the trumpets into *the hand* of them all, v. 19, Gen. 19. 10. Jud. 7. 25 the *head* of Oreb and Zeeb, cf. 8. 28; 9. 57, Jos. 7. 6, Dan. 3. 27. Ps. 17. 10 *their mouth*, Ps. 78. 36 *tongue*, 144. 8. So to clap פָּרַח *the hands* 2 K. 11. 12, Is. 55. 12. So perhaps נִבְלָה and פָּנִינִי *carcases*, Is. 5. 25, 1 S. 17. 46, cf. πῶμα Rev. 11. 8. But cf. *heads* Job 2. 12, and usually *eyes*, though cf. Gen. 44. 21.

Rem. 5. The idea of universality is sometimes expressed by the use of both genders, Is. 3. 1 וְכָל־שִׁמְעָהּ וְכָל־שִׁמְעָהּ *every slay*, Deu. 7. 14. Also by the use of contrasted expressions, as Zech. 7. 14 עֹבֵר וְשׁוֹבֵר *passing or returning*, 9. 8, and the common תְּצַוֵּר וְתִצָּחַר *restrained or free*, Deu. 32. 36, 1 K. 14. 10; 21. 21, 2 K. 9. 8; 14. 26. Cf. Noeld. *Carm. Arab.* 42. 4.

Rem. 6. The coll. בָּקָר *cattle* is used in plur. Neh. 10. 37, but צֹאֲנִים is to be read in same verse. The parall. to 2 Chr. 4. 3, viz. 1 K. 7. 24, reads differently. Plur. of רֶכֶב *chariots*, Song. 1. 9. In Am. 6. 12 *rd.* perhaps יָם בְּבָקָר יָם.

## THE CASES

§ 18. The cases are not marked by means of terminations except in rare instances. They must be supposed, however, to exist, and an accurate analysis of construction will take them into account. The cases are three, Nom., Gen., and Acc. When a word is governed by prep. לְ *to*, the dative is sometimes spoken of, and the abl. when it is governed by prep. מִן *from*, &c.; but this is inaccurate application of classical terminology.

1. *The Nom.*—The nom. has no particular termination (Gr. § 17). The personal pronouns are only used in nom., their oblique cases appearing as suffixes. The nom. is often *pendens*, being resumed by pronoun (§ 106).

2. *The Gen.*—(a) All words after a cons. state are in gen.,

as סוּס דָּאָם *the man's horse*. (b) All words governed by a prep. are in gen., as לְרוֹחַ הַיּוֹם *at the cool of the day*; *cool* is gen. by prep., and *day* is gen. by *cool*. (c) All suffixes to nouns and prep. are to be considered in gen., as סוּסוֹ *his horse* (h. of him), אֶצְלָהּ *beside her* (at the side of her). (d) Sometimes a clause assumes the place of a gen. to a preceding noun, the clause being equivalent to the infin. or *nomen actionis*. Is. 29. 1 קִרְית הַנָּה דָּוִד *thou city where David dwelt* (of David's dwelling).

3. *The Acc.*—There are traces of a case ending in *a*. (a) The acc. may be directly governed by a verb, וַיִּקַּח אֶת־הָאָדָם *he took the man*. The verbal suffixes are usually direct obj., וַיִּנָּחֲרוּ and put *him*. (b) The acc. may be of the kind called adverbial or modal, as in designations of place, time, &c., in statements of the *condition* of subj. or obj. during an action, or in limitations of the incidence of an action, or the extent of the application of a quality (§ 70, § 24, R. 5). (c) So-called prepp. like אַחֲרֵי *behind*, אֶצֶל *beside*, &c., are really nouns in this kind of acc., except when preceded by another prep., as מֵאַחֲרֵי *from behind*, when, of course, they are in the gen. (d) Many times clauses with כִּי *that*, אֲשֶׁר, אֲתִּי-אֲשֶׁר *how that*, assume the place of a virtual acc. to a preceding verb.

4. *The construct* is not a case but a state of the noun. The cons. is the governing noun in a genitive-relation; its state or difference of form from the abs. or ordinary form is due to the closeness of the connection between it and its gen. The cons. may be in any case, as נֹמֶץ הָאָרֶץ *and the gold of that land is good*; or gen. בְּתוֹךְ הַגֶּן *in the midst of the garden*, where *midst* is gen. by prep.; or acc. לְשֹׁמֵר דֶּרֶךְ עֵץ הַחַיִּים *to keep the way of the tree of life*, where *way* is acc. after *keep*, and cons. before its gen. *tree*, &c.

The cons. occasionally ends in *i*, more rarely in *o* or *u*. In Eth. the vowel *a* marks the cons.

#### DETERMINATION. THE ARTICLE

§ 19. There is no indef. art. in Heb., the noun if indef. remains without change. Job 1. 1 **אִישׁ הָיָה** there was *a man*. 1 K. 3. 24 **קְחוּלִי חֶרֶב** fetch me *a sword*.

The predicate naturally is indeterminate and without Art. Gen. 3. 1 **הַנָּחָשׁ הָיָה עָרוֹם** the serpent was *cunning*. 2. 12, 25; 3. 6; 29. 2, 2 S. 18. 7. The inf. or *nomen actionis* retains too much of the verbal nature to admit the Art. Occasionally **הַדֹּעַת** *the knowing* occurs. Gen. 2. 9, Jer. 22. 16. And *fem.* verbal nouns approach more closely the real noun, and occasionally take Art. Ps. 139. 12 **כְּחַשְׁמָה בְּאוֹרָה** *the darkness* is as *the light*.

Rem. 1. The numeral **אֶחָד** *one* is sometimes used almost like an indef. art., esp. in later style. Ex. 16. 33, 1 S. 7. 9, 12, 1 K. 19. 4; 22. 9, 2 K. 7. 8; 8. 6. Or it has the sense of *a certain*; Jud. 9. 53; 13. 2, 1 S. 1. 1, 1 K. 13. 11, 2 K. 4. 1. The words **אִישׁ** *man*, **אִשָּׁה** *woman* prefixed to another term appear to express indefiniteness, **אִישׁ נָבִיא** *a prophet*, Jud. 6. 8; 4. 4, 2 S. 14. 5; 15. 16, 1 K. 3. 16; 7. 14; 17. 9. Eth. uses *man*, *woman* in the same way.

<sup>1</sup> The inflection of an Ar. noun '*abd*' "servant" may illustrate the cases.

	SING.		
	<i>Abs.</i>	<i>with Art.</i>	<i>Cons. and Gen.</i>
N.	'abdu <i>a serv.</i>	'el 'abdu <i>the ser.</i>	'abdu lmalikī <i>the s. of the king.</i>
G.	'abdin	'el 'abdi	'abdi lmalikī.
A.	'abdan	'el 'abda	'abda lmalikī.
	DUAL.		
N.	'abdāni	'el 'abdāni	'abdā lmalikī.
G.A.	abdaini	'el 'abdaini	'abdai lmalikī
	PLURAL.		
N.	'abdāna	'el 'abdāna	'abdā lmalikī.
G.A.	'abdinā	'el 'abdinā	'abdi lmalikī.

The regular plur. given here to '*abd*' does not exist in usage. After a vowel both the Alif and the vowel of the Art. are elided in pronunciation.

Rem. 2. The inf. לְמוֹט is probably strengthened form of לָמוֹט Ps. 66. 9; 121. 3. In 1 K. 10. 19 שָׁכַת seems a noun, Am. 6. 3. Jer. 5. 13 הַדִּבֶּר the Art. might be relative, either *he who* speaks, or *that which* he speaks (§ 22, R. 4), both little natural. Scarcely more likely, *the* "He has said" (the phrase they use). Sep. הַדִּבֶּר.

Rem. 3. In some cases the subj. and pred. are *coextensive*, and pred. has Art. Gen. 2. 11 הָיָה הַפֶּלֶב הַזֶּה *it is that which goeth round*. Particularly with ptcps. Gen. 42. 6 *he was the seller*; 45. 12, Deu. 3. 21; 8. 18; 9. 3, 2 S. 5. 2, 1 Chr. 11. 2.

Rem. 4. Certain archaic terms, originally appellatives, have acquired the force of proper names, as שְׁאֵל *hades*, תֵּבֵל *the inhabited world*, תְּהוֹם *the primary ocean* (plur. with Art. Is. 63. 13, of waters of Red Sea, Ps. 106. 9), and do not take Art. And so some other terms used in poetry, which greatly dispenses with the Art., as רִנִּים *princes*, Ps. 2. 2, אָנוּשׁ *man*, Ps. 8. 5, שָׂדֵי *field*, Ps. 8. 8, צִלְמוֹת *darkness, midnight*, Ps. 23. 4, חֵכְמָה *wisdom, power*, Is. 28. 29, Job 6. 13. Also רֵאִים *wild ox*, even in a comparison, Ps. 92. 11. So the divine names אֱלֹהִים, שְׁדֵי, עֲלִיֹן.

§ 20. Words may be determinate in themselves or from construction, and with these the Art. is not used. Words def. of themselves are—(a) *Proper* names of persons, countries, cities, rivers, &c., as יהוה *Jehovah*, מֹשֶׁה *Moses*, מוֹאָב *Moab*, צֵר *Tyre*, פָּרָת *Euphrates*. (b) The personal and other pronouns, Ex. 20. 2 אֲנֹכִי יְהוה *I am the Lord*, Gen. 29. 27 שָׁבַע זֹאת *the week of this one*, 41. 28 הוּא הַדָּבָר *that is the thing*, 3. 11 מִי הַגִּיד *who told thee?*—Words determined by construction are—nouns in the cons. state before a *definite* gen., whether this gen. be a proper name, a pron. (separate or suffix), a noun defined by Art., or itself a cons. determined by a definite gen. (Gen. 3. 24). Ru. 1. 3 בֵּית מִי אִשׁ נָעָמִי *the husband of Naomi*. Gen. 24. 23 בֵּית מִי אֵת *the daughter of whom (whose d.) art thou?* 2. 25 הָאָדָם *the man* and וְאִשְׁתּוֹ *his wife*. 2. 19 חַיַּת הַשָּׂדֶה *the beast of*

the field. 3. 24 דֶּרֶךְ עֵץ הַחַיִּים *the way of the tree of life*  
6. 18 גִּישׁ בְּנֵיָהּ.

Rem. 1. Proper names of persons are always without the Art., and so names of peoples called after a personal ancestor, as Moab, Edom. Many names of places, rivers, &c., however, were originally appellatives and sometimes retain the Art., as הַלְבָּנוֹן Lebanon (*the white mountain?*), הַיַּרְדֵּן Jordan (*the river?*), הַגִּבְעָה Gibeah (*the hill*), הָעֵי Ai (*the mound*). Usage fluctuates.

Rem. 2. The def. gen. makes the whole expression definite. But this rule seems to have exceptions, the cons. remaining indef. This is the case at any rate with prop. names, as 1 S. 4. 12 אִישׁ בִּנְיָמִין *a man of Benjamin*, Josh. 7. 21 *a Babylonish garment*, Jud. 10. 1, Deu. 22. 19, and apparently in other cases, Lev. 14. 34 *a house*, Gen. 9. 20, Jer. 13. 4. It is to be assumed in general, however, that the def. gen. determines the whole expression. Thus Heb. may say הָזָהָב *the gold* (so called generic Art. § 22), i.e. *gold*, and so Gen. 41. 42 רֶכֶּר הָזָהָב *the chain of the gold*, i.e. *a chain of gold*; the *kind* of definiteness, whatever it be, extends over the expression. Song 1. 13, 14; 4. 3. Cf. 1 S. 25. 36 מִשְׁתֵּה הַמֶּלֶךְ *the banquet of the king*, i.e. *a royal banquet*; Jud. 8. 18 *royal children*. The use of Art. fluctuates, Song 1. 11, 13.

Rem. 3. In compound proper names the Art. maintains its usual place. 1 S. 5. 1 אֶבְנֵי הָעֶזֶר Ebenezer. And so with gentilics, Jud. 6. 11, 24 אֲבִי הָעֶזְרִי *the Abiezrite*, 1 S. 17. 58 בֵּית הַלֶּחֶמִי *the Bethlehemite*. 6. 14.

Rem. 4. A number of cases occur of Art. with cons. or noun with suff. (a) In some cases the text is faulty, being filled up by explanatory glosses from the marg. Gen. 24. 67 omit Sarah *his mother*. Jos. 3. 11 om. הַבְּרִית, so v. 14, and v. 17 בְּרִית י'. Jos. 8. 11 om. *war* (13. 5, cf. § 29, R. 5). Jer. 25. 26 rd. הַמַּסְלָכוֹת *abs.* and om. *earth* (Sep.), Ez. 45. 16 om. *earth* (Sep.). Jer. 32. 12 הַמִּסְפָּר הַמִּקְנֶה can hardly be appos. *the bill, the sale*; probably ungrammatical *explicitum* from marg. for *it* of Sep. 1 Chr. 15. 27 rd. probably הַמִּסְפָּר (Berth.), cf. vv. 22, 23. 2 Chr. 8. 16 cf. Ex. 9. 18,

2 S. 19. 25. Is. 36. 8, 16 **הַמֶּלֶךְ אֲשׁוּר** is correct in 2 K. 18. 23, 31, and hardly belongs to the original text. Jer. 48. 32 **הַנֶּפֶן שְׂבִימָה** is *voc.* and perhaps protected by Lam. 2. 13 **הַבֵּת יְרוּשָׁלַם**; otherwise Is. 16. 9.—1 S. 26. 22, 2 K. 7. 13 are corrected by Mass. More serious faults of text, 2 S. 24. 5 (Dr. *in loc.*), Ez. 46. 19, Dan. 8. 13.

(b) Jos. 13. 9 “Medeba unto Dibon” is appos. to *the Mishor*, explaining it. Ez. 47. 15 might be the way to Hethlon, cf. Hos. 6. 9, but text dubious. Gen. 31. 13 **אֲנִי הָאֵל בֵּית־אֵל** can hardly be, I am the God *at* Bethel (acc.). Cases like 2 S. 2. 32; 9. 4, &c., are not parallel, and Num. 22. 5 is no doubt to be read: the river (Euph.), *unto* the land of the children, &c. 2 K. 23. 17 (possibly **הוּא קִבֵּר**). 1 K. 14. 24, Art. may have slipped in mechanically after **כָּל**. Jud. 16. 14 possibly **הַיָּתֵד הָאֵרֶנִּי** being subsequent gloss. Ezr. 8. 29 perhaps **הַלְשָׁבוֹת**, “house of God” being in loose appos., and “weigh” a virtual verb of motion (carry to and weigh). Ps. 123. 4 **לְשִׁאֲנִימִים**? as second clause). Nu. 21. 14, 2 S. 10. 7, 1 K. 16. 24, &c., are cases of appos.

With suff. Lev. 27. 23 **הָעֵרֶכֶד**, the phrase is technical and suff. otiose. Jos. 8. 33 **הָחֵצִי** *the* (other) half of it. Is. 24. 2 **כְּנִבְרָתָהּ** in assonance with the other words. Mic. 2. 12 possibly **הַדִּבָּר הַזֶּה**. 2 K. 15. 16 after **כָּל**. Jos. 7. 21, Pr. 16. 4, Ezr. 10. 14.

§ 21. Determination by Art.—With individual persons or things the Art. is used when they are *known*, and definite to the mind for any reason, *e.g.*—

(a) From having been already mentioned. Gen. 18. 7 **בֶּן־הַבָּקָר אֲשֶׁר עָשָׂה** he took *a* calf; v. 8 he took **בֶּן־הַבָּקָר** *the* calf which he had got ready.

(b) Or from being the only one of their kind, as **הַשֶּׁמֶשׁ** *the* sun, **הַיָּרֵחַ** *the* moon; *the* earth, *the* high priest, *the* king, &c.

(c) Or, though not the only one of the class, when usage has elevated into distinctive prominence a particular individual of the class, as **הַנָּהָר** *the* river (Euphrates), **הַבַּעַל**

*the* lord (Baal), הַשָּׂטָן *the* adversary (Satan), Job 1. 6, Zech. 3. 1, הַיָּאֵר *the* stream (Nile, cf. Am. 8. 8, *the* stream of Egypt), הַכֶּכֶר *the* circle (of Jordan), הַבַּיִת *the* house (Temple), Mic. 3. 12, Ps. 30. 1, הָאֱלֹהִים *the* (true) God.

(d) Or when the person or thing is an *understood* element or feature in the situation or circumstances. Gen. 24. 20, she emptied her pail אֶל-הַשִּׁקְתָּ into *the* trough (of course existing where there were flocks to water). 35. 17 וְהָאִמָּר וְהַמִּילְדָּת *and the* midwife (naturally present) said, 38. 28. So 18. 7 *the* boy; 22. 6 *the* fire and *the* knife; 26. 8 *the* window. Ex. 2. 15 *the* well (beside every encampment). Jud. 3. 25 *the* key. 1 S. 19. 13, 2 S. 18. 24, Pr. 7. 19 *the* goodman. Eng. also uses the def. Art. in such cases; at other times it employs the unemphatic possessive pron. Gen. 24. 64, she lighted מֵעַל הַגָּמֶל from *her* camel; v. 65 she took הָצַעֲרִיף *her* veil; 47. 31 *his* bed. Jud. 3. 20, 2 S. 19. 27, 1 K. 13. 13, 27, 2 K. 5. 21.

(e) It is a peculiar extension of this usage when, in narratives particularly, persons or things appear definite to the imagination of the speaker—the person just from the part he played, and the thing from the use made of it. In this case Eng. uses the indef. Art. 2 S. 17. 17 וְהַלְכָה וְהַשִּׁפְחָה וְהַגִּידָה *and a* wench always went and told them. 1 S. 9. 9 הָאִישׁ הָאֵמַר כֹּה thus spoke *a* man when he went, &c. Jos. 2. 15 וְהוֹרִידִם בְּחֶבֶל *and she* let them down with *a* rope. Ex. 17. 14 וְכָתַב זֶאת בְּסֵפֶר *write this in a* book; 1 S. 10. 25, Jer. 32. 10, Job 19. 23.—Deu. 15. 17, Ex. 21. 20 with *a* rod, Nu. 22. 27, Jos. 8. 29 on *a* tree, Jud. 4. 18 *a* rug, v. 21 *a* tent-pin, v. 19 *a* milk bottle, 6. 38 *a* cupful, 9. 48; 16. 21 (3. 31?). So probably Is. 7. 14 הָעֶלְמָה *a* maid. Gen. 9. 23 *a* garment (less naturally *his*, i.e. Noah's). Deu. 22. 17, Jud. 8. 25, 1 S. 21. 10 (some passages may belong to d). So with rel. cl. Ps. 1. 1, Jer. 49. 36.

(f) The person addressed is naturally def. to the mind, and the so-called vocative often has the Art. 1 K. 18. 26 *הַבַּעַל* *O Baal*, hear us! 2 K. 9. 5 *אֵלֶיךָ הָשָׁר* unto thee, *Captain*! Jud. 6. 12 *יְעִמָּה גִבּוֹר הַחַיִּל* Je. is with thee, *O man of valour*. Jud. 3. 19, 1 S. 17. 58, 2 S. 14. 4, Hos. 5. 1, Jer. 2. 31, Is. 42. 18, Jo. 1. 2, Zech. 3. 8. The noun with Art. is probably in appos. to *thou, ye* understood. Cf. Job 19. 21, Mal. 3. 9, Mic. 1. 2.—2 K. 9. 31, Is. 22. 16; 47. 8; 54. 1, 11, Zeph. 2. 12.

Rem. 1. In such cases as *הַיּוֹם* *to-day*, *הַלַּיְלָה* *to-night*, *הַפַּעַם* *this time*, Gen. 2. 23, *הַשָּׁנָה* *this year* Jer. 28. 16, the definiteness is due to the fact that the times belong to the speaker's present and are before him. Jud. 13. 10 *בְּיוֹם* *that* (a former) *day* is defined by the circumstance that occurred on it.

Rem. 2. To *e* belongs the phrase *וַיִּהְיֶה הַיּוֹם* occurring 1 S. 1. 4; 14. 1, 2 K. 4. 8, 11, 18, Job 1. 6, 13; 2. 1. Probably: and it fell *on a day* (lit. *the day*, viz. that on which it fell, &c.). Others make *הַיּוֹם* *subj.*, and *the day was*, i.e. there fell *a day*. The vav impf. following is less natural on this view, but the explanation of Art. is the same.—Gen. 28. 11 *a place* prob. belongs to *e*; it is hardly *heilige Stätte* (like Ar. maqam) either here or 2 K. 5. 11.

§ 22. It is on the same principle as in § 21 that classes of persons, creatures, or things have the Art. The classes are *known* just from the fact of their having distinct characteristics. But, further, in such cases the individual possesses all the characteristics which distinguish the class, and the class is seen in any individual. Hence the use of the *sing.* is common.

(a) The sing. of gentilic nouns is so used, as Gen. 13. 7 *הַכְּנַעֲנִי* *the Canaanite*, 15. 21. Of course also the plur. with Art., rarely without, though *פְּלִשְׁתִּים* *Philistines*, is more common; cf. 2 S. 21. 12.

(b) So adjectives and ptcps., as *הַצְדִּיק* *the righteous*,



הָרָשָׁע *the wicked*. Ptcp., Jos. 8. 19 הָאוֹרֵב *the ambush*, 1 S. 13. 17 הַמִּשְׁחִית *the active warriors*, Gen. 14. 13 הַפְּלִיט *the fugitive* (if these do not belong to § 21 *e*, and be defined by the action they perform). The Art. is frequently omitted in poetry. Here also *plur.* is common. Ps. 1. 4-6.

(c) The various classes of creatures, as Gen. 8. 7 הָעֵרֵב *a raven*, v. 8 *a dove*. Esp. in comparisons. Jud. 14. 6 כְּשִׁטָּע *as one rends a kid*. 2 S. 17. 10 הַלֵּב הָאֲרִיָּה *like the heart of a lion*. Ps. 33. 17 שָׁקֵר הַסּוֹס לְתַשׁוּעָה *a horse is vain for deliverance*. So Ecc. 7. 26 הָאִשָּׁה *a woman* (*i.e.* women). 1 S. 26. 20 *a partridge*, Jud. 7. 5 *as a dog laps*, 1 S. 17. 34, Am. 3. 12; 5. 19. 2 K. 8. 13 מָה עֲבָדָהּ *what is thy servant, the dog* (thy dog of a s.)?

(d) So other well-known objects, such as the precious metals and stones, and, in general, any well-known article, though usage fluctuates here; Gen. 2. 11 אֲשֶׁר שָׁם הָהָרָב *where there is gold*. Am. 2. 6, Gen. 13. 2, 2 Chron. 2. 13, 14. Gen. 11. 3 *the brick, the asphalt, the mortar*. 1 K. 10. 27, Is. 28. 7.

(e) And, in general, in comparisons—the thing to which comparison is made naturally being known and distinct before the mind. Is. 1. 18 אֲסִיְהִי חַטָּאִיכֶם כְּשָׁנִים כְּשֶׁלֶג *if your sins be like crimson, they shall be white like snow*. 10. 14 וְהִתְקַצָּא כִּינֹן יָדִי *and my hand hath found like a nest the wealth of the nations*. Nu. 11. 12, Jud. 16. 9, 1 K. 14. 15, 2 S. 17. 3, Hos. 6. 4, Deu. 1. 44, Is. 34. 4; 51. 8; 53. 6, 7, Mic. 4. 12. See the exx. in *c*.

Rem. 1. Any object or thing well known receives the Art., *e.g.* affections or diseases, Gen. 19. 11 הַסְּנִינִים *blindness*, Zech. 12. 4 *madness*, &c., 2 S. 1. 9 הַשִּׁחָן *dizziness?* Lev. 13. 12 *leprosy*. So plagues, calamities, as *blasting, mildew*, &c. Am. 4. 9, Hag. 2. 17, Deu. 28. 21, 22, cf. Ex. 5. 3, 2 K. 6. 18. So moral qualities as *faithfulness* Is. 11. 5, &c. Also physical elements as *fire* in the frequent *burn*

שָׁחַד with fire, &c.; darkness Is. 9. 1. In all these cases, however, usage fluctuates, the Art. being most frequent with prefixed prep.

Rem. 2. In comparisons use of Art. fluctuates. But generally: when the thing to which comparison is made stands simply the Art. is used (see exx. in § 22 *e*); and so when a clause follows which merely states or explains the point in the comparison, Ps. 1. 4; 49. 13, Is. 61. 10, 11, Hos. 6. 4. But when an epithet or clause is added which describes the object not generally but in a particular aspect or condition, the Art. is not used. Is. 13. 14; 16. 2; 29. 5; 41. 2, Hos. 2. 5; 4. 16. The usage fluctuates particularly in poetry.

Rem. 3. Poetry often omits Art. where prose would use it, Ps. 2. 2, 8, 10 מְלִכֵי אֶרֶץ kings of the earth, 72. 17 לְפָנֵי שֶׁמֶשׁ before the sun, v. 5, 7. So in archaic or semi-poetical phrases like earth and heaven Gen. 2. 4, Ps. 148. 13, Gen. 14. 19; beast of the earth Gen. 1. 24, cf. Ps. 50. 10; 104. 11, 20, Is. 56. 9. In prose also the Art. is omitted with expressions familiar, Ex. 27. 21 אֹהֶל מוֹעֵד tent of meeting (as we say "to church," cf. John 6. 59 ἐν συναγωγῇ), 1 K. 16. 16 שָׂר צָבָא commander in chief. So king, 1 K. 21. 10, 13 to curse God and king, cf. 1 K. 16. 18, Am. 7. 13. Gen. 24. 11 לְעֵת עֶרֶב at evening time, Deu. 11. 12 to year's end, 4. 47. Also such words as head, hand, foot, face, mouth. Is. 37. 22 shake רֹאשׁ the head, Mic. 7. 16 אֶל־פִּה יָד put the hand upon the mouth. Job 21. 5, Pr. 11. 21; 16. 5. Gen. 32. 31 face to face, Nu. 12. 8 mouth to mouth. 2 S. 23. 6 בְּיָד with the hand, Is. 28. 2, Neh. 13. 21, 2 Chr. 25. 20. Is. 1. 6 from foot-sole to head. Jer. 2. 27 to turn עֲרָף the back. The words heart, soul, eyes, &c., when in gen. by an adj., usually want the Art. Ps. 7. 11 upright of heart. Is. 24. 7, Ps. 95. 10 (Deu. 20. 6 Art.). Ps. 101. 5, Job 3. 20, Jud. 18. 25, cf. Ps. 37. 14, Job 30. 25.

In particular the word כָּל before such words without Art. may mean all, the whole. Is. 1. 5 כָּל־רֹאשׁ the whole head, 9. 11 the whole mouth, 2 K. 23. 3 the whole heart . . . soul, Ez. 36. 5. And even in other cases, Is. 28. 8 all tables. So phrases like כָּל־חַי all living, כָּל־בָּשָׂר all flesh.—The phrase

פָּעִלִי אֶחָד is usually anarthrous (Ps. 125. 5 Art.). And certain terms are used with a kind of technical brevity, e.g. גְּבֻלָּה *boundary*, Jos. 13. 23, *breadth*, &c. (in measurements), 2 Chr. 3. 3. So "gate," "court," &c. (§ 32, R. 2). Cf. Mal. 1. 10, 11.

Rem. 4. In later writings particularly the Art. is used like a rel. pron., as subj. or obj. to a verb and with prep. Jos. 10. 24, 1 Chr. 26, 28; 29, 8. 17, 2 Chr. 1. 4 (older usage Jud. 5. 27, Ru. 1. 16), 29. 36, Ezr. 8. 25; 10. 14, 17 (Jud. 13. 8 might be ptcp. without *m.*). Ez. 26. 17 also as accented is perf.

The art. with ptcp. is usual (§ 99), and a number of cases accented as perf. of ו' verbs are certainly *fem. ptcp.*, however the accentuation is to be explained, e.g. Gen. 18. 21 their cry הִבָּאָה *which is come*; 46. 27, Is. 51. 10, Ru. 1. 22; 4. 3. Gen. 21. 3 הַנִּגְלִי לוֹ is ptcp. 1 K. 11. 9, Is. 56. 3 are also probably ptcps., and should be so pointed, unless the pointing is to be explained as following the type of אִם verb, cf. 1 K. 17. 14 הִכְלָה. Dan. 8. 1 being late is doubtful. 1 S. 9. 24 for הַחֵלֶב *that which is upon it*, rd. probably הַחֵלֶב *the (fat) tail* (Hitz. הַחֵלֶב as imp. hiph.?). Jos. 10. 24 is anomalous in spelling, and possibly should be read הַחֵלֶבִים.—Ar. occasionally joins Art. to finite verb, the ass *alyujadda'u which has its ears cut off*. Of course it is said that Art. is for *alladhi* the rel.

#### THE GENITIVE. CONSTRUCT

§ 23. In the compound expression formed by the Gen. and the preceding cons. state, as בֶּן־הַמֶּלֶךְ *the son of the king*, the first word is hurriedly passed over, and consequently shortened where possible (Gr. § 17), and the accent falls on the last half of the expression. The first half of the expression is called in Oriental grammar *the annexed*, the second half *that to which annexion is made*, and the relation between them *annexion*.

The gen. may be a noun (subst. or adj.), a pronoun, or a clause. The cons. must be a noun (subst. or adj.). The use

of the gen. is very wide. It expresses almost any relation between two nouns, corresponding often to the semi-adjectival use of nouns in our own language, as tree-fruit, fruit-tree, seed-corn, water-pot, except that the order of words is reversed, fruit of tree, tree of fruit, &c. The gen. may be said to be either gen. of the *subject* or gen. of the *object*, and this distinction applies to pron. suffixes, which are also in the gen. Gen. 27. 41 יְמֵי אָבִל אָבִי the days of mourning for my father; 3. 24 דֶּרֶךְ עֵץ הַחַיִּים the way to the tree of life; 42. 19 שֶׁבֶר רַעֲבֹן בְּתֵיכֶם corn (needful) for the famine of your houses; 2 S. 8. 10 אִישׁ מִלְחָמוֹת תָּעִי engaged in wars with Toi; Is. 9. 6 קִנְיַת י' תַעֲשֶׂה-וָאֵת the zeal of Je. will do this; 26. 11 יִחְוֶוּ קִנְיַת-עַם they shall see thy zeal for the people (Ps. 69. 10). Gen. 16. 5 חֲמָסִי תֵעָלֶיךָ my wrong (that done me) be on thee; 29. 13 שִׁמְעֵנִי the news about Jacob (2 S. 4. 4). Is. 32. 2 סֵתֶר זֶרֶם a covert from the rain. Ps. 60. 10 מוֹאֵב קִיר רַחֲצִי Moab is my wash-pot. Is. 56. 7 בֵּית תַּפְלִלִּי my house of prayer. Gen. 44. 2 כֶּסֶף שֶׁבֶרֹא his corn-money. Gen. 18. 20, Is. 23. 5, Am. 8. 10, Ob. 10, Hab. 2. 17.

Rem. 1. The gen. of the subject may be (a) the *possessor* of any object, as Jer. 7. 4 הַיְכָל יְהוָה the temple of Je.; Gen. 4. 1 אִשְׁתּוֹ his wife. (b) The *subject* to which any quality or attribute belongs, 1 K. 5. 10 חֲכֻמַּת שְׁלֹמֹה the wisdom of Solomon; 10. 9 אֲהַבַּת י' the love of Je. (c) The *agent* in any action, especially after *pass.* ptcp., Is. 53. 4 מִבַּח אֱלֹהִים stricken of God; or the instrument, Is. 22. 2 לֹא חָלְלִי חֶרֶב וְלֹא מַלְחָמָה not slain by the sword nor dead through war. Cf. on Particip. § 98. The gen. of the object is the converse of this, and may be: (a) the *possession* of a possessor, Gen. 42. 30 אֲדֹנִי הָאָרֶץ the lord of the country. (b) The *quality* or attribute belonging to any subject, 1 K. 20. 31 מַלְכֵי חֶסֶד kings of clemency, Is. 30. 18 אֱלֹהֵי מִשְׁפָּט a God of justice. (c) The *object* of any action, particularly after active ptcp.,

Isa. 5. 18 מְשִׁי הַעֵץ *dragging on iniquity*, v. 23 מְצַדִּיק רָשָׁע *justifying the wicked*.

§ 24. The genius of the language is not favourable to the formation of adjectives, and the gen. is used in various ways as explicative of the preceding noun, indicating its material, qualities, or relations. (a) When the gen. is identical with the cons., merely expressing for ex. its name, as Gen. 2. 15 גֶּן־עֵדֶן the *garden of Eden*; 15. 18 נְהַר־פָּרָת the *river of Euphrates*; Is. 41. 14 תוֹלַעַת יַעֲקֹב thou *worm (of) Jacob*; Is. 37. 22 בַּת יְרוּשָׁלַם the *daughter of Jerus.* Or the class to which it belongs, Is. 9. 5 פֶּלֶא יוֹעֵץ a *wonder of a counsellor*; Hos. 13. 2 אֲדָמִי זֹבְחֵי אָדָם *men who sacrifice*; Gen. 16. 12 פָּרָא אֲדָם a *wild ass of man*; Is. 1. 4 זֶרַע מַרְעִים a *race of malefactors*. 1 K. 10. 15, Is. 29. 19, Mic. 5. 4, Pr. 15. 20, 2 Chr. 2. 7.

(b) When the gen. is the *material*; Gen. 24. 22 נֶזֶם זָהָב a *ring of gold*; Ex. 20. 24 מִזְבֵּחַ אֲדָמָה an *altar of earth*. Gen. 3. 21, Jud. 7. 13, 1 K. 6. 36, Is. 2. 20, Ps. 2. 9. Or the *commodity* or article in measure, weight, or number, Jud. 6. 19 אֵיפֶת קֶמַח an *ephah of meal*, Gen. 21. 14, 1 S. 16. 20; 17. 17, Hos. 3. 2.—The consn. by Apposition is very common in this case, § 29. See also the Numerals, §§ 36, 37.

(c) When the gen. is an *attribute* or quality, 1 K. 20. 31 מַלְכֵי חָסֵד *clement kings*; Jud. 11. 1 גִּבּוֹר חַיִּל a *valiant hero*; Lev. 19. 36 קִאֲוָנֵי צֶדֶק *right balances*; Is. 43. 28 שְׂרֵי קֹדֶשׁ *holy princes*, and very often in later writings. Or more generally: Is. 51. 11 שִׂמְחַת עוֹלָם *everlasting joy*; Zech. 11. 4 צֹאן הַחֲרִיגָה the *flock (destined) for slaughter*; Is. 13. 3 עֲלִיזֵי גִּאֲוֹתֵי *my proud exulters* (Zeph. 3. 11). Is. 13. 8; 22. 2; 28. 4; 32. 2, Ex. 29. 29, Ps. 5. 7; 23. 2, Pr. 1. 9; 5. 19, Zeph. 3. 4. Jer. 20. 17 *with child always*.—The equivalence of this gen. to the adj. appears from the loose constructions, Deu. 25. 15 אָבֵן שְׁלֵמָה וְצֶדֶק a *full and right*

weight; 1 S. 30. 22 כָּל אִישׁ רָע וּבָלִיעֵל every *bad* and *worthless* man.

(d) Under the explicative gen. may also be classed the gen. of restriction or specification. Adj. and ptcp. are construed with a gen. which specifies the extent or point of their application: Is. 6. 5 אִישׁ טָמֵא שִׁפְתָּיִם a man *unclean of lips*; Ex. 32. 9 עַם-קָשָׁה עֶרְףָּהּ הוּא they are a *stiffnecked people*; Gen. 24. 16 וַהֲנִיעַר טוֹבַת מְרָאָה מְאֹד and the girl was *very pretty*; 2 S. 9. 13 שְׁתֵּי רַגְלָיו פָּסַח lame *in his two feet*; 1 S. 25. 3 הָאִשָּׁה טוֹבַת שְׂכָל וַיִּפֹּת הָאִישׁ רַע מַעַלְלִים the woman was *of great discretion*, and *beautiful in form*, but the man was *evil in his doings*. Gen. 12. 11; 26. 7; 29. 17; 39. 6; 41. 2-6, Ex. 4. 10; 6. 12, Deu. 9. 6, 13, Jud. 3. 15; 18. 25, 1 S. 2. 5; 22. 2, 2 S. 4. 4, Is. 1. 4, 30; 3. 3; 19. 10; 20. 4 (*rd.* חֲשׁוּפִי); 29. 24; 54. 6, Am. 2. 16, Ps. 24. 4, Job 3. 20; 9. 4, Lam. 1. 1, Song 5. 8.

Rem. 1. The gen. of material, a ring *of gold*, is not *partitive*, but explicative—a ring which is gold.

Rem. 2. The gen. of *quality*, &c., forms along with its cons. a single conception, hence the suff. goes to the gen. Ps. 2. 6 הַר קֹדֶשׁ my *holy hill*, Deu. 1. 41, Is. 2. 20; 9. 3; 30. 22; 31. 7; 64. 9, 10, Zeph. 3. 11, Job 18. 7. Cf. § 27.

Rem. 3. The gen. of attribute or quality is very common with certain nouns, אִישׁ, אִשָּׁה *man, woman*, בֵּן, בַּת *son, daughter*, בֹּעַל *owner, possessor*. Ex. 4. 10 אִישׁ דְּבָרִים a *good speaker*, Job 11. 2 שִׁפְתָּיִם א' a *babbler*, 2 S. 16. 7 דָּמִים א' a *bloodshedder*, Pr. 25. 24 אִשָּׁה מְרִינִים a *brawling woman*. Gen. 9. 20; 25. 27, 2 S. 18. 20, 1 K. 2. 26, Ps. 140. 12.—Pr. 11. 16; 12. 4; 12. 19; 28. 5; 29. 1, 8, Ru. 3. 11, Zeph. 3. 4.

1 S. 14. 52 בְּרִחִיל קָדָחַל *mighty man*, 26. 16 בְּנֵי מוֹת *deserving death*, 1. 16 בֶּחַ בָּלִיעֵל a *worthless person*. Nu. 17. 25, Deu. 3. 18, Jud. 18. 2, 2 S. 3. 34, 2 K. 14. 14, Is. 5. 1; 14. 12, Jer. 48. 45, Jon. 4. 10, Job 5. 7; 28. 8.—Mic. 4. 14, Mal. 2. 11, Ecc. 12. 4. And in stating *age*, 1 S. 4. 15 בְּרִחֵשָׁעִים קָדָחַל 98 years old. Gen. 50. 26, Nu. 32. 11, Josh. 24. 29, Jud. 2. 8, Gen. 17. 17.

Gen. 37. 19 בַּעַל הַחֲלֹמוֹת the *dreamer*, 2 K. 1. 8 שָׁעַר ב' hairy, Pr. 23. 2 נֶפֶשׁ ב' of *large appetite*. Gen. 14. 13, Ex. 24. 14, Is. 41. 15; 50. 8 (adversary), Jer. 37. 13, Nah. 1. 2, Pr. 18. 9; 22, 24; 24. 8, Neh. 6. 18, Ecc. 7. 12, Dan. 8. 6 (*two-horned*).—1 S. 28. 7, 1 K. 17. 17, Nah. 3. 4.—In 2 S. 1. 6 פָּרָשִׁים seems to mean *war-horses*, but cf. Dr. or Well. on v. 18.

Rem. 4. Adverbs and particles being really nouns may stand virtually in the gen., 1 K. 2. 31 הָיָה הַנֶּחֱמָה *causeless* bloodshed, Nu. 29. 6 עֹלֹת הַחֹמֶד the *continual* burnt-offering, Ez. 39. 14, אֲנִשֵּׁי ה' a *few* men, Jer. 13. 27 אַחֲרֵי כֵתִי after *how long*. 2 S. 24. 24, Hab. 2. 19, Ez. 30. 16 (if read. right). And of course such particles as אֲחֵי, בָּרָא, &c. may themselves take a gen. after them.

Rem. 5. The consn. in (*d*) is the usual one in Heb., of the type *integer vitæ*; the *acc.* of limitation after adj. and ptcp. is uncommon, e.g. Is. 40. 20 הַמֵּסֵבִין הָרֹמָה he who is poor *in oblation*, Job 15 10 בְּיָדֵי קְדִימִים older *in days*. But this is not liked, cf. 30. 1 younger לְיָמִים *in days*, so 32. 4. The prep. ב is generally used of members of the body (Am. 2. 15) when the *gen.* is not employed, cf. Ps. 125. 4 (Pr. 17. 20). Cf. § 71, R. 3. Ar. on the other hand regards this gen. as *improper* (unreal) annexion, being substitute for *acc.* of limitation.

Rem. 6. Proper names are occasionally followed by a *gen.*, as Ur of the Chaldees Gen. 11. 31, Aram of the two rivers Gen. 24. 10, Gath of the Philistines Am. 6. 2, Gibeah of Saul Is. 10. 29, Mizpeh of Gilead Jud. 11. 29, &c. Most proper names were originally appellatives, and in other cases there were several places of the same name, but in such a case as *Zion of the Holy One* of Israel Is. 60. 14, the last fact does not apply, and the first had certainly been long forgotten. Cf. *thy sun* v. 20, Jer. 15. 9, Nu. 31. 12, Ezr. 3. 7. Most languages so construe proper names. Wright, Ar. Gr. ii. § 79.

The common יִצְבֹּאוֹת is probably breviloquence for 'אֱלֹהֵי צ' 2 S. 5. 10, Am. 3. 13 and often.

§ 25. A clause may occasionally take the place of the *gen.* Such a clause will be what we call relative (in Heb.

rel. or descriptive), particularly in designations of *time* and *place*: Gen. 40. 3 **מָקוֹם אֲשֶׁר יוֹסֵף אָסוּר שָׁם** *the place where* J. was confined; Is. 29. 1 **קְרִית הַנָּה דָּוִד** *thou city where* D. dwelt; 1 S. 25. 15 **כָּל-יְמֵי הִתְהַלֵּכְנוּ אִתָּם** *all the days* we were conversant with them; Ex. 4. 13 **שְׁלַח-נָא בְיַד-הַשֵּׁלֶח** send *by the hand of him* whom thou wilt send (send by means of some one else); 6. 28 **בְּיוֹם דְּבָר יְהוּדָה** *on the day* Je. spoke. Gen. 39. 20, Deu. 32. 35, 2 S. 15. 21, 1 K. 21. 19, Jer. 22. 12; 36. 2; 48. 36, Hos. 1. 2; 2. 1, Ps. 4. 8; 18. 1; 56. 4, 10; 59. 17; 65. 5; 81. 6; 90. 15; 102. 3; 104. 8; 137. 8, 9; 138. 3; 146. 5, Pr. 8. 32, Lev. 13. 46; 14. 46, Nu. 3. 1; 9. 18, Job 6. 17, 2 Chr. 29. 27.

§ 26. In annexion the determining *Art.* is prefixed to the gen. Both members of the expression are usually indef. when the *Art.* is wanting, and both usually def. when it is present. Gen. 42. 30 **אֲדֹנָי הָאָרֶץ** *the lord of the country*; 24. 22 **נָזָם זָהָב** *a ring of gold*. Of course proper names and all pron., whether separate or suffixal, are def. of themselves. § 20. A number of constructs may follow one another, each depending on the one after it as its gen. Gen. 47. 9 **יְמֵי שָׁנֵי 9** *the days of the years of the lives* of my fathers; 1 K. 2. 5 **לְשָׁנֵי שְׁרֵי צְבָאוֹת יִשְׂרָאֵל** *to the two captains* of the *hosts* of Is. Gen. 41. 10, Lev. 10. 14, Nu. 6. 13, Josh. 4. 5, 2 K. 10. 6, Is. 10. 12; 21. 17, 1 Chr. 9. 13 (if **חֵיל** be read. Perhaps **ל** has fallen out before **מִלְאֲכַת**).

§ 27. As in annexion the two members form a single expression, nothing (except the *Art.* to the gen. and the **ה** of direction to the cons.) can come between them. (a) An adj. qualifying either of the members must stand outside the expression. Jo. 3. 4 **יּוֹם הַגָּדוֹל** *the great day* of the Lord, Gen. 27. 15 **בְּגָדֵי עֶשָׂו בְּנֵה הַגָּדֹל הַחֲמֹדוֹת** *the best garments* of *her elder son* Esau; Gen. 10. 21 **אָחִי יֶפֶת הַגָּדֹל** *the elder brother* of Japheth; 44. 14 **וַיָּבֹא בֵּיתָהּ יוֹסֵף** he came *to the*



house of J.; 28. 2; 43. 17; 46. 1, Deu. 4. 41, 1 K. 19. 15.—  
Deu. 3. 24; 11. 7; 1 S. 25. 25, Is. 36. 9.

(b) For the same reason not more than one cons. can stand before the same gen. For ex. *the sons and daughters of the man* cannot be expressed thus: בְּנֵי וּבָנוֹת הָאִישׁ, because the form בְּנֵי, not being dependent, is without reason. Various forms are adopted. (1) בְּנֵי הָאִישׁ וּבָנוֹתָיו (1). (2) הַבָּנִים וְהַבָּנוֹת (אֲשֶׁר) לָאִישׁ (3). בְּנֵי הָאִישׁ וְהַבָּנוֹת. The first is lightest and most usual. Gen. 41. 8 the magicians of Eg. and her wise men (=the mag. and wise men of E.), Jud. 8. 14 the princes of Succoth and her elders (=the pr. and el. of S.). The second is occasional. Gen. 40. 1 מִשְׁקָהּ וְהָאֹפֶה מֶלֶךְ-מִ' the butler of the king of E. and the baker; Ps. 64. 7 וְלֵב אִישׁ וְקֶרֶב עֶמְקָהּ the breast of each and the heart is deep. The third, circumscription of gen. by prep. ל, is common, and gains ground in the later stages of the language. Gen. 40. 5 הַמִּשְׁקָהּ וְהָאֹפֶה אֲשֶׁר לְמֶלֶךְ מִ'—This circumscription must be had recourse to also when the first member of a gen. relation is to be preserved indecf., the second being def. 1 S. 16. 18 בֶּן לְיִשָּׁי a son of Jesse; cf. 20. 27 בֶּן-יִשָּׁי the son of Jesse (David), 1 K. 2. 39 שְׁנֵי-עֲבָדִים לְשִׁמְעִי two slaves of Shimei, Gen. 41. 12. See more fully Rem. 5, below.

§ 28. Such words as כָּל *all*, רַב *multitude, many*, are nouns, and are followed by gen. Gen. 8. 9 כָּל-הָאָרֶץ *all (of) the earth*, Ps. 51. 3 רַב רַחֲמִיּה *according to thy many mercies*. So the numerals. Gen. 40. 12 שְׁלֹשֶׁת יָמִים *three days*. See § 29 Apposition, and § 36 seq. Numerals. On Adj. in gen. by their noun, cf. § 32, R. 5.

Rem. 1. The cons. before a clause (§ 25) is scarcely a mere *formal* shortening of the word due to the closeness of connexion. It has syntactical meaning, the clause being equivalent to inf. cons. with suff.; e.g. 1 S. 25. 15 כְּלִי-יָמִי

הַהֶלֶבֶט (Pr. 6. 22), Ps. 4. 8 = מַעַת לֵב דִּנְנָם (Hos. 4. 7; 10. 1, Deu. 7. 7). In other cases there is om. of rel. pr.

More like a mere formal shortening is the use of the cons. before prepp. In poetry and the higher style chiefly the ptcps. (and nouns) of verbs that govern by a prep. are put in cons. before the prep. The real consn. in this case is by prep. and the cons. is secondary, as appears from Jud. 8. 11 מִשְׁבִּימִי בְּבֶקֶר (so Sep.) with *Art.* — Is. 5. 11 מִשְׁבִּימִי בְּבֶקֶר; 9. 2 שְׂמַחַת בְּפִצְצִיר; 28. 9 נִמְלִי מִחֶלֶב, Jud. 5. 10, 2 S. 1. 21, Is. 14. 19; 56. 10 (inf.), Jer. 8. 16, Ez. 13. 2, Ps. 2. 12, Job 24. 5.

The few cases of shortening before *var copul.* seem due to assonance, Ez. 26. 10 (cf. Jer. 4. 29), Is. 33. 6, or to the ear being accustomed to the cons. form before words closely connected, Is. 35. 2. In Is. 51. 21 the coming word יין seems to influence the preceding "drunken." Jer. 33. 22 אֶתִּי מְשֻׁרְרִי is altogether anomalous (cf. v. 21); Hag. 2. 17.

Rem. 2. On indef. cons. before def. gen. cf. § 20, R. 2.

Rem. 3. Sometimes an adj. is used nominally and brought within the chain of constructs. Is. 28. 16, a corner-stone יְקִירַת of *preciousness* of a foundation; perhaps v. 1, 4 flower נֵבֶל of a *faded-thing* (faded flower), Jer. 4. 11 *wind of dryness*. In some cases the Abs. seems retained in a phrase. Is. 28. 1 נִיא שְׁמֵנִים וְלֹא יִין the *fat valley* of those stricken down of wine; v. 3 נֹאֶחַ. Ps. 68. 22, Pr. 21. 6? Text is doubtful, Is. 63. 11, the words "Moses," "his people," being wanting in Sep. Ez. 6. 11 רְעוּת wanting in Sep. Is. 32. 13 קִרְיָה עֲלֵיהָ may be loose subord. in acc. On Is. 19. 8, cf. Rem. 1.—The consn. 2 S. 1. 9, כָּל עוֹד נֹפֵשׁ בִּי (Job 27. 3, Hos. 14. 3), where כָּל seems separated from its gen., is uncertain. The כָּל appears rather to be used adverbially, *wholly, in whole*, cf. Ecc. 5. 15 (Ps. 39. 6; 45. 14) and the Chald. כָּל קַבֵּל Dan. 2. 8, 41, &c.

Rem. 4. An instance of two cons. before a gen. is Ez. 31. 16, but Sep. wants וְטֹב. Dan. 1. 4 is scarcely an ex., cf. Is. 29. 12. Occasionally the first word seems to stand loosely in Abs., Is. 55. 4; less necessarily 53. 3, 4. In the broader or emphatic style, when one cons. would be followed by several gen., it is repeated before each. Gen. 24. 3, *God of heaven and God of earth*; 11. 29; 14. 13, Jos.

24. 2, though usage fluctuates, Gen. 14. 22; 28. 5, Ex. 3. 6, 16 with 4. 5, 1 K. 18. 36. There is nothing unusual in several gen. after one cons. Deu. 5. 19; 8. 8; 32. 19, Jud. 1. 7, 9, Is. 1. 11, 28; 37. 3; 64. 10, Ps. 5. 7, Pr. 3. 4. On the other hand Deu. 8. 7, 15, &c., are ex. of loose rhetorical accumulation of terms. Cf. Deu. 3. 5, 1 K. 4. 13.

Rem. 5. Circumscription of the gen. is used: 1. When it is needful to preserve the indefiniteness of first word. 1 S. 16. 18 לְיֵשׁוּבִי a son of Jesse, 1 S. 17. 8, 1 K. 2. 39, Gen. 41. 12, Nu. 25. 14, Song 8. 1. Similarly the so-called לְ of authorship, לְדָוִד a psalm of D., or simply לְדָוִד by David. 2. When it is desired to retain for the first noun the somewhat greater distinctiveness given by the Art. Gen. 25. 6; 29. 9; 47. 4, Jud. 6. 25, 1 S. 21. 8, 1 K. 4. 2, 2 K. 5. 9, Ps. 116. 15; 118. 20. 3. When it is necessary to retain a definite designation or expression in its completeness. 1 K. 15. 23 סֵפֶר הַדְּבָרִי הַזֶּה לְמַלְכֵי יִהּ the book of the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah, 2 K. 11. 4 הַצִּנּוּרִים the centurions, Ru. 2. 3 חֶלְקֵת הַשָּׂדֶה לְבֹעַז the field-portion (property) of Boaz, 2 S. 23. 11 הַשָּׂדֶה-חֶלְקֵת (piece of country); cf. 2 K. 9. 25, Nu. 27. 16; 30. 2, Gen. 41. 43, Jos. 19. 51, 2 S. 2. 8, 2 Chr. 8. 10. Sometimes also with words not declinable, as *Tera-phim* Gen. 31. 19. And in general to express the gen. relation of, *belonging to*, in consns. where the *case* could not be used. Am. 5. 3 of, in, the house of Isr., 1 K. 14. 13, Jer. 22. 4, Am. 9. 1, Ezr. 10. 14, 1 Chr. 3. 1, 5; 7. 5. 4. For the same reason the circumscription is usual in dates and with numerals. Gen. 7. 11 in the 600 year נֶחָמִי of the life of N., 1 K. 3. 18 בְּיוֹם הַשְּׁלִישִׁי לְלִדְתִּי 18, Gen. 16. 3, 1 K. 14. 25, and often. Cf. on dates, § 38c. The circums. occurs, however, without significance and gains in later style, Ps. 123. 4, 1 S. 20. 40, Jer. 12. 12 חֶרֶב לְיָהוּה the sword of Je. 5. The gen. suff. is circumscribed in the same way, perhaps with some emphasis. 1 K. 1. 33 לִי הַפֶּרְדָּה אֲשֶׁר לִי my mule; cf. v. 38, Ru. 2. 21, Lam. 1. 10, cf. 3. 44. So the curious לִי אִשָּׁה my wife (a w. of mine) 2 Chr. 8. 11. After suff. Song 1. 6 בְּרִמִּי נֶחְלִי my own vineyard, Ps. 132. 11, 12.

Rem. 6. A noun in appos. with a cons. is sometimes attracted into construction. 1 S. 28. 7 אִשָּׁת בְּעֵלָה אוֹב a woman

possessing an Ob. Is. 23. 12; 37. 22 'בתולה כח צ' *the virgin*, the daughter of Zion. Jer. 14. 17, Deu. 21. 11. And sometimes a noun in cons. is suspended by being repeated before its gen., or by the interposition of a synonym in appos. Gen. 14. 10 בארות חמר *pits*, pits of bitumen. Nu. 3. 47, Deu. 33. 19, Jud. 5. 22; 19. 22, 2 S. 20. 19, 2 K. 10. 6; 17. 13 (Kere), Jer. 46. 9 (if text right), Ps. 78. 9, Job 20. 17, Dan. 11. 14. 1 K. 20. 14 is different, and Ps. 35. 16 obscure.

NOMINAL APPPOSITION

§ 29. With a certain simplicity and concreteness of thought the Hebrew said: The altar is brass, the table is wood, instead of the altar is *brazen*, the table is *of wood*. Similarly he said: The ark is three storeys, the altar is stones, instead of *consists of* three storeys. So: the homer is barley; the famine is three years; his judgments are righteousness; I am peace. When, therefore, two nouns stand related to one another in meaning in such a way that they may form the subj. and pred. in a simple judgment or proposition, as, *the altar is brass*, they may be made to express one complex idea by being placed in apposition, *the altar, the brass*, for the altar *of* brass, or, the *brazen altar*; *a homer, barley*, for *of* or *in* barley. In the former case *altar* is the principal thing, and *brass* is *explanation*; in the other *barley* is principal, and said to be the *permutative* (substitute or exchange) for the measure. In many cases appos. is used as in other languages, as, *I, the Lord*; *his servants, the prophets*, &c. Apposition is used—

(a) In the case of the person or thing and its name. 2 S. 3. 31 דָּוִד הַמֶּלֶךְ *the king David*; Nu. 34. 2 הָאָרֶץ כְּנָעַן *the land Canaan*; 1 Chr. 5. 9 הַנָּהָר פָּרַת *the river Euphrates*, Gen. 14. 6 בְּהִרְרֵם שְׁעִיר *in their mountain Seir*. Gen. 24. 4, 1 S. 3. 1; 4. 1, 1 K. 4. 1; 16. 21, 24, Ezr. 8. 21; 9. 1. In such cases as Nu. 34. 2, 1 Chr. 5. 9 the *gen.* is more common, though apposition may seem more logical.

If the personal name be second the *nota acc.* **את** or prep. **לְ** before the appellative has to be repeated. Gen. 24. 4 **לְבְנִי** **וְהִסְקֵה לְלֶדְתָּ** **אֶת-אֶחָיו** **אֶת-הָבֵל** *to my son Isaac; 21. 10. Gen. 4. 2 bore his brother Abel*; and **את** is usual before the proper name even when the appell. wants it, particularly if any word come between them. Is. 7. 6; 8. 2, Gen. 22. 20, 21; 48. 13, Ex. 1. 11; Jud. 3. 15, 1 K. 11. 14. On the other hand, there is no repetition of **את** or prep. with appell. when second. Gen. 16. 3 **אֶת-הָגֵר שָׁפָתָהּ** took *H. her maid*; 11. 31; 12. 5; 14. 16; 20. 14; 24. 59. Gen. 4. 8 **וַיָּקָם אֶל-הָבֵל אֶחָיו** rose up against *Ab. his brother*.—Gen. 11. 28, Jud. 8. 27, 2 S. 7. 8, 10, Is. 22. 20. Cf. Gen. 43. 28, 2 S. 11. 17.

(b) The person or thing and its *class*. 1 K. 7. 14 **אִשָּׁה** **אֶלְמָנָה** a woman, a widow (widow woman); 2 K. 9. 4 **הַנְּבִיא** the prophetic youth (not, the youthful prophet); Ex. 24. 5 **זִבְחֵי שְׁלָמִים** sacrifices (of) peace-offerings (gen. 'ש' later). Deu. 22. 23, 1 S. 2. 13, 2 S. 10. 7. Gen. 21. 20 a shooter, a bowman, and 6. 17 the flood, waters; the second word merely explains the archaic or unusual first.

(c) The thing and its *material*, which may also be considered the individual and its general class. 2 K. 16. 17 **אִשְׁרָה כָּל-עֵץ** the brazen oxen; Deu. 16. 21 **אִשְׁרָה כָּל-עֵץ** an Ashera (of) any wood; Ex. 39. 17 **הַעֲבֹתֹת הַזָּהָב** the cords (of) gold; Ex. 28. 17 **אַרְבָּע שָׁרִיטִים** four rows (of) stones (gen. 39. 10); 2 Chr. 4. 13, two rows pomegranates, Ez. 22. 18, 1 Chr. 15. 19, Zech. 4. 10.—1 Chr. 28. 18 **הַקְרוֹיִבִים** the cher. (of, in) gold, Lev. 6. 3. In 2 K. 16. 14 *rd.* perh. *abs.* **הַמִּזְבֵּחַ**; but cf. 23. 17.

(d) The measure, weight, or number, and the thing measured, weighed, or counted. 2 K. 7. 1, 16, 18 **קֶאֱפָה סֶלֶת** a seah flour and two seahs barley, Gen. 18. 6, Ru. 2. 17 **כֶּאֱפָה שְׂעִירִים** about an ephah of barley. Ex.

29. 40 רְבֵעִית הַחֵין *the fourth of a hin of wine; ib. a tenth of fine flour*, Nu. 15. 4, Ex. 9. 8; 16. 33, Nu. 22. 18, 1 K. 18. 32, Lev. 6. 13.—Gen. 41. 1 שְׁנַתִּים יָמִים *two years of time*, 2 S. 13. 23. 2 S. 24. 13 שְׁנֵים רָעַב *7 years of famine; ib. שְׁלֹשֶׁת יָמִים דָּבָר 3 days of pestilence*. Gen. 29. 14, Nu. 11. 20, Deu. 21. 13, 2 K. 15. 13; Gen. 45. 11, 1 Chr. 21. 12, Ez. 38. 17, Dan. 11. 13. 2 K. 3. 4 100,000 *rams, wool (fleeces)*, but 1 S. 16. 20 is not an *ass-load* of bread, but an *ass laden with b.* (text dubious).—1 K. 16. 24 בְּכֶפְרִים כֶּסֶף *for two talents of silver*, 2 K. 5. 23, cf. v. 17; 1 S. 17. 5.

With different order, Neh. 2. 12 מְעַט אַנְשִׁים *men, few*, Is. 10. 7; Nu. 9. 20 מִסְפָּר יָמִים *days, a number (many)*, 2 S. 8. 8; 24. 24, 1 K. 5. 9. Ex. 27. 16 *a curtain of 20 cubits*.

(e) Even the thing and its quality (regarded as its substance or class), or anything which, being characteristic, may serve as specification or explanation of it. 1 K. 22. 27 מֵיִם לַחֲץ *water of distress (scanty as in stress)*; Ps. 60. 5 יַיִן תַּרְעִילָה *wine of reeling*; Pr. 22. 21 אֲמָתִים נְאֻמֹּת *words of truth*, Zech. 1. 13, Is. 3. 24 *work of crisping*, Dan. 8. 13. Ez. 18. 6 נִדְהָה אִשָּׁה. 1 K. 6. 7.

The usage receives large extension in the predicative form. Gen. 11. 1 *the earth was one tongue*; 14. 10 *the vale was pits, pits (full of p.)*, Is. 5. 12 *their feast is harp, &c.*, Ps. 45. 9 *all thy garments are myrrh and cassia*, Ezr. 10. 13 *the season was rains*. Gen. 13. 10, 2 S. 17. 3, 1 K. 10. 6, Is. 7. 24; 65. 4, Jer. 24. 2; 48. 38, Mic. 5. 4, Ez. 2. 8; 27. 36, Zech. 8. 13, Ps. 10. 5; 19. 10; 25. 10; 55. 22; 92. 9; 109. 4; 110. 3; 111. 7; 120. 7, Pr. 3. 17; 8. 30, Job 3. 4; 5. 24; 8. 9, 2 Chr. 9. 5, Dan. 9. 23 (cf. 10. 11).

Rem. 1. The order *Dav. the king* occurs 2 K. 8. 29; 9. 15, and in later style 1 Chr. 24. 31, &c. In 2 S. 13. 39 *rd. יוֹחָנָן בֶּן־נָדָב (רוד for רוד)*. In other cases the usual order is *Isaiah the prophet* Is. 39. 3, *Abiathar the priest* 1 S. 30. 7.

Hos. 5. 13 *king Jareb* is obscure ; Pr. 31. 1 perhaps *L. king of Massa*.

Rem. 2. Repetition of prep. &c. before proper name has exceptions, Gen. 24. 12, 1 S. 25. 19 (but Sep. om. Nabal, cf. v. 25), Job 1. 8. With *my, thy, his people Israel* om. is more common.

Rem. 3. In most of the cases *a—e* the *gen.* may be used (§ 24), 1 K. 7. 10, 2 K. 5. 5, 1 Chr. 29. 4, 2 Chr. 8. 18 ; 9. 9, 13. Cf. Ez. 47. 4 מִי מַתָּנִים with בָּרָכִים מִיָּם.

Rem. 4. In cases like 1 Chr. 28. 18 הַכְרוֹנִים זָהָב where object is def. and material indef. the latter might be in *acc.* of specification, cher. *in* gold ; Lev. 6. 3 *linen garment* (g. *in* linen) ; and so cases like Gen. 18. 6 three *seahs fine flour*, though appos. is more natural. Ar. has four ways of connexion : appos. ; the prep. *min, of* (explicative) ; the *gen.* ; and *acc.* of specif. Such passages as Ps. 71. 7 מַחֲסִי עוֹ my *strong refuge*, Ez. 16. 27 דְּרֹכָהּ זָפוּה *thy lewd way*, Hab. 3. 8, 2 S. 22. 33, seem cases of appos., the noun being explanatory. Of course the second noun is not *gen.*, but an *acc.* of limitation is less natural and expressive, and cases like Ps. 38. 20 שָׁנְאֵי שָׁקֶר, 35. 19 ; 69. 5 ; 119. 86, Ez. 13. 22 are of a different class (§ 70, 71, R. 2). Lev. 26. 42 בְּרִיתִי יְעֻלֵּב, &c., Jer. 33. 20 הָיָה ב' start from the *gen. the cov. (of) with Jacob*, and when the annexion is broken by the suff. the second noun is loosely left without prep., cf. Jer. 33. 21. An *acc.* of specification with proper name or def. noun is improbable. With Ezr. 2. 62, Neh. 7. 64, comp. Jer. 52. 20.

Rem. 5. Some cases of apparent appos. are due to errors of text. Josh. 3. 14 om. הַבְּרִית, 8. 11 om. הַמַּלְחָמָה, cf. v. 10, as explanatory margins. Jos. 13. 5 הָאָרֶץ הַנִּבְלָה might be like Nu. 34. 2 (but Sep. otherwise). Jud. 8. 32 perhaps עִפְרַת like 6. 24. Is. 11. 14 rd. בְּכֶתֶף. Jer. 8. 5 om. *Jerus.* and Ez. 45. 16 om. הָאָרֶץ, both with Sep.

Rem. 6. The word כל *all* instead of taking *gen.* is often placed in appos., 2 S. 2. 9 יִשְׂרָאֵל כֻּלּוֹ, Is. *all of it*, 1 K. 22. 28, Is. 9. 8 ; 14. 29, 31, Jer. 13. 19, Mic. 2. 12 ; often in Ezek., 11 15 ; 14. 5 ; 20. 40, &c. The archaic form of suff., as 2 S. 2. 9, is common, Is. 15. 3 ; 16. 7, Jer. 2. 21 ; 8. 6, 10 ;

20. 7 (15. 10 *rd.* בָּלָהֶם קָלָיוּ or בָּלָהֶם ?).—In such phrases as 1 S. 4. 10 וַיָּנֶסוּ אִישׁ לְאָהֳלָיו *each* is in appos. to subj. in the verb (*pl. tents* except Jud. 20. 8, 2 K. 14. 12 K'th.). In prose the plur. verb mostly precedes, but in higher style often follows, Is. 13. 8, 14.

Rem. 7. An anticipative pron. sometimes precedes the subj. or obj., which then stands in appos. with the pron.; Ex. 2. 6 וַתִּרְאֶהוּ אֶת־הַיֶּלֶד *and she saw him, the child*, Ez. 10. 3 שָׁמַעְתִּי בְּבֹאֵי הָאִישׁ *when he came, the man*. Ex. 7. 11; 35. 5, Lev. 13. 57, Josh. 1. 2, 1 K. 21. 13 (2 K. 16. 15), Jer. 31. 1, Ez. 3. 21; 42. 14 (text?); 44. 7, Ps. 83. 12, Pr. 5. 22, Song 3. 7, 1 Chr. 5. 26; 9. 22, Ezr. 3. 12; 9. 1, Dan. 11. 11, 27.—In 1 K. 19. 21 Sep. wants "the flesh," and in Jer. 9. 14 "this people." The usage is common in Aram., and prevails in later style; it appears in Pr. 1-9, 10-22, but not in 25-29.

Rem. 8. When the same word is repeated in appos. *intensity* of various kinds is expressed; *e.g.* the superl. of adj., 1 S. 2. 3 *very proudly*, Is. 6. 3 *most holy*, Ecc. 7. 24 *very deep*. With nouns Gen. 14. 10, Ex. 8. 10, 2 K. 3. 16 *pits, pits* (sheer pits), Jud. 5. 22, Jo. 4. 14.—With words of time the idea of continuity, constancy, Deu. 14. 22 שָׁנָה שָׁנָה *year by year*. Often with prep. ב, Deu. 15. 20 שָׁנָה בְּשָׁנָה, 1 S. 1. 7, Nu. 24. 1, Jud. 16. 20, 2 K. 17. 4. Comp. Deu. 2. 27 *always by the road*, 16. 20 *always righteousness*. Ex. 23. 30, Deu. 28. 43.

(2) With Numerals the idea of *distribution*; Gen. 7. 2 *seven, seven (by sevens)*, 7. 3, 9, 15, Josh. 3. 12, Is. 6. 2; sometimes with *and*, 2 S. 21. 20, 1 Chr. 20. 6. Gen. 32. 17 *each flock* separately; 2 K. 17. 29; 25. 15.

(3) When words are joined by *and* the idea of *variety* is expressed; Deu. 25. 13, 14 *stone and stone* (divers weights), Ps. 12. 3, 1 Chr. 12. 34, Pr. 20. 10. The usage is very common in later style to express *respective, various, several*, 1 Chr. 28. 14 *the respective services*; v. 15 *the several lamp-stands*; v. 16 *the various tables*. 1 Chr. 26. 13, 2 Chr. 8. 14; 11. 12; 19. 5, &c., Ezr. 10. 14, Neh. 13. 24, Est. 1. 8, 22, and often. With כָּל prefixed, Est. 2. 11, 2 Chr. 11. 12 (also post-Biblical).



## THE ADJECTIVE

§ 30. The adj. as attribute, being virtually in apposition to the noun, is placed after it, and agrees with it in *gend.*, *numb.*, and *case*. Gen. 21. 8 וַיַּעַשׂ מִשְׁתָּה גְדוֹל he made *a great feast*; 20. 9 הֵבֵאתָ עָלַי חֲטָאָה גְדֹלָה thou hast brought on me *a great sin*; Is. 5. 9 בָּתִּים רַבִּים לְשֹׁמֶה *many houses* shall be desolate. It also agrees in *determination*, being without the *Art.* if its noun be *indef.*, but having the *Art.* if the noun be *determined* in any way (by *Art.*, *def.*, *gen.* or *suff.*). Gen. 21. 8; 20. 9 above. 2 K. 4. 9 אִישׁ אֶחָד מֵאֱלֹהִים קָדוֹשׁ *a holy man* of God; 1 S. 12. 22 שְׁמוֹ הַגָּדוֹל *his great name*; 17. 13 יְשִׁי הַגְּדֹלִים בְּנֵי יִשָּׁי *the three eldest sons of Jesse*; Is. 8. 7 מֵי הַנָּהָר הַעֲצוּמִים *the many waters* of the River. If there be several adj. the concord of all is the same; Is. 27. 1 בַּחֲרָבוֹ הַקָּשָׁה וְהַגְּדֹלָה וְהַחֲזָקָה with his *sore* and *great* and *strong sword*.

The concord of the adj. when *pred.* is the same as when it is *qualificative*, though liable to be less exact. The position of *pred.* in the sentence is also variable (§ 103 seq.). The *pred.* is usually *indefinite*.

§ 31. The adj. having no dual is used in *plur.* with dual nouns; Is. 35. 3 בְּרַפְּיִם קְשָׁלוֹת *failing knees*; 42. 7 לִפְקֹחַ יְדֵי מֹשֶׁה כְּבָדִים *the hands* of M. were *heavy* (*hand* *mas.* only here, cf. Ez. 2. 9). Gen. 29. 17, 1 S. 3. 2, Ps. 18. 28; 130. 2, Pr. 6. 17, 18.

With collectives agreement may be grammatical in the *sing.*, or *ad sensum* in the *plur.*; 1 S. 13. 15 הָעָם הַנִּמְצְאִים *the people* that *were present* with him; but in *v.* 16 הָעָם הַנִּמְצָא § 115.

With the *plur.* of eminence the adj. is usually *sing.*; Is. 19. 4 אֱלֹהִים צָדִיק קָשָׁה *a harsh master*. Ps. 7. 10 אֱלֹהִים צָדִיק *righteous God*; but in some parts of the *Hex. (E) plur.*,

Josh. 24. 19 אלהים קדושים *a holy* God (cf. pl. vb. Gen. 20. 13; 35. 7). So 1 S. 17. 26 חיים 'א *the living* God, Deu. 5. 23, Jer. 23. 36, but also חי 'א 2 K. 19. 4, 16. Cf. *Teraphim* of single image, 1 S. 19. 13, 16. Gen. 31. 34 (E), where Ter. is treated as pl., may be doubtful.

§ 32. The demonstrative adj. זה, הוא *this, that*, have the same concord as other adj. But (1) they necessarily make their noun def., האיש הזה *this man*, הימים ההם *those days*, and have themselves the Art. (2) In the case of nouns determined by pron. suff. they are in Appos. *without* the Art., Ex. 10. 1 אתני אלה *these my signs*; and so always. (3) With another adj. or several they stand last, 1 K. 3. 6 הזה הגדול החסד הגדול *this great goodness* (v. 9); Deu. 1. 19 והגורא ההוא המדבר הגדול *that great and terrible* wilderness; Gen. 41. 35 השנים הטובות הבאות האלה *these good coming* years.

Rem. 1. Occasionally the adj. precedes the noun, particularly רב in plur. (sing. Is. 21. 7; 63. 7, Ps. 31. 20; 145. 7), Jer. 16. 16, Ps. 32. 10; 89. 51, Pr. 7. 26; 31. 29, Neh. 9. 28, 1 Ch. 28. 5. Ez. 24. 12 (fem. cons.) might suggest that in some instances of the sing. the adj. is used *nominally*.—Is. 28. 21 the adj. may be pred., *strange* is his work. In other cases the adj. is independent and the consn. apposition, Is. 23. 12 *thou violated one*, virgin, &c.; 53. 11 perhaps the place of צדיק is due to attraction of vb. צדיק; 10. 30 also apposition, *thou poor one*, Anathoth (Ew. *al.* would rd. עֲנִיָּה imp. *answer her*). Jer. 3. 7, 10 בנודה *is almost* a proper name, *Treacherous*, her sister.

Rem. 2. Sometimes the noun is defined and adj. without the Art. (1) Numerals as אחד *one*, and words similarly used as אחר *another*, רבים *many*, being def. of themselves, may dispense with Art. Gen. 42. 19 (Art. v. 33), 1 S. 13. 17, 2 K. 25. 16, Jer. 24. 2, Ez. 10. 9; Gen. 43. 14, Jer. 22. 26, Ez. 39. 27. (2) In some cases the adj. is *acc.* of condition, or at any rate of the nature of pred. Gen. 37. 2, Nu. 14. 37,

1 S. 2. 23 (Sep. wants), Is. 57. 20 (11. 9?), Ez. 4. 13; 34. 12, Hag. 1. 4, Ps. 18. 18; 92. 12.—Is. 17. 6 prob. *rd.* סַעֲפֵי הַיָּם. (3) Possibly euphony in some cases led to om. of Art. 2 S. 6. 3, unless *new cart* expressed a single idea (cf Mic. 2. 7) to which Art. was prefixed. (4) Other exx. Jer. 2. 21, where Hitz. suggests that סוּרֵי הַנֶּפֶשׁ may = הַסּוּרִים לְנֶפֶשׁ, 1 S. 15. 9 where *rd.* נִבְּוָה וְנִמְאָם (cf. 1 K. 19. 11) at any rate. Dan. 8. 13; 11. 31. So formulas like אֱלֹהִים חַי the living God.

In other cases the adj. is defined and noun without Art. (1) Numerals and similar words like כָּל, having a certain definiteness of their own, may communicate it to their noun, which then dispenses with Art. Gen. 21. 29; 41. 26, Nu. 11. 25, cf. 2 S. 20. 3, Gen. 1. 21; 9. 10. (2) Certain half-technical terms came to be def. of themselves, as *court*, *gate*, *entrance*, &c. (§ 22, R. 4): *court* 1 K. 7. 12, 2 K. 20. 4 (K're), Ez. 40. 28, 31 (47. 16 text obscure); *gate* Ez. 9. 2, Zech. 14. 10 (Neh. 3. 6, gate is cons.); *entrance* Jer. 38. 14. So *way* 1 S. 12. 23, Jer. 6. 16 (cf. Jud. 21. 19); *day*, particularly with ordinals, Gen. 1. 31, Ex. 12. 15; 20. 10; Deu. 5. 14, Lev. 19. 6; 22. 27; cf. Is. 43. 13 מְיוֹם = מְהוּם. (3) Other exx. 1 S. 6. 18; 16. 23, 2 S. 12. 4, Jer. 6. 20; 17. 2 (Ps. 104. 18); 32. 14 (text obscure), Zech. 4. 7, Neh. 9. 35, Ps. 62. 4, Ez. 21. 19 (text uncertain). 2 K. 20. 13 rather as Jer. 6. 20 than as Song 7. 10. 1 S. 19. 22 *rd.* perhaps הַיָּרֵךְ (Sep.) for הַנֶּגֶל. (4) With ptc. Jud. 21. 19, Jer. 27. 3; 46. 16 (Zech. 11. 2).

Rem. 3. The usage § 32 (2) goes throughout all stages of the language, Gen. 24. 8, Ex. 11. 8, Deu. 5. 26; 11. 18, Josh. 2. 14, 20, Jud. 6. 14, 1 K. 8. 59; 10. 8; 22. 23, Jer. 31. 21, Ezr. 2. 65, Neh. 6. 14; 7. 67, 2 Chr. 18. 22; 24. 18, Dan. 10. 17.—Josh. 2. 17 is doubly anomalous (cf. Jud. 16. 28). The demons. is without Art. sometimes in the phrase הַלַּיְלָה הַהוּא on that night, Gen. 19. 33; 30. 16; 32. 23, 1 S. 19. 10, cf. Ps. 12. 8 (§ 6, R. 1). 1 S. 2. 23 text dubious.—On the other hand 2 K. 1. 2; 8. 8, 9 *rd.* הַיְלֵי (cf. Jer. 10. 19). In 1 S. 17. 17 *num.* may define לָחֶם (1 S. 14. 29?). In 1 S. 17. 12 text faulty.

The order § 32 (3) may be changed when adj. is em-

phatic, 2 Chr. 1. 10, or when other specifications are linked to it, Jer. 13. 10.

Rem. 4. When two adj. qualify a *fem.* noun the second is sometimes left in *mas.* 1 K. 19. 11 רוח גדולה וזקן *a great and strong* wind, Jer. 20. 9 (1 S. 15. 9). And in cases of a commodity and its measure or number the adj. may agree with the commodity as the main thing, 1 S. 17. 17 *this ephah of parched corn*; v. 28.

Rem. 5. The adj. is sometimes used nominally and put by the noun in *gen.*; 2 K. 18. 17 חיל קביר *a great force*, Is. 22. 24 כָּל־כֵּלֵי הַקֶּטָן *all vessels of the smallest*, Song 7. 10 יַיִן הַטוֹב *wine of the best*. Deu. 19. 13; 27. 25, Jer. 22. 17 (cf. 2 K. 24. 4), Nu. 5. 18, 2 K. 25. 9 (Am. 6. 2?), Zech. 14. 4, Ps. 73. 10; 74. 15 (cf. Ex. 14. 27); 78. 49; 109. 2, 2 Chr. 4. 10, Ecc. 1. 13; 8. 10.—Other exx. of adj. used nominally, Gen. 30. 35, 37 (exposing *the white*), Deu. 28. 48 (and *nakedness*), Josh. 3. 4 (*a distance*), Jud. 9. 16; 14. 14 (*sweetness*), Josh. 24. 14, 2 K. 10. 15 (perh. om. אַח), Jer. 2. 25; 15. 15; 30. 12, Is. 28. 4 (*flower of a fading thing*), v. 16, Ps. 111. 8, Job 33. 27 (*perverted right*).—Conversely the noun may be put in *gen.* by the adj. used nominally, often with superlative meaning, Jud. 5. 29 (*the wisest*), Is. 19. 11; 35. 9, Ez. 7. 24; 28. 7. Ex. 15. 16, 1 S. 16. 7; 17. 40, Jer. 15. 15, Ps. 46. 5; 65. 5. Pr. 16. 19, שָׁפַל might be inf.

Rem. 6. The adj. when it expresses the characteristic attribute of the noun is sometimes used instead of it; Is. 24. 23 הַלְבֵנָה *the moon (the white)*, הַחֹמֶה *the sun (the hot)*, 30. 16 קַל *the horse (swift)*, Jer. 8. 16, Mal. 3. 11 הָאֹכֵל *the consumer (locust)*. Mostly in poetry and less common than in Ar.

## THE ADJECTIVE. COMPARISON

§ 33. The language possesses no elative form of the adj. Comparison is made by the simple form, followed by prep. מִן, Gen. 3. 1 חֵית הַשָּׂדֶה מִכָּל עֶרֶם *more cunning than all the beasts*; Deu. 11. 23 גְּדֹלִים מֵכֶם *nations greater*

*than* you; Hos. 2. 9 **אָז מֵעַתָּה** *it was better* for me then *than* now; 1 S. 9. 2 **גְּבוּהָ מִכָּל־הָעַם** *taller*. Jud. 14. 18, 1 S. 24. 18, 2 S. 19. 8. With *better* the subj. is often a clause (inf.), Gen. 29. 19, Ps. 118. 8, 9, Pr. 21. 3, 9 (§ 89).

(*b*) The quality (*tertium comp.*) is often expressed by a verb, Gen. 41. 40 **אֲנִי־לְךָ מִכָּה** *I will be greater* than thou; 29. 30 **וַיֶּאֱהָב אֶת־רָחֵל מִלְאָה** *he loved R. more than L.*, 2 S. 1. 23 **מִן־עֲשָׂרִים קָלוּ מֵאַרְיוֹת גְּבִירוֹת** *they were swifter than eagles and stronger than lions*. Gen. 19. 9 **עַתָּה נִרְעֶה לָּהּ** *now will we treat thee worse* than them. Gen. 37. 4; 48. 19, Deu. 7. 7, Jud. 2. 19, 1 S. 18. 30, 2 S. 6. 22; 18. 8; 20. 5, 6, 1 K. 5. 10, 11; 10. 23; 14. 9.

§ 34. The superlative is expressed by the simple adj. with Art., or followed by gen. of a noun or pron., 1 S. 17. 14 **וְדָוִד הוּא הַקָּטָן** and David was *the youngest*; 18. 17 **בְּתִי הַגְּדוּלָּה** *my eldest* (elder) daughter, Deu. 21. 3. — 2 K. 10. 6 **גְּדֹלֵי הָעִיר** *the greatest men* of the city; Jer. 6. 13 **מִקְטָנִם וְעַד־גְּדֹלָם** *from the least of them, &c.* Gen. 9. 24; 10. 21; 29. 16; 42. 13; 43. 29, Jud. 6. 15; 15. 2, 1 S. 9. 21, Mic. 7. 4, Jon. 3. 5, 2 Chr. 21. 17, Ps. 45. 13, Job 30. 6 (§ 32, R. 5). Absolute superlativeness is expressed by **מְאֹד** *very* (a noun in *acc.*), Jud. 3. 17 **בְּרִיא מְאֹד** *very fat*, Gen. 12. 14; 41. 31, which may be intensified by prep. **עַד**, 1 K. 1. 4 **יָפָה עַד־מְאֹד הַנַּעֲרָה** *the girl was extremely pretty*, 2 S. 2. 17, Gen. 27. 33; in later style **בְּמְאֹד מְאֹד** Ez. 9. 9; or **מ'** is repeated without prep., Nu. 14. 7.

Rem. 1. In *form* a few words correspond to the Ar. elative ('afḏalu), as **אֶכְרוֹ** *cruel*, **אֶכְזָב** *deceptive*, **אֵינוֹן** *perennial*. But in Ar. many adj. of this form have no compar. sense, 'ahmaru, *red*; 'ahmaqu, *foolish*.

Rem. 2. The adj. or verb with **מִן** may often be rendered by *too*, or *rather than*. Gen. 18. 14 **דִּבֶּר מִן־הַיָּפֶלֶא מִי** *is anything too hard for Je.?* (Deu. 17. 8, Jer. 32. 17, 27), Jud. 7. 2, **רַב מִתְּתִי** *too many for me to give*, 1 K. 8. 64 **קָטַן מִהֲכִיל** *too small*

to contain, Gen. 4. 13 גִּדּוֹל מִנִּישׂא *too great to bear*, Ps. 61. 3 the rock יָרִים מִמֶּנִּי *too high for me*, Is. 49. 6 *too light to be*, Ex. 18. 18, 1 K. 19. 7, Gen. 26. 16; 36. 7, Ru. 1. 12, Hab. 1. 13, Ps. 139. 12 *too dark for thee* (to see). So with מְעַט Isa. 7. 13 *is wearying men too little?* Nu. 16. 9.—Hos. 6. 6 knowledge of God *rather than burnt-offerings*; Ps. 52. 5 evil *rather than good*, Hab. 2. 16, 2 S. 19. 44, where perhaps *rd.* בְּנִיּוֹר for בְּרוּר, first-born *rather than thou* (Sep.).

Rem. 3. The word expressing the quality is occasionally omitted, Is. 10. 10 (greater or more) *than those of Jer.*, Job 11. 17 (clearer) *than noon*. In Mic. 7. 4; Is. 40. 17; 41. 24, Ps. 62. 10, מְהֵרָא the prep. is partitive or explicative, *of* (consisting of) vanity.

Rem. 4. The consn. with מִן is sometimes virtually a superlative, 1 S. 15. 33 תִּשְׁכַּל מִנְּשִׁים אֶמֶד *the most bereaved of women* (lit. bereaved above w.).—A superl. sense is expressed by joining a noun with its own *pl.* in the gen., Gen. 9. 25 a *slave of slaves* (lowest slave), Ex. 26. 33 *holy of holies* (most holy), Is. 34. 10 *eternity of eternities* (all eternity), Ecc. 1. 2 *vanity of vanities* (absolute vanity), Song 1. 1, Ez. 16. 7, Deu. 10. 17. 1 K. 8. 27, though such phrases had at first sometimes a lit. sense.

Rem. 5. Just as the simple adj. the abstract noun with gen. conveys superl. meaning, as טוֹב *the best*, Gen. 45. 18, Is. 1. 19, מִיטֵב *the best* 1 S. 15. 9, 15, מְבָהֵר *the choicest* Ex. 15. 4, Deu. 12. 11, ראשׁ, ראשִׁית *the chiefest*, Nu. 24. 20, Am. 6. 1, 6.

Rem. 6. A kind of superl. sense is given to a word by connecting it with the divine name. Probably the idea was that God *originated* the thing (as Ar.), or that it belonged to Him, and was therefore extraordinary. Sometimes the meaning appears to be "in God's estimation," Gen. 10. 9. Cf. Jon. 3. 3 עֵיר גְּדוֹלָה לְאַלְהִים (Acts 7. 20); Ps. 36. 7; 68. 16; 80. 11; 104. 16, Song 8. 6, 1 Chr. 12. 23.—1 S. 14. 15; 26. 12 (Gen. 30. 8 seems different).

## THE NUMERALS

§ 35. The numeral *one* is an adj., having the usual place and concord (§ 30). 1 S. 2. 34 בְּיוֹם אֶחָד *in one day*, 1 K. 18. 23 הַפָּר הָאֶחָד *the one ox*, Gen. 11. 6 שָׁפָה אֶחָת *one speech*, 32. 9 הַמַּחֲנֶה הָאֶחָת *the one camp*. 11. 1.

Rem. 1. In later style *one* sometimes precedes its noun, Neh. 4. 11, Dan. 8. 13, Nu. 31. 28, Song 4. 9.

Rem. 2. It is also construed nominally, followed (*a*) by gen., Gen. 22. 2 אֶחָד הַהָרִים *one of the mountains*, 2 S. 2. 1, Job 2. 10; (*b*) by prep. מִן, Gen. 3. 22 אֶחָד מִפִּנֵּי *one of us*, 2. 21. The short form usual in this case (Lev. 13. 2, Nu. 16. 15, 1 S. 9. 3, 1 K. 19. 2; 22. 13, 2 K. 6. 12; 9. 1, &c.; cf. otherwise 1 S. 16. 18; 26. 22, 2 S. 2. 21, &c.) might be cons. before prep. (§ 28, R. 1), but in some cases at least it must be a form of *abs.*, Gen. 48. 22, 2 S. 17. 22, Is. 27. 12, Zech. 11. 7. (*c*) It is itself governed in gen. by its noun (§ 32, R. 5), Lev. 24. 22, 2 K. 12. 10, Is. 36. 9. (*d*) With prep. מִן before it, it is a strong *any*; Lev. 4. 2 מֵאֵחָת מֵהֵנָּה *any of these things*, Lev. 5. 13, Deu. 15. 7, Ez. 18. 10 (text obscure). So in Ar. after a neg.

§ 36. The Numerals 2–10 are nouns, being followed by the thing enumerated either in Appos. (permutative, § 29), or in the gen. (explicative, § 24). Or, chiefly in later style, the thing may precede and the Num. follow in Appos. The thing enumerated is *plur.*

(*a*) With *indef.* nouns or expressions (cons. with *indef.* gen.) the Num. is mostly *abs.* and the noun in Appos. Gen. 29. 34 שְׁלֹשָׁה בָּנִים *three sons*. 24. 10 עֲשָׂרָה גְמָלִים *ten camels*. 1 K. 3. 16 שְׁתֵּי נָשִׁים *two women*. Deu. 19. 2 שְׁלוֹשׁ עָרִים *three cities*. 31. 10 שִׁבְעַת שָׁנִים *seven years*. There are exceptions, 2 K. 5. 22; and in the case of *two* the cons. is more common than *abs.* even before *indef.* noun. There are also two general exceptions—(1) With יָמִים *days* the cons. is usual; Jud. 19. 4 שְׁלֹשֶׁת יָמִים *three days*. Deu.

5. 13; 16. 4, 8, 13, but cf. 2 K. 2. 17. (2) So before *other* Num. 1 S. 25. 2 אֲלֵפִים שְׁלֹשָׁת *three thousand*. Jos. 8. 12 חֲמִישָׁת אלפים *five thousand*. 1 K. 5. 30 שְׁלֹש מאות *three hundred*, Jud. 4. 13.—Jos. 1. 11; 2. 16; 3. 2; 6. 3; 7. 3; 8. 12, Jud. 3. 29; 4. 6; 15. 11, 1 S. 26. 2. Cf. Rem. 1.

(b) With noun determined by Art. or def. gen. the Num. is mostly in *cons.* with gen. of noun. Deu. 10. 4 עֲשָׂרַת הַדְּבָרִים *the ten words*. Jos. 10. 16 חֲמִשָּׁת הַמְּלָכִים *the five kings*. Jud. 3. 3 חֲמִשָּׁת סִרְיֵי פְּלִשְׁתִּים *the five lords of the Ph.* 1 S. 16. 10 שִׁבְעַת בְּנָיו *his seven sons*. Gen. 40. 12, 18, Nu. 23. 4, Jud. 14. 12; 18. 7, 1 S. 17. 13 (20. 20?), 2 S. 21. 22; 23. 16, 1 K. 21. 13, 2 K. 25. 18. There are exceptions, cf. 1 S. 17. 14. Cases like Am. 1. 3, 6, 9, &c., are according to § 20, R. 2.

(c) The Num. may follow the noun in Appos.—mostly in later style. 1 Chr. 12. 39 יָמִים שְׁלוֹשָׁה *three days*. Dan. 1. 12. 1 Chr. 22. 14; 25. 5, 2 Chr. 3. 12; 4. 8, Neh. 2. 11, Dan. 1. 5, 15, Ezr. 8. 15, cf. Jos. 21 *pass.* Ex. in earlier books are comparatively rare, Gen. 32. 15, 16. In 1 S. 1. 24 רָד בְּפֶר מִשְׁלָשׁ.

Rem. 1. Additional ex. of *a.* Gen. 30. 20; 45. 23; 47. 2, Deu. 16. 9, 16; 17. 6, Jos. 6. 4, Jud. 9. 34; 16. 8, 1 S. 1. 8; 25. 5, 2 S. 21. 6, 1 K. 5. 28; 7. 4, 30; 10. 19; 17. 12; 18. 23; 21. 10, 2 K. 2. 24, Jer. 2. 13. There are exceptions, 1 K. 11. 16.

Rem. 2. The position of the Num. before the noun is almost exclusive in earlier writings, and is common at all times. This is true of all Num., whether units or higher numbers. The position after the noun occurs in Kings, is not unusual in P., and becomes very usual in Chr., Ezr., Neh., Dan., &c.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sven Herner, *Syntax der Zahlwörter im Alt. Test.*, Lund, 1893. This careful Treatise pays particular attention to the literary age of the various usages.



Rem. 3. The *gend.* is sometimes inexact. Gen. 7. 13 (due to mas. form of noun), cf. Ex. 26. 26; Job 1. 4, Ez. 7. 2, Zech. 3. 9, 1 Chr. 3. 20, Ez. 45. 3 Kth.—The noun is sometimes sing. after units in the case of words used collectively, 2 K. 8. 17; 22. 1 (year), 25. 17 (cubit), Ex. 21. 37 (צֶמֶן, בָּקָר), cf. Gen. 46. 27; and in cases where the thing weighed or measured is omitted (§ 37, R. 4). Gen. 24. 22, Jud. 17. 10, 1 S. 10. 4; 17. 17; 21. 4, Ex. 16. 22. In Ez. 45. 1 *rd.*, breadth *twenty* thousand.

Rem. 4. The Num. 2, 3, 4, 7 may take suffixes, as עֲנִינֵי *we two*, both of us, שְׁלֹשָׁהם *they three*, &c. Nu. 12. 4, 1 S. 25. 43, 2 S. 21. 9, Ez. 1. 8, Dan. 1. 17, cf. 2 K. 1. 10 *his* fifty.—The *order* is to be observed: Gen. 9. 19 אֵלֶּה אֵלֶּה *these three*, 1 K. 3. 18 אֲנַחְנֵנוּ שְׁתֵּי *we two*. Gen. 22. 23, Deu. 19. 9, 1 S. 20. 42. So *gen.* Ex. 21. 11, 2 S. 21. 22, Is. 47. 9.

Rem. 5. The language says *two three*, &c. (without *or*), as Engl. 2 K. 9. 32, Is. 17. 6, Am. 4. 8.

§ 37. Numerals above the units mostly have the noun in *plur.* (except collectives and words of *time*, *measure*, and *weight*). They stand in Appos., and mainly precede their noun—but may follow (chiefly in later style). When they follow, the noun is *plur.*, even though otherwise employed in sing.

(a) The Num. 11–19. Gen. 37. 9 אֶחָד עָשָׂר כּוֹכָבִים *eleven stars*. 2 S. 9. 10 עָשָׂר בָּנִים חַמֶּשֶׁה *fifteen sons*. Jos. 4. 8 שְׁתֵּי עָשָׂר אֲבָנִים *twelve stones*. Gen. 32. 23; 42. 13, Ex. 15. 27; 24. 4, Deu. 1. 23, Jud. 3. 14, 2 S. 2. 30; 9. 10; 19. 18, 1 K. 18. 31, 2 K. 14. 21. Ex. 27. 15, Nu. 17. 14; 29. 14, 15, Jos. 15. 41.

(b) The tens, 20–90. Jud. 12. 14 אַרְבָּעִים בָּנִים *forty sons*. Gen. 18. 24 חֲמִשִּׁים צְדִיקִים *fifty righteous*. Exceptional order, Gen. 32. 15, 16 עֶשְׂרִים אֲתָלַת *twenty she-asses*, &c. Gen. 18. 26, 28, Ex. 15. 27; 21. 32, Jud. 1. 7; 8. 30; 10. 4; 12. 14; 14. 11–13, 2 S. 3. 20; 9. 10, 2 K. 2. 16; 10. 1; 13. 7; 15, 20, Ez. 42. 2; 45. 12.

(c) Numbers composed of tens and units, *e.g.* 23, are treated as a single number *twenty-and-three*; and as they stand in Appos. the unit remains in the *Abs.* (cases like 2 K. 2. 24 are exceptional). The *gend.* of the unit is, of course, determined by the noun: Jud. 10. 2 עָשָׂרִים וְשָׁלֹשׁ שָׁנָה 23 years. The order *three-and-twenty* also occurs—chiefly in later style. It also belongs to later style to separate the elements of the Num., repeating the noun with each, as *twenty year and three years*, or the reverse order (mainly with the word *year*).

Jud. 7. 3 עָשָׂרִים וּשְׁנַיִם אֲלֶף 22 thousand (cf. Rem. 1).  
Nu. 7. 88 ע' וְאַרְבָּעָה פָּרִים 24 oxen. Nu. 35. 6, Jos. 19. 30; 21. 39, Jud. 10. 3; 20. 15, 35, 46, 2 K. 10. 14, Ez. 11. 1, 1 Chr. 2. 22; 12. 29.—Gen. 11. 24, Ex. 38. 24, Nu. 3. 39, 43; 26. 22; 31. 38, Jud. 20. 21.—Gen. 5. 15; 12. 4; 23. 1; 25. 7. Cf. Gen. 5 *pass.*, Gen. 11. 13–25. Lev. 12. 4, 5 (repet. of *days*), cf. Num. 31. 32 *seq.* (thousand).

(d) The usage is the same with מֵאָה *hundred*, מֵאֵתִים, מֵאוֹת (all in *abs.*; cons. מֵאֵת in later style); and אֲלֶף *thousand*, אֲלָפִים, אֲלָפִים (cons. אֲלָפִי occasional, Ex. 32. 28, Job 1. 3). 1 K. 18. 4 מֵאָה נְבִיאִים 100 prophets. Jud. 15. 4 שְׁלֹשׁ-מֵאוֹת שׁוּעָלִים 300 foxes. 1 K. 3. 4 אֲלֶף מֵאָה אֵילִים 1000 burnt-offerings. 2 K. 3. 4 אֲלָפִים אֵילִים 100,000 rams (Rem. 1). 2 K. 18. 23 אֲלָפִים סוּסִים 2000 horses. Ex. of *hundred*: Jud. 7. 22, 1 S. 17. 7; 18. 25; 25. 18; 30. 21, 2 S. 3. 14; 8. 4; 14. 26; 16. 1, 1 K. 7. 20; 10. 17; 11. 3, Jos. 7. 21. Ex. of *thousand*: 1 S. 13. 5; 17. 5, 1 K. 5. 6, Job 42. 12.

(e) While, however, the Num. 11 and upward are construed with plur., except with collectives and words of *time*, *weight*, and *measure*, there is a natural tendency in enumerations to regard the thing enumerated as forming a *class* or *genus*, and to use the sing.; cf. § 17. Ex. 24. 4, Jud. 21. 12, 2 S. 8. 4; 23. 8, 1 K. 5. 12; 9. 14, 2 K. 24. 14. Comp. 1 K.

10. 16 with 17, and 2 K. 2. 16 with 17; Ex. 26. 19 with 36. 24. The sing. is chiefly used with things which one is accustomed to count; the sing. *king*, 1 K. 20. 1, 16, is unusual. Rem. 1.

(f) When the expression is def. the Art. usually goes with the noun, and the Num. is def. of itself. Jud. 7. 7 שְׁלֹשׁ אַתְּ-אֶלֶף וּמֵאָה the 300 men (Rem. 1). 17. 3 הֶחָסֶדֶת הַחֶסֶד the 1100 (shekels) of silver. 1 S. 30. 21 מֵאֵתָּה הָאֲנָשִׁים the 200 men. Gen. 18. 28, Deu. 9. 25, Jos. 4. 20, Jud. 7. 22; 18. 17, 1 K. 7. 44, 2 Chr. 25. 9, Ex. 26. 19; 36. 24.

Rem. 1. Words used in sing. in the cases *a—d* are יום *days*, שָׁנָה *years*, אִישׁ *men* (esp. of troops), אֶלֶף *thousands*, אַמְפָּה *cubits* (often pl.), בֶּר, בַּת (measures), כֶּכֶר *talents* (also pl.), נֶרֶה, שָׁקֶל (oftenest pl.) &c.; and collect. as רִגְלֵי *infantry*, רֶכֶב *chariots*, נֶפֶשׁ *persons*, בָּקָר *cattle*, צֹאן *sheep*. Usage fluctuates; cf. § 17.—Adj. and words in Appos. may agree grammatically in sing. 1 S. 22. 18, 1 K. 20. 16, or *ad sensum* in pl. Jud. 18. 16, 1 K. 1. 5.

Rem. 2. In *eleven* the forms עֶשְׂרֵה עֶשֶׂר, עֶשְׂרִי עֶשֶׂר occur Deu. 1. 3, Jer. 1. 3; 39. 2, Ez. 26. 1, but chiefly belong to later style. In *twelve* the forms עֶשְׂרֵה שְׁתַּיִם עֶשֶׂר, שְׁנָיִם עֶשֶׂר are usual, the cons. שְׁנֵי &c., comparatively rare.

Rem. 3. The form *twenty-and-three* (in *c*) is the older order and the one usual at all times, *i.e.* the larger number first and the two joined by *and*. The same order is usual when there are higher numbers, thus: hundreds *and* tens *and* units; thousands *and* hundreds *and* tens, &c. It is characteristic of later style (occasionally in Kings) to put the smaller number first or omit the *and*. Cf. Ezr. 2 or Neh. 7 *pass.*, Nu. 4. 36, 1 K. 10. 14. The repet. 20 year *and* 3 years or reverse order is almost peculiar to P.<sup>1</sup>

Rem. 4. Words readily understood in expressions of weight, measure, or date are often omitted, as *shekel*, *ephah*, *day*, Gen. 24. 22 עֶשְׂרֵה זָהָב *ten (shekels) gold*, Ru. 3. 15 שֵׁשׁ שְׁעָרִים *six (ephahs) of barley*, Gen. 20. 16; 45. 22, 1 S. 10. 3, 4;

<sup>1</sup> According to Herner, § 12, only 1 K. 6. 1 outside of P.

17. 17, 1 K. 10. 16. On om. of *day*, § 38c. The consn. Ex. 26. 2 בָּאַפָּה אַרְבַּע four *by the cubit*, four cubits, is common in later style. Ez. 40. 5, Zech. 5. 2, 1 Chr. 11. 23.

Rem. 5. Numerals as independent nouns may take the Art. Gen. 18. 29 הָאַרְבָּעִים *the forty*. 2 K. 1. 13 הַחֲמִישִׁים *the third fifty*; v. 14 *the former* (pl.) *fifties*; with suff. v. 10. Gen. 14. 9, Nu. 3. 46, Deu. 19. 9, 2 S. 23. 18 seq. In most other cases the Num. is without Art., though there are exceptions. Jos. 4. 4 שְׁנֵים עָשָׂר אִישׁ *the twelve men*, Nu. 16. 35, Ex. 28. 10.

Rem. 6. After *eleven* and upwards the *sing.* noun, particularly of material or commodity, is probably in *acc.* of specification. § 71.

§ 38. The Ordinals.—(a) The ordinals *first—tenth* are adj. and used regularly (Gr. § 48. 2). Jud. 19. 5 בְּיוֹם הָרְבִיעִי *on the fourth day*. 2 K. 18. 9 בַּשָּׁנָה הָרְבִיעִית *the fourth year*. So always in stating the number of the *month* (cf. c), 1 Chr. 27. 2–13.

(b) From *eleventh* upwards the Card. numbers do duty for ordinals, and Art. is not generally used with the noun. Deu. 1. 3 בְּאַרְבָּעִים שָׁנָה *in the fortieth year*. 2 K. 25. 27 בְּשָׁנִים עָשָׂר חֹדֶשׁ *in the twelfth month*. Ex. 16. 1, Deu. 1. 2, 3, 2 K. 25. 27, Jer. 25. 3, 1 Chr. 24. 12–18; 25. 18–31.

(c) In stating dates there are some peculiarities. 1. The *gen.* “of the month” is circumscribed by prep., לַחֹדֶשׁ, and *day* is often omitted. Ex. 16. 1 בַּחֲמִישֶׁה עָשָׂר יוֹם לַחֹדֶשׁ *on the fifteenth day of the month*. 2 K. 25. 27 בְּעָשָׂרִים וְשֶׁבַע לַחֹדֶשׁ *on the 27th of the month*. Even the Card. 1–10 are greatly used in this case, mostly with om. of *day*. 2 K. 25. 8 בְּשֶׁבַע לַחֹדֶשׁ *on the seventh*. Deu. 1. 3 בְּאַחָד לַחֹדֶשׁ *on the first*. Gen. 8. 5, Lev. 23. 32, Ez. 1. 1, Zech. 7. 1, cf. 2 Chr. 29. 17, Ezr. 3. 6.

2. The word *year* is very often put in cons. before the whole phrase, Num. and year. 2 K. 8. 25 בְּשָׁנַת שְׁתַּיִם עָשָׂרָה *in the year of twelve years* (the twelfth year),

1 K. 16. 8, 15, 29, 2 K. 8. 25; 14. 23; 15. 13, 17, 23, 27; 25. 8. And with *year* understood: 1 K. 15. 25, 28 בְּשָׁנַת שְׁתַּיִם *the year of two years* (second year). 1 K. 16. 10; 22. 41, 2 K. 3. 1; 15. 30, 32; 18. 10; 24. 12, Zech. 7. 1, Ezr. 5. 13, Neh. 1. 1, Dan. 1. 21; 2. 1.

Rem. 1. The adj. אַחַד *one* is very often used for *first*, Gen. 2. 11 seq.; 4. 19, Ex. 1. 15, Nu. 11. 26, 2 S. 4. 2, Ru. 1. 4.

Rem. 2. The word *year* is also construed with gen. of the *def. Ordinal*. 2 K. 17. 6 בְּשָׁנַת הַחֲשֵׁעִית *in the year of the ninth year*. 2 K. 25. 1, Jer. 32. 1, Ezr. 7. 8, Neh. 2. 1; 5. 14.—In *c* the form בְּעָשׂוֹר לְאַחַד is used for *on the tenth of the m.* (spelling plenary except Ex. 12. 3).

Rem. 3. The Art. seems used with the Num. in cases where the whole expression is *def.*, as Lev. 25. 10, 11 *the fiftieth year* (of jubilee), Deu. 15. 9 *the seventh year* (of manumission), 1 K. 19. 19; but occasionally in other cases, Ex. 12. 18, Nu. 33, 38, 1 K. 6. 38, 1 Chr. 24. 16; 25. 19; 27. 15. Its place varies, 1 K. 19. 19 שָׁנִים הָעֲשָׂרִי with 1 Chr. 25. 19 הַשָּׁנִים עֶשְׂרִי.

Rem. 4. *Distributives*.—(a) These may be expressed by Card. with ל *to*: 1 K. 10. 22 לְשָׁלֹשׁ שָׁנִים *once to = every three years*. Ex. 16. 22, 1 K. 5. 2, Ez. 1. 6. (b) By repeating the Num. Gen. 7. 2, 3, 9, 15, Ex. 17. 12, 1 K. 18. 13, Ez. 40. 10. § 29, R. 8. Very often the whole phrase is repeated, Is. 6. 2 *six wings, six wings to each*, Jos. 3. 12, Nu. 13. 2; 34. 18, Ex. 36. 30.

Rem. 5. *Multiplicatives* are expressed variously.—Thus: *as much as* you, they, &c., by כָּכֶם, כָּהֶם, 2 S. 24. 3, Jer. 36. 32, Deu. 1. 11.—*double* by כַּשְׁנֵה, used in Appos. either before or after the noun, Gen. 43. 12 (after), 15 (before), Ex. 16. 5, 22. Also by שְׁנַיִם, Ex. 22. 3, 6, 8, *twofold*.—By the *du. fem.* of Num., as 2 S. 12. 6 אַרְבַּעַתַּיִם *fourfold*. Gen. 4. 15 שִׁבְעָתַיִם *sevenfold*. Is. 30. 26, Ps. 12. 7. Or by simple Card. Lev. 26. 21, 24, cf. Gen. 4. 24.—By יָדוֹת (hands), Gen. 43. 34 *fivefold*, Dan. 1. 20 *tenfold*. Comp. Gen. 26. 12 מֵאָה שְׁעָרִים *a hundredfold*.

*Times* is expressed by פָּעַם (beat). Gen. 2. 23 הַפְּעַם *this time*. Jos. 6. 3 אַחַת פ' *one time*. Neh. 13. 20 וּשְׁתַּיִם פ' *once or twice*. Gen. 27. 36; 43. 10 פַּעַמַּיִם *two times*. Ex. 23. 17 שְׁלֹשׁ פַּעַמַּיִם *three times*, &c. Gen. 33. 3, Nu. 14. 22, 2 K. 13. 19, Job 19. 3, Neh. 4. 6.—2 S. 24. 3 מֵאָה פַּעַמַּיִם *100 times*. Deu. 1. 11 אֶלֶף פַּעַמַּיִם *1000 times*, 1 K. 22. 16.—The word *time* may be omitted. 2 K. 6. 10 אַחַת שָׁנָה, *once, twice*. 1 K. 10. 22, Job 40. 5. Also בְּאַחַת בְּשָׁתַיִם 1 S. 18. 21, Job 33. 14, Nu. 10. 4. With similar omission, שְׁנִיָּה *a second time*, Gen. 41. 5, Is. 11. 11; שְׁלִישִׁיָּה *a third time*, 1 S. 3. 8, *a seventh time* 1 K. 18. 44.—Other words for *times* are רַגְלִים Ex. 23. 14, Nu. 22. 28, 32, 33; and מַנִּים Gen. 31. 7.

Rem. 6. *Fractions*.—Apart from חֲצִי *half*, 1 K. 16. 21, &c., fractions are formed: (a) by separate words, as רִבְעִי *a fourth*, Nu. 23. 10, 2 K. 6. 25; חֲמִשָּׁה *a fifth*, Gen. 47. 26. The analogy has not been followed in other cases (cf. Ar. *tholth* a third). The form רִבְעִי also, 1 S. 9. 8. For a *tenth* עֶשְׂרִית (pl. עֶשֶׂר), peculiar to P. The *tithe* is מַעֲשֵׂר. (b) By the *fem.* of Ordin. as שְׁלִישִׁית *a third*, 2 S. 18. 2, 2 K. 11. 5, Ez. 5. 2, 12; רִבְעִית *a fourth*, Nu. 15. 4, Neh. 9. 3. So the others, Gen. 47. 24, Lev. 5. 11, 16, 24, Ez. 4. 11; 45. 13. Above *tenth* the Card. must be used, Neh. 5. 11, *the one per cent*. The noun of measure, weight, &c., usually has the Art. after the fraction, Ex. 26. 16, Nu. 15. 4; 28. 14, 1 K. 7. 31, 32, 2 K. 6. 25, Ez. 45. 13; 46. 14.

Obs.—In prose composition these general rules may be safely followed. 1. Place all numerals *before* their noun. 2. The units take their noun in *pl.*; before an indef. noun they are in the abs., except *two*; before a def. noun in cons.; also in cons. before the word *days* and before other numerals. 3. The numbers 11–19 have fixed forms (Gr. § 48), but the *second* form of 11 and 12 may be neglected. 4. The numbers 11 and upwards take their noun in *pl.*, except collectives, and words of *time*, *weight*, and *measure*, though usage is not uniform, § 37, R. 1. 5. Compound numbers like 23 form one number *twenty-and-three* (in this order), the unit in abs., but its gender regulated by the noun. So in greater numbers the largest first, and each class joined by *and*, as 6000 *and* 300 *and* 50 *and* four. 6. The rules for Ordinals, § 38.

## SYNTAX OF THE VERB

### THE PERFECT

§ 39. The simple perf. is used to express an action completed either in reality or in the thought of the speaker.

The perf. is used to express completed actions where Eng. also uses past tenses.—(a) Like the Eng. past tense, to denote an action completed at a time indicated by the narrative, as Gen. 4. 26 **אָז הוּחַל** *then it was begun* (began men); or completed in the indefinite past, Job 1. 1 **אִישׁ הָיָה** *there was a man*. Gen. 3. 1; 15. 18; 22. 1; 29. 9; 31. 20. Even if the finished action may have extended over a period of time, unless it is desired to mark this specially, the simple perf. is employed; Gen. 14. 4, twelve years **עָבְדוּ** *they served*, 1 K. 14. 21, and often.

(b) Like the Eng. perf. with *have*, to denote an action finished in the past but continuing in its effects into pres.; Gen. 4. 6 **לָמָּה נָפְלוּ פָנֶיךָ** *why has (is) thy face fallen?* Is. 1. 4 **עָזְבוּ אֶת־יְיָ** *they have forsaken the Lord*. In this case the pres. must sometimes be used in Eng., Ps. 2. 1 **לָמָּה רָגְשׁוּ גּוֹיִם** *why do the nations rage?* Ps. 1. 1. Or to denote an action *just* finished, or finished within an understood period; Gen. 4. 10 **מָה עָשִׂיתָ** *what hast thou done?* 1 S. 12. 3 **אֶת־שׁוֹר מִי לָקַחְתִּי** *whose ox have I taken?* Gen. 3. 22; 12. 18; 22. 12; 26. 22; 46. 31, Ex. 5. 14, Nu. 22. 34, Jud. 10. 10; 11. 7, 1 S. 14. 29.

(c) Like the Eng. pluperf. to indicate that one of two actions was completed before the other. This use is most common in dependent (relative or conjunctive) clauses. Gen.

2. 8, he put there **אִשֶּׁר יָצַר** the man *whom he had made*; 6. 6 **וַיִּנָּחֵם י' בִּי עֲשֵׂה אֶתְהָאָדָם** repented *that he had made* man. Gen. 2. 5, 22; 3. 23; 18. 8, 33; 19. 27; 26. 15, 18; 28. 11, Nu. 22. 2, 1 S. 6. 19; 7. 14; 28. 20, 1 K. 5. 15; 11. 9. With modal force, Gen. 40. 15 *should have put*, 1 S. 17. 26 *should have defied*. After **הִנֵּה**, Gen. 19. 28 the smoke *was gone up*, Deu. 9. 16, Jud. 6. 28.

When the dependent clause is introduced by *and* the subj. usually precedes the verb; Gen. 20. 4 **וְאִב' לֹא קָרַב** and Abimelek *had not approached*. 31. 19, 34, Jud. 6. 21, 1 S. 9. 15; 25. 21; 28. 3, 2 S. 18. 18, 1 K. 1. 41, 2 K. 9. 16.

(d) In hypothetical sentences the perf. is employed both in protasis and apodosis where Lat. subj. would be used. Jud. 13. 23 **לֹא חָפֵץ לְהַמִּיתָנוּ לֹא לָקַח עֲלָהּ** *if he had wanted to kill us he would not have taken* a burnt-offering. Gen. 43. 10, Nu. 22. 33, Jud. 8. 19; 14. 18, Is. 1. 9. So in other supposed cases; Gen. 26. 10 one of the people **בְּמַעַט שָׁכַב** *might readily have lain*, 2 K. 13. 19. Also in Opt. sent. in ref. to past, Nu. 14. 2, and fut., Is. 48. 18; 63. 19. Cf. Cond. and Opt. Sent. §§ 130, 134.

Rem. 1. Though it may be doubtful whether the shades of meaning expressed by our tenses were present to the eastern mind, it is of great consequence to observe them in translation. The direct sent. 1 K. 21. 14 **סָקַל נְבוֹת וַיָּמָת** N. *has been stoned and is dead*, when made dependent by **כִּי** v. 15, must be rendered, *that N. had been stoned and was dead*. In Is. 53. 5, 6 the perf. must be translated in three ways: all we *were* (had) *gone astray*; the Lord *caused to fall* on him; by his stripes *we have been healed*. Job 1. 21, the Lord gave . . . *hath taken*. In Ps. 30. perf. has all its various uses: v. 4 *hast brought up*; v. 7 *I said*; v. 8 *hadst made to stand* . . . *didst hide*; v. 12 *hast turned* (or possibly *didst turn*). Ezr. 1. 7. So inchoative perf., Ps. 97. 1 **מֶלֶךְ י'** *is become king*; 2 K. 15. 1 *became king*, and often.



§ 40. The perf. expresses actions regarded as completed, where Eng. rather uses the present.—(a) In the case of stative verbs, *i.e.* verbs expressing mainly a mental or physical condition, as *to know, remember, refuse, trust, rejoice, hate, love, desire, be just, &c.*; *to be, be high, great, small, deep, clean, full, be old, many, &c.* Eng. by its pres. expresses the condition, Heb. rather the act which has resulted in it. Gen. 27. 2 **וְנִתְּנִי לֹא יָדַעְתִּי יוֹם מוֹתִי** *I am old, I know not, &c.*; Jud. 14. 16 **וְלֹא שָׂנֵאתֵנִי וְלֹא אֲהַבְתֵּנִי** *thou only hatest me, and lovest me not*; Gen. 42. 31 **לֹא הָייְנוּ מְרַגְלִים** *we are not spies*. Stative verbs, however, often occur in such a way that their perf. must be rendered by a past tense; Gen. 28. 16 *I knew*, 34. 19 *he delighted*, 37. 3 *loved*, Jud. 8. 34 *remembered*. The connexion shows to what time the completed act belongs.

(b) In a class of actions which are completed just in the act of giving them expression. This usage appears chiefly with verbs denoting to speak, as verbs of swearing, declaring, advising, and the like, or their equivalents in gesture. Deu. 26. 3 **כִּי יִעֲצָתִי הַיּוֹם הַזֶּה** *I profess this day*; 2 S. 17. 11 **כִּי יִעֲצָתִי** *I advise*; 2 S. 19. 8 **בַּיהוָה נִשְׁבַּעְתִּי** *I swear by the Lord*. Gen. 22. 16, Nu. 14. 20, Deu. 4. 26; 26. 17; 30. 15, 18, 19, 1 S. 17. 10, 2 S. 16. 4 *I worship*, 19. 30, 1 K. 2. 42 *I hear* (obey), 2 K. 9. 3 *I anoint*, Jer. 22. 5; 42. 19, Ez. 36. 7, Ps. 129. 8; 130. 1, Pr. 17. 5. Song 2. 7 *I adjure*. So the frequent **אָמַר** *saith* Je., or **כֹּה אָ' י'** *thus saith*. In some cases impf. **יֹאמַר** is used, hardly as a frequent. but as a present. This occurs in the midst of a speech, Is. 1. 11, 18; 33. 10; 40. 1, 25; 41. 21, Ps. 12. 6. Both forms Is. 66. 9.

(c) In a class of actions which, being of frequent occurrence, have been proved by experience (perf. of experience). Jer. 8. 7 the turtle and swallow **שָׁמְרוּ אֶת-עֵת בֹּאָנָה** *observe the time of their coming*; Job 7. 9 **כָּלָה עָנָן וַיֵּלֶךְ** *the cloud*

*dissolves* and vanishes. Is. 40. 7, 8, Am. 5. 8, Ps. 84. 4 *findeth*, *layeth*, Pr. 1. 7 *despise*, 14. 19 *bow*; 22. 12, 13.

Rem. 1. Exx. of stative verbs. זָכַר *remember*, Nu. 11. 5, Jer. 2. 2; סָאָן *refuse*, Ex. 7. 14, Nu. 22. 13, Deu. 25. 7; בָּטַח *trust*, 2 K. 18. 19, 20; שָׂמַח *rejoice*, 1 S. 2. 1, Is. 9. 2; חָפֵץ *to wish*, Deu. 25. 8, Is. 1. 11; צָדֵק *be just*, Gen. 38. 26, Ps. 19. 10; גָּבַהּ *be high*, Is. 3. 16; 55. 9; גָּדוֹל *be great*, Gen. 19. 13; קָטָן *be small*, Gen. 32. 11; עָמֵק *be deep*, Ps. 92. 6; טָהוֹר *be clean*, Pr. 20. 9; מָלֵא *be full*, Is. 2. 6, Mic. 3. 8; אָבַל *to mourn*, Is. 33. 9, Joel. 1. 9; אָמַח *be willing*, Deu. 25. 7; מָאָס *loathe*, Am. 5. 21, Job 7. 16; שָׂבַע *be sated*, Is. 1. 11; רַבָּב *be many*, Ps. 3. 2 (רַבָּה = become many); קָוָה *hope*, Ps. 130. 5, &c.

§ 41. The perf. is used to express actions which a lively imagination conceives as completed, but for which the fut. is more usual in Eng.—(a) The perf. of certainty. Actions depending on a resolution of the will of the speaker (or of others whose mind is known), or which appear inevitable from circumstances, or which are confidently expected, are conceived and described as having taken place. This use is common in promises, threats, bargaining, and the like. Is. 42. 1 הֵן עֲבָדִי נְתַתִּי רוּחִי עָלָיו behold my servant, *I will put* my spirit upon him; Is. 6. 5 אֵוִילִי כִּרְנָמִיתִּי woe is me *for I am undone*; Ru. 4. 3 חֲלֹקֶת הַשָּׂדֶה מְכַרָּה נַעֲמִי Naomi *is selling* the field-portion. Gen. 15. 18; 17. 20; 30. 13, Nu. 17. 27, 28, Jud. 15. 3, 1 S. 2. 16; 14. 10; 15. 2, 2 S. 24. 23, 1 K. 3. 13, 2 K. 5. 20, Is. 30. 19, Jer. 4. 13; 31. 5, 6, Ps. 6. 9, 10; 20. 7; 36. 13; 37. 38. In these last exx. and many others the tense may be called the perf. of *confidence*.

(b) It often happens, esp. in the higher style, that in the midst of descriptions of the fut. the imagination suddenly conceives the act as accomplished, and interjects a perf. amidst a number of imperfs. Job 5. 20, 23 *hath redeemed*

(4. 10); Hos. 5. 5 Judah *is fallen*. This usage receives an extension among the prophets, whose imagination so vividly projects before them the event or scene which they predict that it appears realised. Is. 5. 13 גָּלָה עַמִּי מִבְּלִידֵּעַת my people *is gone into captivity*; 9. 5 כִּי יֵלֵךְ יֶלֶד־לָנוּ for *a child has been born to us*; 9. 1 הִהְלֵכִים בַּחֹשֶׁךְ רָאוּ אֹר גָּדוֹל they who walked in darkness *have seen great light*. Is. 5. 14; 9. 2 seq., 10. 28; 11. 8, 9; 28. 2, Hos. 4. 6; 10. 7, 15, Jer. 4. 29, Am. 5. 2. The prophetic perf. is sometimes scarcely to be distinguished from perf. of confidence, Ps. 22. 22, 30.

(c) The perf. is used in the sense of the *future perf.* to indicate that an action though fut. is finished in relation to another fut. action. Gen. 24. 19 עַד אִם-כִּלּוּ לְשָׁתוֹת *until they (shall) have done drinking*; 2 S. 5. 24 לְפָנֶיהָ י' כִּי אֲזָנָה *for then Je. will have gone forth*. Gen. 28. 15; 43. 9; 48. 6, 1 S. 1. 28, 2 K. 7. 3; 20. 9, Is. 4. 4; 6. 11; 16. 12, Jer. 8. 3, Mic. 5. 2, Ru. 2. 21.

Rem. 1. The prophetic perf. may be distinguished from the ordinary perf. by the fact that it is not maintained consistently, but interchanges with *imps.* or *vav conv. perfs.*, the prophet abandoning his ideal position and returning to the actual, and so falling into the ordinary *fut.* tenses, *e.g.* Is. 5. 14-17. The prophetic passage may begin with *perf.*, Is. 5. 13, which is frequently introduced by כִּי *for*, לָכֵן *therefore*, or other particles, Is. 3. 8; 9. 5; or it may begin with *vav impf.*, Is. 2. 9. When further clauses with *and* are added, if the ideal position be sustained, the natural secution, *vav impf.*, may be used, Is. 9. 5, Ps. 22. 30, or simple *perf.* if verb be disconnected with *and*, Is. 5. 16. But frequently the ideal position is deserted and the ordinary *fut.* tenses, the *impf.* or *vav perf.*, are employed, Is. 5. 14, cf. v. 17, Ps. 85, 11, 12. Cf. Is. 13. 9, 10; 14. 24; 35. 2, 6; 46. 13; 47. 9; 52. 15; 60. 4.

Rem. 2. It seems but a variety of (c) when the perf. is used in questions expressing any lively feeling, as astonishment, indignation, incredulity, or the like. The speaker

imagines the act done, and expresses it in a tone conveying his feeling regarding it. Gen. 18. 12 *shall I have* (had) *pleasure!* 21. 7 *who would have said?* Ex. 10. 3; 16. 28, Jud. 9. 9 *shall I have abandoned!* Nu. 23. 10, 23, 1 S. 26. 9, 2 K. 20. 9, Jer. 30. 21, Ez. 18. 19, Hab. 2. 18, Ps. 10. 13; 11. 3; 39. 8; 80. 5, Job 12. 9. Cf. interchange of perf. and impf. Hab. 1. 2, 3, Ps. 60. 11.

Rem. 3. Owing to the want of participles expressing past time, the perf. has to be used in attributive or circumstantial clauses referring to past. Gen. 44. 4 *לֹא הָרְחִיקוּ* *not having gone far*; 44. 12 *הָחֵל* *beginning* at the eldest; 48. 14 *guiding* his hands, Gen. 21. 14; Nu. 30. 12 *without checking*, Deu. 21. 1, Jud. 6. 19; 20. 31, 1 S. 30. 2, 1 K. 13. 18, Job 11. 16 waters *passed away*; Is. 3. 9 *without concealment*. And so to express an action prior to the main action spoken of, Ps. 11. 2. Very compressed is the language, Jud. 9. 48 *מָה רָאִיתֶם עָשִׂיתִי* *what ye have seen me do*. If *me* had been expressed the consn. would have been an ordinary Ar. one. Lam. 1. 10, Neh. 13. 23; cf. impf. 2 S. 21. 4, Is. 3. 15.

Rem. 4. Another verb following on perf. is usually appended with *vav impf.*, but in animated speech asyndetous perfs. are often accumulated. Deu. 32. 15, Jud. 5. 27, Is. 18. 5; 25. 12; 30. 33, Lam. 2. 16.

Rem. 5. In some instances perf. appears to express a wish (precative perf.). Job 21. 16 the counsel *הָחֵק* *be far!* 22. 18. Lam. 1. 21 *הַבֵּאתִי* *bring thou*, where structure of verse requires ref. to fut; 3. 56 seq., where *v.* 55 continues 54; Ps. 18. 47. Is. 43. 9 *נִקְבְּצוּ* may be form of imper., and Ps. 7. 7 *צִוִּיתָ* a circumst. clause. It would be strange if Heb. altogether wanted this usage, which is common to all the Shem. languages in some shape. Wright, ii. 3, Dillm. p. 406 foot, Noeldeke, p. 181, Del. Assy. Gr. § 93. The position of the verb is freer in Heb., as is usual in comparison of Ar. The usage may be allied to perf. of confidence (Ps. 10. 16; 22. 22; 31. 6; 57. 7; 116. 16), the strong wish causing the act to be conceived as accomplished.

## THE SIMPLE IMPERFECT

§ 42. The simple impf. expresses an action incomplete or unfinished. Such an action may be conceived as nascent, or entering on execution (pres.), progressing, or moving on towards execution (impf.), or as ready, or about to enter upon execution (fut.). Connected with the last use is the use of impf. to express a great variety of actions which are *dependent* on something preceding, whether it be the will or desire of the speaker (juss., opt.), or his judgment or permission (potential), or on some other action, or on particles expressing *purpose* and the like (subjunctive).

The uses of the impf. are very various, and some of them rarer in prose writing; those usual in ordinary prose may be mentioned first.

§ 43. (a) The impf. expresses a *future* action, whether from the point of the speaker's present, or from any other point assumed. 1 S. 24. 21 יָדַעְתִּי כִּי מֶלֶךְ תִּהְיֶה I know that thou shalt be king; 2 K. 3. 27 וַיִּקַּח אֶת־בְּנוֹ אֲשֶׁר יָמְלֹךְ he took his son who was to be king; Gen. 2. 17; 3. 4; 6. 7; 37. 8; 43. 25 *were to eat*, 1 K. 7. 7, 2 K. 13. 14 *was to die*.

(b) The impf. is employed to express actions which are contingent or depending on something preceding. The shades of sense of impf. in this use of it are manifold, corresponding to Eng. *will* (of volition), *shall* (of command), *may* and *can* (of possibility or permission), *am to*, in the present; and to *would*, *should*, *might*, *could*, *was to*, in the past or indirect speech. Particularly (1) in interrogative sentences; (2) in dependent clauses with כִּי *that* and the like; and (3) after particles like אֵיךְ *how*! אֵיךְ *perhaps*, &c., and conditional particles like אִם *if*. Gen. 3. 2 מִפְּרִי עֵץ־הַגֶּן *we may eat*; 3. 3 לֹא תֹאכְלוּ מִפִּנּוֹ *ye shall not eat of it*; Gen. 43. 7 הֲיָדוּעַ יָדַע כִּי יֹאמַר *were we then to know that he would say?* 27. 45 לָמָּה אֲשַׁכֵּל אֶשְׁנֶיכֶם *why should I*

*be bereaved of you both?* 44. 8 וַאֲיֵךְ נִגְנַב *and how should we steal!* 2. 19 לִרְאוֹת מַדּוּיִקְרָא לוֹ *to see what he would call it;* Jud. 9. 28 מִי־שֶׁכֶם כִּי נַעֲבֹדְנֻהוּ *who is Shechem that we should serve him?* Job 9. 29 אֲנִכִּי אֲרִשֶׁע *I am (have) to be guilty!* Gen. 44. 34; 47. 15, Ex. 3. 11, Deu. 7. 17, Jud. 8. 6; 17. 8, 9 *wherever he might find,* 1 S. 18. 18; 20. 2, 5 *should sit,* 23. 13, 2 S. 2. 22; 3. 33 *should* Abner (*was A. to*) *die!* 6. 9, 2 K. 8. 13, Ps. 8. 5, Job 7. 17. With אֲוִלִּי Gen. 16. 2; 24. 5, Nu. 23. 27, 1 S. 6. 5, 1 K. 18. 5, 2 K. 19. 4, Am. 5. 15. With אִם *if,* Gen. 18. 26, 28, 30; 30. 31, Jud. 4. 8, Am. 6. 9. See Cond. Sent.—With Job 9. 29 cf. 10. 15; 12. 4, 1 S. 14. 43; 28. 1.

(c) In particular impf. follows *final* (telic) conjunctions, as לְמַעַן *in order that,* אֲשֶׁר *that,* לְבִלְתִּי *that not,* פֶּן *lest.* Ex. 4. 5 יֵאֱמִינוּ לְמַעַן *that they may believe;* Deu. 4. 40 אֲשֶׁר לֹא יֵיטֵב לָהּ *that it may be well with thee* (cf. next clause); Gen. 3. 3 פֶּן־תָּמּוּתוּ בּוֹ *ye shall not touch it lest ye die.* Ex. 20. 20, 2 S. 14. 14. See Final Sent.

Rem. 1. The expression מִי יָדָע *who knows?* differs little from *perhaps*, and is followed by impf., 2 S. 12. 22, Jo. 2. 14, Jon. 3. 9. In Est. 4. 14 אִם is supplied before the verb.

§ 44. Frequentative impf.—The impf. expresses actions of general occurrence, such actions being independent of time. That which is nascent or ready to occur passes easily over into that which is of frequent or indefinite occurrence. This use of impf. is common in proverbial sayings, in comparisons, in the expression of social and other customs, and particularly of actions which, having a certain moral character, are viewed as universal, but also of actions which are or were customary in given circumstances without being necessary.

(a) Of actions for which Eng. uses the present. Gen.

10. 9 על-כן יאמר קנמרד therefore *it is said*, as Nimrod ;  
 6. 21 מכל-מאכל אשר יאכל take of all food *which is eaten*  
 (edible); Pr. 10. 1 בן חכם ישמח אב a wise son *makes a*  
*father glad*. Particularly with כן *so*, כאשר *as*, and similar  
 words. 1 S. 24. 14 משל הקדמני מרשעים יצא *as says* the proverb, Out of the evil *cometh forth evil*;  
 Jud. 7. 5 באשר ילק הכלב *as a dog laps*; Gen. 29. 26  
 לא יעשה כן במקמינו *it is not so done* in our country. Some-  
 times this *is not* has the nuance of *ought not*. Gen. 20. 9  
 לא יעשו מעשים אשר לא יעשו deeds which *ought not to be done*,  
 cf. 34. 7, 2 S. 13. 12.—Gen. 50. 3, Ex. 33. 11, Deu. 1. 31, 44 ;  
 2. 11, 20; 28. 29, Jud. 11. 40; 14. 10, 1 S. 5. 5; 19. 24, 2 S.  
 5. 8; 13. 18; 19. 4, Am. 3. 7, 12, Hos. 2. 1 (cannot be counted).  
 Of a universal truth, Ex. 23. 8, Deu. 16. 19 a gift *blinds*, 1 S.  
 16. 7, 2 S. 11. 25 the sword *devours*, 1 K. 8. 46 no one *who*  
*sinneth not*, Ps. 1. 3–6. Of a characteristic or habit, Gen.  
 44. 5, Ex. 4. 14 *speaks* (can speak), Deu. 10. 17, 1 S. 23. 22,  
 2 S. 19. 36, 2 K. 9. 20 *drives* furiously, Is. 13. 17, 18 (the  
 Medes), 28. 27, 28, Ps. 1. 2, Job 9. 11–13. But also of an  
 event repeated or general within a limited area. 1 S. 9. 6  
 כל אשר ידבר בא יבא whatever *he speaks comes true*; 1 K.  
 22. 8 לא יתנבא עלי טוב *he never prophesies* good about  
 me. Ex. 13. 15; 18. 15, 2 K. 6. 12, Hos. 4. 8, 13; 7. 1–3,  
 14–16; 13. 2 *kiss* calves, Am. 2. 7, 8, Is. 1. 23; 14. 8, Mic.  
 3. 11.

(b) Of actions customary or general in the past. Gen. 2. 6  
 ומעיל קמן ואד יעלה and a mist *used to go up*. 1 S. 2. 19 ומעיל קמן  
 ותעשה לו אמו and a little robe his mother *used to make for*  
*him*. 2 Chr. 9. 21 once every three years תבואנה תרשיש  
 תרשיש *came* the ships of Tarsh. This impf. may *distribute*  
 an action over its details or particulars; Gen. 2. 19 וכל אשר  
 יקרא לו האדם *whatever he called it*. Particularly under the  
 influence of a negative; 1 S. 13. 19 וקראש לא ימצא a smith

*was not to be found*; Gen. 2. 25 **לֹא יִתְבַּשְׁשׁוּ** *they were not* (at any time) *ashamed*; 1 S. 1. 13 **לֹא שָׁפְתֶיהָ נָעוּת וְקוֹלָהּ לֹא יִשְׁמָע** *her lips moved, but her voice was not heard*. Ex. 21. 36, 1 K. 8. 8, 27 (cf. 22. 8 in *a*); 18. 10, 2 K. 23. 9 (contrast neg. impf. and pos. perf.), Jer. 13. 7. Cf. Rem. 1.,

Rem. 1. Other exx. Gen. 6. 4; 29. 2; 31. 39, Ex. 8. 20, Nu. 11. 5, 9, Deu. 2. 11, 20, Jud. 5. 8; 6. 4, 5; 17. 6, 1 S. 1. 7; 13. 18; 14. 47 (*rd.* perhaps **יָשַׁע**); 18. 5; 23. 13; 25. 28, 2 S. 1. 22 *never returned*; 2. 28 *did not engage in the pursuit*; 12. 3, 31; 17. 17; 20. 18; 23. 10, 1 K. 5. 25, 28; 6. 8; 10. 5; 17. 6; 18. 10; 21. 6, 2 K. 3. 25; 4. 8; 13. 20, Jer. 36. 18, Ps. 106. 43, Job 1. 5, 1 Chr. 20. 3.

Rem. 2. This impf. is used, *e.g.*, 1. in describing a boundary line and naming its *successive* points, Jos. 16. 8, interchanging with *vav perf.*, 15. 3 and often. 2. In describing the course of an ornamentation, 1 K. 7. 15, 23 *ran round*, 2 Chr. 4. 2. 3. In stating the amount of metal that went to *each* of a class of articles, 1 K. 10. 16, 2 Chr. 9. 15; and so of the number of victims offered in a great sacrifice, 1 K. 3. 4, cf. 10. 5. 4. In describing the quantity which a vessel, &c., contained, 1 K. 7. 26. So the details of collecting and disbursing moneys, 2 K. 12. 12–17.—In 2 K. 8. 29 (9. 15) the preceding *plur.* “wounds” perhaps distributes the verb *wounded* (*perf.* 2 Chr. 22. 6), just as *the rest* does Joab’s action, 1 Chr. 11. 8, and *all the cities* David’s, 1 Chr. 20. 3, and *all the land* the effect of the flies, Ex. 8. 20, cf. Deu. 11. 24. So 2 S. 23. 10 of the people returning in parties or successively (*v.* 9 their dispersion). Jer. 52. 7, Ezr. 9. 4.

Rem. 3. Allied to § 44*a* above is the use of impf. to form attributive or adjectival clauses, descriptive of the subj. or obj. of a previous sentence. The restricted sphere of the ptcp. enlarges this usage. Gen. 49. 27 **בֶּן יִמְרֵךְ** *Benj. is a ravening wolf*; Is. 40. 20 **עֵץ לֹא יִיבֶקֶט** *a tree that doth not rot*; Hos. 4. 14 **עַם לֹא יִדְבִּיר** *an undiscerning people*; Is. 51. 2 **אִישׁ שֶׁיָּמָוֶת** *S. your mother (who bears you)*; *v.* 12 **אִישׁ שֶׁיָּמָוֶת** *man that dies (mortal man)*. 55. 13, Ps. 78. 6, Job 8. 12, cf. Ex. 12. 34,



Nu. 11. 33, Zeph. 3. 17. Is. 30. 14 *unsparingly*, Ps. 26. 1 *without wavering*. Particularly in comparisons. Job 9. 26 כְּנֶשֶׁר יִטָּשׁ as *an eagle swooping*; 7. 2 as a servant *that longeth*. Deu. 32. 11, Hos. 11. 10, Is. 62. 1, Jer. 23. 29.

§ 45. To express single unfinished or enduring actions in the *pres.* or *past* the ptcp. is usually employed in prose, with a different shade of meaning. The impf., however, is often used after certain particles, as אָז *then*, מָרָם *not yet*, בְּמָרָם *before*. Ex. 15. 1 וַיִּשָּׂר מֹשֶׁה אָז *then sang* Moses; Gen. 19. 4 וַיִּשְׁכְּבוּ מָרָם *they were not yet lain down* when, &c. 27. 33 וְאֶכֶל בְּמָרָם תָּבוֹא and I ate *before thou camest*. Deu. 4. 41, Jos. 8. 30; 10. 12; 22. 1, 1 K. 3. 16; 9. 11; 11. 7; 16. 21, 2 K. 12. 18; 15. 16.—Gen. 2. 5; 24. 45, 1 S. 3. 3.—Jud. 14. 18, 1 S. 2. 15, 2 K. 6. 32, Jer. 1. 5. So sometimes after עַד, Jos. 10. 13, Ps. 73. 17. See Temporal Sent.

Rem. 1. The use of impf. with interrog. is peculiar. The interrogation not only brings the action into the present, but seems to give such force to the verb that the *finite* tense may be used. Gen. 32. 30 why תִּשְׁאַל *dost thou ask?* 37. 15 אֲנִי מִבְּקֶשׁ מַה־תִּבְקֶשׁ *what dost thou seek?* comp. the answer אֲנִי מִבְּקֶשׁ. So question and answer Gen. 16. 8. 2 K. 20. 14 מֵאֵן יָבֹאוּ *whence came they?* with the answer בָּאוּ *they came*. Gen. 44. 7, Ex. 2. 13; 3. 3, Jud. 17. 9; 19. 17, 1 S. 1. 8; 17. 8; 28. 16, 2 S. 1. 3, 1 K. 21. 7, Job 1. 7; 2. 2; 15. 7, Is. 45. 9, 10. In some cases the questions may be freq., Is. 40. 27. Perhaps also with other strong particles, like הִנֵּה 1 S. 21. 15, Gen. 37. 7? And necessarily when ptcp. is resolved into a *neg.* clause, Jud. 20. 16, Lev. 11. 47.

Rem. 2. Such particles as *then* create a space or period with which the action is contemporaneous, into which the speaker throws himself, cf. 2 K. 8. 22 where *then* = *at that* (general) *time*. In poetry the usage is extended, and appears with such words as *day, time*. Job 3. 3 perish בּוֹ אֶגֶּד *the day on which I was (am) born!* 6. 17, Deu. 32. 35. In other cases it may be doubtful whether contemporaneousness or immediate subsequence be expressed: Job 3. 11 *why died*

(die) I not *from the womb*, came I not out of the belly *and expired*? cf. v. 13. The pointing וָאָנֹכִי would have been good prose (Jer. 20. 17), and so would *perf.* in first clause (Jer. 20. 18), but the one tense protects the other. Cf. the reverse order of events, Nu. 12. 12.

In elevated style this usage of *impf.* is common. The speaker does not bring the past into his own present, he transports himself back into the past, with the events in which he is thus face to face. Ex. 15. 5 the depths יִכְסִּימוּ *covered* (cover) *them*; Deu. 32. 10 יִמְצֵאֵהוּ *found* (findeth) *him*; Ps. 80. 9 a vine from Eg. תִּפְרֵץ *thou bringest, thou drivest out* the nations; Job 4. 15. 16 a breath תִּסְפָּר *passes, my hair stands up; it stops, &c.* So an instantaneous effect is graphically expressed. Ex. 15. 12 thou didst stretch thy hand תִּבְלַעְמוּ אֶרֶץ the earth *swallows them*, v. 14 the nations heard יִרְגְּזוּן *they are terrified*. Is. 41. 5, Hab. 3. 10, Ps. 46. 7; 77. 17; 69. 33; 78. 20. The Eng. pres. best renders this *impf.*, our historical pres. being a similar usage. Nu. 23. 7 Balak יִבְחֵנִי *bringeth me*. Ps. 18. 7; 104. 6-8, Hitz. (Ps. 18. 4) so explains 1 K. 21. 6 כִּי יִדְבֹּר *כי* is recitativum. If reading right, Jud. 2. 1 אֶעֱלֶה must rather express progressive bringing up. So perhaps 2 S. 15. 37 יָבוֹא *proceeded*. In 1 K. 7. 8 יַעֲשֶׂה is wanting in Sep.

Rem. 3. In the prophetic and higher style the *impf.* is often used of single actions where prose would express itself differently. There is also frequent interchange of *perf.* and *impf.*, e.g. Is. 5. 12; 9. 17; 10. 28; 13. 10; 14. 24; 18. 5; 19. 6, 7; 42. 25; 43. 17; 49. 13, 17; 51. 6; 60. 4, Hos. 7. 1; 12. 11, Ps. 26. 4, 5; 52. 9; 93. 3. In early writing these changes have meaning, but in later poetry, especially in the historical psalms and Job, the significance is not always apparent, and the changes look part of an unconscious traditional style. Some scholars, however, diminish the difficulty by the assumption that the *impf.* often stands for *var impf.* See § 51, R. 5.

Rem. 4. The *impf.* is frequently used for *imper.*, even in the 2nd pers. Deu. 7. 5; 13. 5, Am. 7. 12, Hab. 3. 2, Ps. 17. 8; 64. 2; 71. 2, 20, 21; 140. 2.

THE CONVERSIVE TENSES. PERF. AND IMPF. WITH  
STRONG VAV

§ 46. The conversive tenses seem the result of two things: first, the feeling of the *connexion* of two actions, and that the second belongs to the sphere of the first, a connexion expressed by *vav*; and, second, that effort of the lively imagination already noticed under the simple tense-forms (§ 41 *b*, § 45, R. 2, 3), by which an impf. is interjected among perfs., and conversely, a perf. among impfs. These lively transportations of the imagination, which appear only occasionally in the case of the simple tenses, have in this instance given rise to two distinct fixed tense-expressions, the *vav conv. impf.* and the *vav conv. perf.* In usage the former has become the historical or narrative tense, and the latter the usual expression for the fut. or freq. when connected with preceding context by *and*. The actual *genesis* of these two tense-forms belongs, however, to a period lying behind the present state of the language. They are now virtually *simple* forms, having the meaning of the preceding tenses, impf. or perf., and it is doubtful if it is legitimate to analyse them, and treat *vav impf.* for ex. as *and* with an impf. in any of the senses which it might have if standing alone.—It is the shortened forms of impf. that are usually employed with *vav*, when these exist; but this is by no means universal.

IMPERFECT WITH STRONG VAV. VAV CONV. IMPF.

§ 47. *Vav conv. impf.* follows a simple perf. in any of the senses of the perf. In usage, however, it has become a tense-form in these meanings of the perf. in narrative style, though no perf. immediately precedes. If the connexion of *vav* and impf. be broken through anything such as a neg. or other word coming between, the discourse returns to the

simple *perf.* Gen. 1. 5 וַיִּקְרָא לְאָדָם... וַיִּלְחֹשֶׁף קַרְנָא Gen. 4. 4, 5 וַיִּשָּׂע י' אֶל-הָבֶל וְאֶל קַיִן לֹא שָׂעָה and Je. *had respect to Abel, but to Cain he had not respect.*

As to the kind of connexion between the preceding and *vav impf.* the latter may express either what is strictly consequential, or what is merely successive in time, or what is only successive in the mind of the speaker. In the last case the event or fact expressed by *vav impf.* may really be identical with the preceding event, and a repetition of it, or synchronous with it, or even anterior to it; the speaker expresses them in the order in which they occur to him, so that the *and* is merely connective, though the form retains its converse meaning. Gen. 40. 23 וַיִּשְׁכַּחְהוּ... לֹא זָכַר he *remembered not Joseph, and forgot him*; Jud. 16. 10 אַם הִגֵּד תִּגְדִּירוּ לִי thou *hast cheated me, and told me lies.* With *vav perf.*, Jud. 14. 12 אַם הִגֵּד תִּגְדִּירוּ לִי if ye *will tell it me, and find it out.* After עָשָׂה to do, *vav impf.* is often merely explanatory, 1 K. 18. 13. אֵת אֲשֶׁר עָשִׂיתִי וְאֲחַבֵּא what *I did and hid, &c.* Gen. 31. 26, Ex. 1. 18; 19. 4, Jud. 9. 16, 1 K. 2. 5, 2 Chr. 2. 2, cf. Neh. 13. 17. 2 S. 14. 5 I am a widow וַיָּמָת אִישִׁי and *my husband is dead.* Jud. 2. 21 וַיָּמָת יְהוֹשֻׁעַ אֲשֶׁר עָזַב יְהוָה which *Joshua left and died.* So *vav impf.* often merely sums up the result of a preceding narrative, Jud. 3. 30 וַתִּכְנַע מוֹאָב so *Moab was subdued*; 8. 28.

§ 48. (a) *Vav impf.* continues a *perf.* in sense of Eng. past; and it is usual in this sense in narrative, although no *perf.* actually precedes. Gen. 3. 13 הַנָּחָשׁ הִשָּׂאֲנִי וָאָכַל the serpent *deceived me, and I ate.* 4. 1; 7. 19, 1 S. 15. 24. With neg., Gen. 4. 5 unto Cain לֹא שָׂעָה וַיִּחַר לְקַיִן מְאֹד he *had not respect, and C. was very angry.* Gen. 8. 9, Jer. 20. 17, Job 3. 10; 32. 3 did not find an answer *and condemn* (so as to condemn). With interrog., Gen. 12. 19.—When

*vav* is separated from verb, Gen. 31. 33 וְלֹא מָצָא . . . וַיָּבֹא 41. 21, Jud. 6. 10.

(b) It continues perf. in sense of Eng. perf. with *have*. Gen. 3. 17 וַיִּשְׁמָעַתָּה לְקוֹל אֲשֶׁר־הָאָכַל וַתֹּאכַל *hast hearkened and eaten*. 16. 5 וַיִּזְקַלְךָ וְאֵלֵךְ *and I am despised*; 32. 31. With interr., Deu. 4. 33 וַיִּהְיֶה קוֹל א' הַשָּׁמַיִם עִם קוֹל א' וַיִּהְיֶה *has a people heard the voice of God and lived?* With neg. 1 S. 15. 19 וְלֹא־מָצָא *why hast thou not obeyed, but hast flown* upon the spoil? 1 S. 19. 17, Job 9. 4.—Jos. 4. 9 he set up 12 stones וַיִּהְיוּ שָׁם *and they are there* to this day. Is. 50. 7, Jer. 8. 6. Gen. 32. 5, 1 S. 19. 5.

(c) In the sense of plup. Gen. 39. 13 כִּי עָזַב בְּגָדוֹ וַיֵּגָס *had left his garment and fled*; 31. 34 וַיִּחַל לְקַחָהּ . . . וַתִּשְׁמָם *had taken the Teraphim, and put them in the camel's saddle, and sitten down upon them*. Gen. 27. 1; 26. 18, Ex. 15. 19, Nu. 21. 26, Jos. 10. 1, Jud. 4. 11, 1 S. 30. 1, 2, 2 S. 18. 18, 1 K. 2. 41. Is. 39. 1 כִּי חָלָה וַיִּחְזַק *heard that he had been sick, and was better*.

(d) After hypothetical or conditional perf. 1 S. 25. 34 לִי־לִי מְהֵרָה וַתֵּבֵא *(so rd.) unless thou hadst made haste and come*; Ex. 20. 25 כִּי חִרְבָּה הִנֵּפֶתָ עָלֶיהָ וַתִּתְחַלְלָהּ *hast thou lifted up thy iron upon it, thou hast polluted it*. Pr. 11. 2 בָּא זְדוֹן וַיָּבֹא קָלוֹן *has pride come, shame has come* (when pride comes then, &c.), cf. 18. 3.—Nu. 5. 27, Ps. 139. 11, Pr. 18. 22, Job 9. 16; 23. 13. In Opt. Sent. Jos. 7. 7, Is. 48. 18.

Rem. 1. The contrast in such passages as Gen. 32. 31 וַיִּרְאֵהוּ א' וַתִּבְּצֵל נַפְשִׁי I have seen God *and* (yet) *my life is pre-served* hardly lies in the *vav*, but is suggested by the two events. 2 S. 3. 8. Neither is it probable that the *vav* expresses an *inference*; Job 2. 3 וַתִּסְתַּחֲוֶינִי is not, *and so* (so that) *thou settest me on*. The ref. is rather to Satan's insinuation, ch. 1. 9 seq.

Rem. 2. It is questionable whether *vav impf.* has the

sense of plup. except in continuance of a perf. of that meaning. When *and* introduces something *anterior* to the general narrative, it is usually disconnected with the verb, which is then preceded by its subj. (§ 39 c). There are a few peculiar cases, Ex. 32. 29, 1 S. 14. 24, 1 K. 13. 12, Is. 39. 1, Jer. 39. 11, Zech. 7. 2, Neh. 2. 9. There is nothing to show that Ex. 32. 29 is anterior, it seems parallel to *v.* 26, 27. In 1 S. 14. 24 Sep. has a different text in which וַיֵּאָל stands quite regularly. In 1 K. 13. 12 the sense requires hiph. וַיֵּרְאוּ *and they showed*. Possibly Is. 39. 1 should *rd.* as 2 K. 20. 12 שָׁמַע כִּי, though the mere fact of a different reading is not conclusive. See Driver's exhaustive note p. 84.

§ 49 (a) Vav impf. continues a perf. of experience, expressing a common truth. Is. 40. 24 וַיִּבָּשׂוּ בָהֶם נְשָׁף בָּרָק he blows upon them, *and they wither*; Job 7. 9 כָּלָה עָנָן וַיֵּלֶךְ the cloud wastes away *and vanishes*. Nah. 3. 16, Job 14. 2; 24. 2, 11. So in continuance of a ptc. with this meaning. Am. 5. 8 וַיִּשְׁפְּכוּ הַיָּם לְמִי הַקּוֹרָא who calleth the waters of the sea, *and poureth them*; 9. 5.—Gen. 49. 17, 1 S. 2. 6, Jer. 10. 13, Am. 6. 3, Mic. 7. 3, Nah. 1. 4, Ps. 34. 8, cf. *v.* 21, Job 12. 18, 22–25, Pr. 21. 22.

(b) In continuance of prophetic perf. Is. 9. 5 בֶּן נִתַּן לָנוּ בֶּן וְיִקְרָא a son has been given us, *and the government is laid upon his shoulder, and they have called*. Ps. 22. 30 אָכְלוּ וַיִּשְׁתַּחֲוּ all the fat of the earth *have eaten and worshipped*. In such cases the *fut.* is almost necessary in Engl. owing to our different way of thinking. Is. 5. 25; 24. 18; 48. 20, 21, Mic. 2. 13, Jer. 8. 16, Ps. 20. 9. After perf. of confidence, Ps. 109. 28. With no preceding perf., but stating the issue of actions just described, Is. 2. 9 וַיִּשְׁחַל אִישׁ וַיִּשְׁפַּל אִישׁ therefore men *are brought down, and man humbled* (punishment, not practice as A.V.), cf. 5. 15; 44. 12, 13. Job 5. 15, 16; 36. 7. Or confident expectation, Ps. 64. 8–10 וַיִּרֶם הָיָה *hath shot at them, &c.* 94. 22, 23; 37. 40.



prefers to use co-ordinate clauses, prefixing *וַיְהִי* and *it was*. Gen. 4. 3 *וַיְהִי מִקֵּץ יָמִים וַיָּבֵא חַוָּה* and *it was* in course of time *that* (and) *Cain brought*; 4. 8 *וַיְהִי בְהִיּוֹתָם בַּשָּׂדֶה* and *it was* when they were in the field *that C. rose up*. This construction is the usual one in prose narrative. See for variety of usage Gen. 12. 11, 14; 19. 34; 21. 22; 22. 20; 24. 52; 26. 8; 27. 1; 29. 13; 41. 8, Jud. 1. 14; 11. 4, 1 S. 10. 11; 11. 11 end, 2 S. 2. 23.

Rem. 1. Such a sentence as *and when they saw her they praised her* may be made in various ways. 1. . . . *וַיְהִי כִּרְאֹתָם וַיְהַלְלוּ*. 2. . . . *כִּרְאֹתָם וַיְהַלְלוּ*. 3. . . . *וַיְהַלְלוּ וַיִּרְאוּ*. The first is usual; the second with inf. back in the clause is classical, *e.g.* Gen. 32. 26; 34. 7 (35. 9); the third not unusual with *see*, *hear*, and *finish* *בָּלָה* (24. 19; 30. 1; 37. 21, Ex. 34. 33, 2 S. 11. 27), but also in other cases. Other forms are rarer, *e.g.* Gen. 27. 34 *וַיְהַלְלוּ כִּרְאֹתָם* without *and* (cf. 2 S. 15. 10); or mainly late, as *וַיְהַלְלוּ וְכִרְאֹתָם* or *הֵלְלוּ וְכִרְאֹתָם* with *and* at the beginning.

The secution to *וַיְהִי* is not always vav impf., though this is usual. These forms appear 1. *וַיְהִי . . . וַיָּבֵא ק'*. 2. *וַיְהִי . . . וַיְהַלְלוּ ק'*. 3. *וַיְהִי . . . וַיָּבֵא ק'*. 4. *וַיְהִי . . . וַיְהַלְלוּ ק'*. Exx. of 2, Gen. 40. 1, Ex. 16. 27, Deu. 9. 11, Jos. 10. 27, 1 S. 18. 30, 1 K. 11. 4; 14. 25; 15. 29; 17. 17. Of 3, Gen. 7. 10; 15. 12; 22. 1, Ex. 12. 29, 1 S. 18. 1, 2 S. 3. 6, 2 K. 2. 9. In 4 *הֵנָּה* is usually followed by ptcp. or nominal sent.

Rem. 2. Ex. of vav impf. after stative verb, Is. 3. 16, *are haughty and walk*; Ps. 16. 9. The impf. after *וָאֵל*, &c. referring to the past (§ 45) is also continued by vav impf. Jos. 8. 30, 31; 10. 12; 22. 1, 1 K. 3. 16; 11. 7 perf., 2 K. 12. 18. On the other hand, the secution of fut. perf. (§ 41 c) is usually vav perf. or simple impf., Jud. 9. 9, 1 S. 26. 9, Is. 4. 4; 55. 10, 11, Gen. 26. 10; 43. 9. So very often the proph. perf. (§ 41 b) and perf. of confidence is continued by vav perf., the ideal position not being maintained. Gen. 9. 13; 17. 20, Nu. 24. 17, Deu. 15. 6, 2 K. 5. 20, Is. 2. 11; 43. 14.

Rem. 3. In the brief language of poetry vav impf. some-



times expresses a dependence which is usually expressed by *כי*. Is. 51. 12, 13 *וְיִירָא' וְיִירָא' מִיְּמֶיךָ* who art thou *that thou fearest?* Ps. 144. 3 with 8. 5. Cf. Is. 49. 7.

Rem. 4. Vav impf. express the *ingress* or entrance upon realisation of the second action in connection with the first. But the second is confined to the sphere of the first, and has not independent duration, as an unconnected impf. might have. Thus *וַיֹּאמֶר יְהוָה* *he said, and it was*, is all bounded by one circle, so that *and it was* becomes in usage the expression of a finished fact, taking on the quality of the preceding perf. Hence vav impf. comes to stand independently in the sense of the perf. It may be interjected like the perf. amidst other forms (§ 41 *b*), Ps. 55. 18, 19, Hab. 1. 10, or stand unconnected with immediately preceding forms, Ps. 8. 6 *and thou didst let him want*, adding merely another fact; cf. 2 S. 19. 2, where *mourns* is a larger idea than “weeps” which it embraces (unless “mourns” were understood of successive fits of lamentation). The fact expressed by vav. impf. may be completed really or only ideally. Jer. 38. 9 *and he is dead* (must die) of hunger; Job 10. 8 *and thou hast swallowed me up*; 10. 22 *and it has shone* (its light is) as darkness. Cf. the instructive pass. Nu. 12. 12.

In such poetical passages as Job 4. 5; 6. 21; 14. 10, where vav impf. appears to follow a present, it is not the vav impf. but the preceding verbs that are peculiar. The vigorous poetical style expresses the completed acts *touch, see, die*, by the impf. (pres.), cf. 14. 10 *b*.—It is not always easy to perceive the significance of the changes in secution; cf. Am. 9. 5 with Ps. 104. 32, Hos. 8. 13, Mic. 6. 16, Ps. 42. 6 with *v.* 12, Job 7. 17, 18; 9. 20, Ps. 52. 9.

Rem. 5. The use of the impf., particularly in poetry, can hardly be accounted for by supposing that it expresses in every case some meaning distinctively belonging to the simple impf. This difficulty has induced some scholars to assume that the vav conv. forms may be broken up and still retain the conversive sense. Hitz. proceeds on these principles: 1. vav and the verb may be separated, so that *וַיִּקְרָא . . . יְהוָה* = *וַיִּקְרָא* vav perf.; and *וַיִּקְרָא . . . יְהוָה* =

וַיִּקְטֹּל, and so וַיִּקְטֹּל . . . ? = וַיִּקְטֹּל. Job. 5. 11; 28. 25, Is. 29. 16, Ps. 22. 22; 27. 10; 44. 10, Job 3. 25<sup>b</sup>; 4. 11, Jer. 44. 22.<sup>1</sup> 2. The simple impf. forms without vav may be equivalent to the convers. forms where the latter might have stood, viz. at the *head* of the clause, so that וַיִּקְטֹּל, וַיִּקְטֹּל = וַיִּקְטֹּל and וַיִּקְטֹּל = וַיִּקְטֹּל, Ps. 8. 7; 18. 12; 44. 11; 81. 8; 138. 3; 139. 13, Hos. 6. 1. 3. The simple impf. forms (without vav in the clause) may be equivalent to the convers. forms in the middle of a clause, just because there the vav conv. forms could not stand, the vav necessarily falling away! Ps. 32. 5; 60. 12; 114. 3. Cf. Hitzig on Ps. 32. 5; 30. 9; 39. 4; 116. 3, Jer. 15. 6; 44. 22.

The exx. cited by Ew. indicate that he proceeds virtually on the same principles. 1. Ps. 69. 22 impf. disjoined from vav (in secution to vav impf.). 2. Ps. 78. 15 no vav but impf. at head of the clause where vav conv. impf. might have stood. So v. 26, 49, 50. 3. Ps. 81. 7 no vav in the clause and impf. (after perf.) not at the head. So Ps. 106. 18; 107. 6, 13. Driver admits of two cases: 1. Separation of vav by tmesis, but only with strictly *modified* form (וַיִּקְטֹּל &c.). And 2. strictly modified form at head of clause without vav. If the principle be admitted at all, however, it will be necessary to go further, because the strictly modified forms are so few, and even they are not always employed.

In regard to 1, 3 of Hitz. above, it is certain that the presence or absence of a preceding vav has no effect on the usage of impf. in the middle of a clause.

It is not unnatural that in rapid and vigorous speech the vav might drop off when the verb stands at the head of a clause, particularly among other vav impf. forms, as Ps. 78. 15, 26. Comp. Ps. 106. 17 with Nu. 16. 32; 26. 10; Hos. 6. 1, Pr. 7. 7. Cf. Ps. 18. 12, 14, 16, 38, 39, 44, with the same verses in 2 S. 22.

Rem. 6. In some cases vav impf. is pointed as simple vav, e.g. Is. 10. 13 וַאֲסִיר, וַאֲוִיר, 43. 28 וַאֲחַלֵּל, 48. 3; 51. 2;

<sup>1</sup> Hitz. extends the principle to prose, e.g. Deu. 2. 12, Jos. 15. 63, 2 S. 2. 28 (on Job 20. 19).

57. 17; 63. 3-5, Zech. 8. 10, Ps. 104. 32; 107. 26-29. In most of these cases the peculiarity belongs to the *first* pers. In some of them the vav has evidently conversive force, *e.g.* Is. 43. 28; 51. 2; in others, *e.g.* Is. 10. 13, it may be doubtful whether the impf. be not a graphic pres. or freq. There seems no doubt that according to the Massor. tradition the strong vav received in some instances a lighter pronunciation. On similar light vav with Juss. cf. § 65, R. 6.

Rem. 7. Strong vav is also used with Cohort. This form had no doubt originally a wider sense as an intensive. In some cases a certain force or liveliness may still appear in coh. with vav. conv., *e.g.* Gen. 41. 11 וַיִּחַלְמָהּ *and why! we dreamed*, 32. 6, Ps. 3. 6; but often any additional emphasis is not to be detected, the form being partly rhythmical, 2 S. 22. 24, or probably, since coh. and juss. make up a single tense-form, partly used as the natural parallel to the juss. forms of vav impf. The use of strong vav with coh. is sporadic. It is rare in the prophets, and most common in the personal narratives in Ezr., Neh., and Dan.

#### PERFECT WITH STRONG VAV. VAV CONV. PERF.

§ 52. *Vav perf.* follows a simple impf. in any of its uses, and has the same use. It has, however, in practice become a tense-form, used in the sense of impf., particularly as fut. and freq., although no impf. precedes. When a neg. or other word must come between the *vav* and perf., the discourse returns to the simple impf. Is. 11. 6 וְיָבֵשׁ עִם-כֶּבֶשׂ *and the wolf shall dwell with the lamb*, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; Hos. 2. 9 וּבִקְשָׁתָם לֹא תִקְצָא *and she shall seek them, and shall not find them*. Gen. 12. 12, 1 S. 1. 11.

§ 53. (a) *Vav perf.* continues impf. in the sense of *fut.*, and its use in this sense is general, although no impf. immediately precedes. 1 K. 22. 22 אֵצֶא וְהָיִיתִי רוּחַ שָׁקֶר *I will go out and be a lying spirit*; Jud. 6. 16 אֶהְיֶה עִמָּךְ

וְהָיִיתָ *I will be with thee, and thou shalt smite* Midian. With interrog. Ex. 2. 7 וְקָרָאתִי וְהָאֵלֶּה shall I go *and call*? Jud. 15. 18, Ru. 1. 11, 1 S. 23. 2. With neg. Jer. 22. 10 וְרָאָה לֹא יָשׁוּב עוֹד he shall no more return, *and see* his native land. Gen. 18. 18; 24. 7, 38, 40; 40. 13, 19; 46. 33; 50. 25.

(b) It continues the impf. when it is contingent or dependent on something foregoing, and in general in the senses mentioned § 43 *b*. *E.g.* of volition, 1 S. 17. 32 עֲבָדָה וְנִלְחָם גִּלְדִּי thy servant *will go and fight*. Of command, Ex. 20. 24 וְנִבְחַתָּ לִי וְנִעֲשֶׂה-לִּי אֹדָמָה אֶדְמָה an altar of earth shalt thou make me, *and sacrifice* upon it; *v.* 9.—Gen. 37. 26 what gain כִּי נִהַרְג אֶת-אָחִינוּ וְכִסִּינוּ אֶת-דָּמּוֹ that we should kill our brother, *and cover* his blood? 1 S. 29. 8.—Gen. 27. 12 וְיִמָּשְׁנִי וְהָיִיתִי כְמִתְעַתֵּעַ perhaps he *may feel me, and I shall be* as one that mocks him. 2 K. 19. 4, Nu. 22. 11, 2 S. 16. 12.—2 K. 14. 10 וְלָמָּה תִתְגַּבֵּר בְּרָעָה תִתְגַּבֵּר why shouldst thou provoke misfortune *and fall*? Jer. 40. 15.—Gen. 39. 9 וְהָטָאתִי . . . אֵיךְ אֶעֱשֶׂה how should I do this great evil *and sin*! 2 S. 12. 18 how shall we tell him, *and he will take on* (how if . . . he will, &c.).—Jud. 1. 12 וְנָתַתִּי לוֹ . . . וְיִכָּה קִס וְיִלְכְּדָה whoever smites Kirjath Sepher, *and takes it*, I will give, &c. Gen. 44. 9. After עַד Gen. 29. 8, Jud. 16. 2, 1 S. 1. 22, 2 S. 10. 5, Hos. 5. 15. After בְּטָרָם Ex. 1. 19, 1 S. 2. 15 in a *freq.* sense. See Cond. Sent.

(c) It continues an impf. following telic particles. Gen. 32. 12 וְהָבִינִי פָרִיבָא lest he come *and smite me*. Is. 28. 13 וְנִשְׁבְּרוּ וְנִפְּלוּ that they may go, *and fall and be broken*, &c. With לֹא that not Deu. 19. 10; 23. 15.—Gen. 3. 22; 19. 19, Ex. 1. 10, Deu. 4. 16, 19; 6. 15, 1 S. 9. 5, Is. 6. 10, Hos. 2. 5, Am. 5. 6.—Gen. 12. 13, Nu. 15. 40, Deu. 4. 1; 6. 18.

Rem. 1. It is rarer that impf. with simple *vav* is used instead of *vav perf.* after the particles in *b, c*, as Ps. 2. 12 וְתִאָּחַז וְתִאָּחַז lest he be angry and ye perish. In most of the cases the verbs are parallel (just as in very many other cases they are asyndetous), e.g. Is. 40. 27 (לִפְנֵי); Ex. 23. 12, Is. 41. 20 (לִמְעַן). And *vav* with impf. *perhaps* has often almost the force of a wish, and *vav* with impf. expresses purpose. Jer. 20. 10 (cohor.), Nu. 22. 6, 1 K. 18. 5.

§ 54. *Vav perf.* continues an impf. expressing what is customary or general (freq. impf.) in pres. or past. (a) Ex. 1. 19 וְהָיוּ הַמִּיָּלָדוֹת בְּמִצְרַיִם תְּבוּאָה before the midwife comes they are delivered; Hos. 7. 7 כָּלֵם יִהְיוּ בְּתִנּוּר וְאָכְלוּ they all get heated like an oven, and devour their judges; Is. 36. 6 וְאִשׁ עָלְיוֹ וְבָא בְּכַפּוֹ on which one leans, and it goes into his hand; Am. 5. 19 כְּאִשֶּׁר יִנּוֹם כְּאִשֶּׁר יִנּוֹם as a man flees from a lion, and a bear meets him. Ex. 18. 16, Deu. 5. 21; 11. 10, Is. 29. 8, 11, 12, Jer. 17. 5-8; 20. 9, Ez. 29. 7, Mic. 2. 1, 2, Pr. 4. 16; 16. 29; 18. 10, 17.

(b) Very commonly in the past. Gen. 2. 6 וַיֵּלֶךְ הָאֵשׁ וַיִּשָּׂא הָאֵשׁ ... a mist used to go up, and water; 2. 10 וַיִּפְרָד וַיִּפְרָד from there it separated itself, and became four heads; 1 S. 2. 19, 20, and a little robe וַיִּשְׂמֵהָ לּוֹ his mother used to make for him, and bring it up to him every year. Gen. 6. 4; 29. 2, 3; 31. 8; 38. 9, Ex. 17. 11, Nu. 21. 8, 9, 1 K. 18. 10. This use of *vav perf.* is very common in graphic descriptions of past events that were customary or habitual, and in giving the details of a scene. Gen. 29. 2, 3 (watering of the flocks), Ex. 33. 7-11 (procedure with the Tabernacle), Jud. 2. 18, 19 (what happened when a Judge was raised up), Jud. 6. 2-6 (details of a Midianite raid), 1 S. 1. 4-7 (Elkanah's case with his two wives), 1 S. 2. 13-16 (practice of the priests), 1 S. 17. 34-36 (David's

experiences with wild beasts), Am. 4. 7, 8 (a drought), 1 K. 5. 6-8 (Solomon's menage).

Rem. 1. (1) The story is generally introduced by *והיה* and it used to be, followed by *אם* or *כי* with perf. (simple perf. Nu. 11. 8), sometimes without *והיה* (Jud. 2. 18); or by freq. impf. Ex. 33. 7. (2) Details are often introduced or a new start made in the narrative by *והיה*. (3) When vav is disjoined from the verb the simple freq. impf. is employed. (4) The writer does not always consistently continue vav perf. or freq. impf., but falls into simple narrative with vav impf., &c., 1 S. 2. 16, Jud. 6. 4; 12. 5, 6. The passage 1 S. 17. 34 seq. is freq., *וַיָּקָם* having the force of a vigorous supposition (when he rose up).

The use of vav perf. as freq. is exceedingly free; it may occur in any connexion, introducing an additional trait or an entirely new fact. Is. 6. 3 *וַיִּקְרָא זֶה אֶל־זֶה* and one cried (continuously) to the other; 2 S. 12. 16 *וַיָּבֹא וְלָן וַיִּשְׁכַּב* and he went in and lay all night (the child died on 7th day). 1 S. 7. 16 *וַיֵּלֶךְ* and he used to go yearly (following a historical narrative); 1 K. 9. 25 *וַיִּזְעֶלֶת ש'* and Sol. offered thrice a year (a new point). 1 S. 16. 23; 27. 9, 1 K. 4. 7, 2 K. 3. 4, cf. Gen. 37. 3.

§ 55. Vav perf. continues verbal forms belonging to the sphere of impf., or equivalent to it in meaning, as (a) imper., coh., juss.; (b) infin.; (c) ptcp.

(a) 1 S. 8. 22 *וְהִמְלִכְתָּ בְקוֹלָם שָׁמַע* listen to their voice, and appoint a king; 1 K. 2. 31 *וַיִּקְבְּרוּ וַיִּבְרְתוּ* fall upon him, and bury him. Gen. 6. 14; 19. 2; 45. 19, Ex. 18. 19-22, 1 S. 12. 24; 15. 3, 18, 2 S. 19. 34, 1 K. 2. 36; 17. 13, Jer. 25. 15. So after inf. abs. as general imper. (§ 88 b), Deu. 1. 16; 31. 26, Jer. 32. 14. Cohort., Gen. 31. 44 *נִקְרְתָה בְרִית לֵעֵד וְהָיָה לָעֵד* let us make a cov. and it shall be a witness; Ru. 2. 7. After juss., Ex. 5. 7 *יֵלְכוּ וַיִּקְשְׁוּ תָבוֹן* let them go themselves, and gather straw. 1 K. 1. 2; 22. 13. Gen. 1. 14; 28. 3.

(b) Infin.—In ref. to fut., 2 K. 18. 32 *עֲדֹבְאִי וְלִקְחֹתִי*

till I come *and take* you; Jud. 8. 7 **בְּתַת י' אֶת־זֶבַח בְּיָדִי** when Je. gives Zebah into my hand *I will thrash*, &c. Gen. 27. 45, Ex. 1. 16; 7. 5, Jud. 6. 18, 1 S. 10. 2, 8, 1 K. 2. 42, 2 K. 10. 2, 3. So inf. abs. for finite verb, Is. 5. 5; 31. 5. After inf. in *freq.* sense, Am. 1. 11 **עַל־רַדְפוֹ אַחִיו וְשָׁחַת** *and stifled his compassions*; Jer. 7. 9, 10 **הִגְנֵב רָצַח וְבָאֵתָם** *do ye steal, murder, commit adultery . . . and then come and stand* before me! 23. 14.

(c) Ptcp.—In ref. to fut., Ex. 7. 17 . . . **הִנֵּה אֲנִכִּי מִכָּה** behold *I will smite* the waters, *and they shall be turned* into blood. So *v.* 27, 28; 8. 17; 17. 6, Deu. 4. 22, Jos. 1. 13, 1 S. 14. 8, 1 K. 2. 2; 13. 2, 3; 20. 36, Jer. 21. 9; 25. 9. In a contingent or *freq.* sense, Ex. 21. 12 **מִכָּה אִישׁ וְמָוֶת** any one who smites a man *so that he dies*; 2 S. 14. 10 **כֹּל־אִישׁ זֹבֵחַ זֶבַח** whoever speaks to thee *bring him to me* (it is scarcely necessary to read **וְהֵבֵאתוֹ**, cf. Jer. 2. 27, Song 5. 9, Jos. 2. 17, 20). 1 S. 2. 13, 14 **כֹּל־אִישׁ זֹבֵחַ זֶבַח** whenever any one sacrificed the priest's man *would come . . . v.* 14. Nu. 21. 8, 2 S. 17. 17, Mic. 3. 5.

§ 56. Vav perf. may follow anything which supplies the ground or condition of a new development. Hence it forms the apodosis to temporal, causal, and conditional sentences or their equivalents, *casus pendens*, &c. Gen. 3. 5 **בְּיוֹם עֲיִינֶיכֶם וְנִפְתְּחוּ** on the day ye eat *your eyes shall be opened*. Obad. 8. Hos. 1. 4 **עוֹד קָעַמְתִּי וְפָקַדְתִּי** yet a little, *and I will visit*; and often with **עוֹד**, Ex. 17. 4, Is. 10. 25; 21. 16; 29. 17, cf. 16. 14; 18. 5, 1 S. 2. 31, 1 K. 13. 31.—Is. 6. 7 **זֶה נִגַּע עָלַי וְעוֹנֵתִי וְסָר עֲוֹנִי** this has touched thy lips, *and thine iniquity shall depart*. Ps. 25. 11 **לְמַעַן שְׁמָךְ י' וְסִלְחָתָהּ** for thy name's sake *pardon*. Is. 3. 16, 17; 37. 29, Nu. 14. 24, Jud. 11. 8, 1 K. 20. 28, 2 K. 19. 28.—*Casus pendens*, Is. 9. 4 **וְהָיְתָה . . . כָּל־קֶאֱמֹן סֵאן** for every boot of him that trampeth in the fray . . . *shall be* for burning; 10. 26

וּמָאֲהוּ עַל־הַיָּם וְנִשְׁאוּ and his rod upon the sea; *he shall lift it up*. Nu. 14. 31, 1 S. 25, 27, 2 S. 14. 10. After הִנֵּה. Nu. 14. 40 הִנֵּנוּ וְעָלִינוּ; Jer. 23. 39 הִנְנִי וְנִשְׁתִּיתִי (so *rd.* = וְנִשְׁתִּיתִי). Ez. 34. 11. Cf. Gen. 47. 23. In all the above uses of vav the apod. has a certain emphasis.

And, of course, vav perf. continues another vav perf. Gen. 3. 22 וְחַי ... וְאָכַל ... וְלָקַח ... וְיִשְׁלַח. Deu. 11. 18-20.

§ 57. When there is an adverbial clause the phrase וְהָיָה *and it shall be*, or, *was* (freq.), is often prefixed, particularly when the actions are *fut.* or *frequentative*. Ex. 22. 26 וְהָיָה כִּי־רָצַעַק אֵלַי וְשָׁמַעְתִּי *and when he shall cry unto me, I will hear*; Nu. 21. 9 וְחַי ... וְהָיָה אִם־נִשְׁשַׁךְ אֶת־אִישׁ וְהִבִּיט ... וְחַי *and it was if a serpent had bitten a man, he looked ... and lived*; Jud. 6. 3 וְהָיָה אִם־זָרַע יִשְׂרָאֵל וְעָלָה מִדְּיָן *and it was when Israel had sown, Midian used to come up*. Gen. 24. 14; 27. 40, 44. 31, Ex. 1. 10; 4. 8, 9; 17. 11; Deu. 17. 18, Jud. 4. 20, 1 S. 3. 9; 16. 16, 1 K. 1. 21; 11. 38.—Gen. 30. 41; 38. 9, Jud. 19. 30, 1 S. 16. 23, 2 S. 14. 26; 15. 5. If *and* be disjoined from verb the impf. must be used, Gen. 12. 12; 30. 42. But frequently impf. without *and* is employed, Gen. 4. 14, Ex. 33. 7-9, 1 S. 2. 36; 17. 25, 2 S. 15. 35, 1 K. 2. 37; 19. 17, 2 K. 4. 10, Is. 2. 2; 10. 27; 14. 3, 4.

Rem. 1. In § 56 the time designations are sometimes very terse; Ex. 16. 6 עָרַב וַיִּדְעֶתֶם *at evening, then ye shall know*. Cf. Nu. 16. 5 בֹּקֶר וַיֵּרָא *in the morning he will show*. Jud. 16. 2. Pr. 24. 27 אַחֲרַי וּבִנְיָתָא *afterwards, then build thy house*, 1 K. 13. 31. The causal connection also may be very slightly expressed. Gen. 20. 11 there is no fear of God here וַהֲרִנֵּנִי *and they will kill me*. Ru. 3. 9 I am Ruth וַיִּפְרֹשֶׁת *therefore spread thy skirt*. 2 K. 9. 26 I saw the blood of Naboth yesterday וַיִּשְׁלַמְתִּי *and I will requite thee*. Is. 5. 8 till there be no place וַהֲשַׁבְתֶּם *and ye be let dwell alone*. 2 S. 7. 9, 14; 14. 7, Gen. 26. 10, 22, Deu. 6. 5, Jud. 1. 15, Pr. 6. 11; 24. 33, 34. Am. 5. 26, 27, *and* (therefore) ye shall



take up (the unexpressed ground is the exaggerated cultus in contrast to *v.* 25).

Vav perf., however, has acquired the force of a representative of the impf., and may occur in a fut. or freq. sense in any connection. Josh. 22. 28, Is. 2. 2, Jud. 13. 3, 1 S. 15. 28, 1 K. 2. 44. Ex. 6. 6, 2 S. 16. 13. Peculiar Am. 7. 4 וְאָכְלָה and it *would* (or *will*, is in act to—the imminent act made pres.) *devour*. The act was not begun.

Rem. 2. The two most common forms of § 57 are Hos. 1. 5 וְהָיָה בְּיוֹם הַהוּא וְשָׁבַרְתִּי *I will break*; and Hos. 2. 23 וְהָיָה בְּיוֹם הַהוּא אֶעֱנֶה *I will answer*, cf. *v.* 18. The latter common in Is. (see exx. at end of § 57). Am. 8. 9, Zeph. 1. 8, with 12.

Rem. 3. In later style וְהָיָה sometimes agrees with *subj.*, Nu. 5. 27, Jer. 42. 16; cf. *v.* 17, instead of being used impersonally.

#### PERF. AND IMPF. WITH SIMPLE VAV (COPULATIVE)

§ 58. In the more ancient and classical language *vav* with perf. is almost invariably conversive. In the declining stages of the speech the *vav* of the form וְקָטַל is often simply copulative, *and he killed*; while in post-biblical language the *vav* convers. disappears. In the classical language, however, *vav* with perf. occasionally expresses an action not consequential or successive to what precedes, but co-ordinate with it.

(a) When the second verb merely repeats the idea of the first, being synonymous, or in some way parallel with it. 1 S. 12. 2 וְאָנֹכִי זָקֵן וְשֵׁבִי אֲנִי *I am old and grey*; Is. 1. 2 בָּנִים גִּדְּלֵתִי וְרוֹמְמֵתִי *I have nourished and brought up children*. Gen. 31. 7 he has cozened me, *and changed* (changing) my hire. Deu. 2. 30, Nu. 23. 19, 1 K. 8. 47, 2 K. 19. 22, Is. 29. 20; 63. 10, Ps. 20. 9; 27. 2; 38. 9, Job 1. 5, Lam. 2. 22, 1 Chr. 23. 1. This differs little from the asyndetous construction. Jos. 13. 1, Lam. 2. 16, Jud. 5. 27.

(b) When the second verb expresses a contrast. 1 K. 3. 11 וְשָׁאַלְתָּ... לֹא שָׁאַלְתָּ יָמִים thou hast not asked long life... *but hast asked*, &c. Jer. 4. 10, thou saidst, Ye shall have peace וְנִגְעָה חֶרֶב עַד-הַנֶּפֶשׁ *whereas the sword reaches* to the life. 1 S. 10. 2 he has lost thought of the asses וְדָאג לָכֶם *and is concerned* about you. 2 K. 8. 10, Pr. 9. 12. And, in general, when an action is thrown out of the stream of narrative, and invested with distinct importance and independence. Gen. 21. 25 וְהִוָּכַח אֲב' and Abr. *chid* with Abimelek. Gen. 34. 5 *held his peace*, so 2 K. 18. 36. 1 K. 21. 12 (the *two* points in Jezebel's letter are carried out). 2 K. 18. 4, where, perhaps, each of the acts is emphasised. Is. 1. 8 *and is left*, 22. 14; 28. 26.

(c) But there are many cases where *vav* with perf. appears in simple narrative, and is merely copulative. 1 K. 12. 32; 13. 3; 14. 27; 2 K. 14. 7, 10; 21. 4; 23. 4, and often. The usage becomes more common as the language declines, and comes under the influence of Aramaic. Even in early style the form וְהָיָה *and it was* is not quite rare. Am. 7. 2, 1 S. 1. 12; 10. 9; 17. 48; 25. 20, 2 S. 6. 16. In Gen. 38. 5 *rd.* וְהָיָה with Sep.

Rem. 1. The perf. with *vav* seems occasionally to resume and restate briefly an event previously described in detail; Jud. 7. 13 וַתֵּבֶל, 1 K. 20. 21, Gen. 15. 6? The two cases of וַתֵּבֶל Jud. 3. 23, 2 S. 13. 18 are curious. In 2 S. v. 18 states how the *two* injunctions of v. 17 were literally carried out. In 1 K. 11. 10 וַיִּצְחַק has almost plup. sense. In 1 K. 6. 32, 35 וַיִּקְלַע is freq., distributing the act over several objects; § 54 b. In 2 S. 16. 5 the consn. is unusual, two nominal clauses might have been expected. In some cases the text is faulty, as Is. 38. 15 וַאֲמַר.

§ 59. The impf. with simple *vav* (copulative) is common in all periods of the language, especially in animated speech. The use of the simple impf., and especially its repetition,

gives the various actions more independence and force than if the ordinary secution with *vav perf.* had been adopted. Gen. 49. 7 וְאֶפְרַיִם . . . וְאֶחָדָם *I will divide them . . . and I will scatter them*; Hos. 5. 14 וְאַתָּה וְאֱלֹהֶיךָ. Sometimes with force of contrast, Hos. 6. 1 טֶרֶף וְיִרְפֵּאנוּ he has torn, *but he will heal us*. 8. 13; 13. 8, Is. 5. 29. The asyndetous consn. is only slightly more vivid. Ex. 15. 9, Hos. 5. 15; 6. 3; 9. 9; 10. 2 (common in Hos.). In later style impf. with simple *vav* is used where earlier style would have used *vav perf.*, Ps. 91. 14; and in conditional sentences, Is. 40. 30.

#### THE MOODS. IMPERATIVE, JUSSIVE, AND COHORTATIVE.

§ 60. The imper. is used, as in other languages, to express a *command*, *advice* (often *ironical*, 1 K. 2. 22, Am. 4. 4), *permission*, or *request*. Besides the ordinary form one strengthened by ה may be used, to which or to the ordinary form the precative particle נא is often added; Gen. 27. 26 הַגִּידִי נָא לִי *come here and kiss me!* 24. 23 תֵּלְכִי נָא לִי *tell me!* Ex. 20. 12, 2 S. 18. 23, Nu. 23. 7.

The imper. is only used in 2nd pers.; for other persons the impf. (juss., coh.) must be employed; Gen. 18. 4 יִקְדָּנָה *let some water be brought*. Even for the 2nd pers. the impf. is often used, § 45, R. 4. Gen. 44. 33, 1 K. 1. 2.

The imper. cannot be used with negative particles. The impf. must be used, whether with לֹא, expressing a *command*, or with אַל, expressing oftener *dissuasion*, *deprecation*. In the latter case the juss. is very common. Gen. 45. 9 יָרְדָה *come down to me, delay not*; Deu. 9. 7 זָכֵר *remember, forget not*. Gen. 18. 3; 26. 2; 37. 22, Deu. 31. 6, 2 K. 18. 26–32, Is. 6. 9, Jer. 4. 3, 4. Ex. 20. 3 *seq.*

Rem. 1. While the lengthened imper. originally expressed some subjective emphasis on the part of the speaker,

it is often difficult to see any difference between the forms in usage, comp. Jud. 9. 8 with *v.* 14, 1 S. 9. 23. The extended form seems more courteous than the abrupt shorter form, but euphony always exerts an influence. In some cases the longer form has become fixed, as *חָגַשׁה* *hasten*, עִירָה *awake*, הֵבִי־שָׁה *bring near*, הִשָּׁבַע *swear*, הִשְׁמִיעַ *listen* (exc. Job 33. 31), and others.

Rem. 2. The imper. is sometimes interjected in descriptions of the fut., the speaker himself taking part in the events described, and directly addressing the subject of them. This imper. is equivalent to a strong subjective expression of fut., *e.g.* Is. 54. 14 רָחֵקִי *be far* = *thou shalt be far*, Ps. 110. 2, Job 5. 22, 1 S. 10. 7, Is. 37. 30; 65. 18.

Rem. 3. In higher style the plur. imper. is used when no definite subj. is addressed; Is. 13. 2 שָׂאֲרִים *lift up a signal!* = *let a signal be lifted up!* 14. 21, and often.

Rem. 4. A number of imper. may follow one another, particularly in animated speech. Gen. 27. 19, Jer. 5. 1. Various forms appear. 1. אָמַר לְךָ *say*, Deu. 5. 27, 2 S. 7. 3, 1 K. 18. 8, 19, 41, 44; 19. 5, Hos. 1. 2. 2. וְאָמַר לְךָ *say and say*, 1 K. 22. 22, &c. 3. וְאָמַרְתָּ לְךָ, Deu. 12. 28, Jud. 4. 6, 2 S. 7. 5, 1 K. 19. 11, Is. 6. 9. 4. וְהָלַךְ וְאָמַרְתָּ, Jer. 2. 1; 3. 12, and often in Jer., 2 S. 24. 12, 2 K. 5. 10.

Not uncommon formulas are, 1 K. 20. 7 וְרָא וְרָא, *v.* 22 sing., Jer. 2. 19. Different order, Jer. 5, 1 וְרָא וְרָא, cf. both forms, 1 S. 23. 22, 23.

§ 61. Jussive and Cohortative.<sup>1</sup>—Besides the ordinary impf. there are two modified forms of it, the so-called Cohortative and the Jussive. The former, used in the *first* person, expresses the *desire*, *will*, or *intention* of the speaker when he himself is subj. of the action; the juss., used in second and third pers., expresses the speaker's *desire*, *will*, or *command* when others are the subj. of the action. The

<sup>1</sup> The impf. &c. of an Ar. verb. in 3rd pers. is as follows:—

	<i>Impf.</i>	<i>Subj.</i>	<i>Juss.</i>	<i>Energic.</i>
3 s.	yaqtulu	yaqtula	yaqtul	yaqtulanna, yaqtulan,
3 pl.	yaqtulūna	yaqtulū	yaqtulū	p. yaqtula.

first form is called by some the Intentional; others embrace both under the name Voluntative.

When special cohort. and juss. forms exist they are generally used to express the senses just noted, but by no means uniformly, the simple impf. being often found where the modified forms might have been employed. Job 3. 9 **אֶל־יָרָא** with 20. 17 **אֶל־יָרָא**.

§ 62. Use of Cohort.—The coh. or intentional is used to express the *will* of the speaker in ref. to his own action, Deu. 12. 20 **אֶכְלֶה בָּשָׂר** *I would eat* flesh; 17. 14 **אֶשְׂימָה** *I will set* a king over me; 13. 7 **נִלְכֶה וְנַעֲבֹדָה א' אֲחֵרִים** *we will go and serve* other gods. The particle **נָא** is often added, Gen. 18. 21 **אֶרְדֹּה־נָא** *I will go down*, Ex. 3. 3, Jud. 19. 11, 13, Is. 5. 1. The cohort. form is only occasional with neg., 2 S. 24. 14 **וְגִיד אָדָם בְּיָדִי נִפְלֹה־נָא אֶל־אֶפְלֹה** . . . but into the hand of man *let me not fall*; Jer. 17. 18; 18. 18, Jon. 1. 14, Ps. 25. 2; 69. 15. When there are several verbs one may have coh. form and the others not, or all may have it. Comp. Is. 1. 24, Gen. 24. 57, Ps. 26. 6 with Gen. 22. 5; 33. 12, 2 S. 3. 21, Hos. 2. 9; 6. 3, Ps. 27. 6.—Thus when the speaker is free the coh. expresses intention or determination, or it may be desire; when he is dependent on others it expresses a wish or request. Gen. 11. 3, 4, 7; 12. 2, 3; 33. 14; 50. 5, Nu. 21. 22, Deu. 2. 27, Jud. 12. 5, 1 S. 28. 22, 2 S. 16. 9, 1 K. 19. 20.

§ 63. Use of Jussive.—The juss. is used—(a) to express a command; 1 S. 10. 8 **שִׁבְעַת יָמִים תִּוָּחַל** seven days *thou shalt wait*. Particularly in neg. sentences, Deu. 3. 26 **אֶל־תֹּסֶף דִּבֵּר אֵלַי עוֹד** *speaking to me no more*; Hos. 4. 4 **אִישׁ אֶל־יִרְבֵּ וְאֶל־יִזְכָּ וְאִישׁ אֶל־יִזְכָּ וְאִישׁ אֶל־יִזְכָּ** *let none contend and none reprove*. If there be several neg. clauses **לֹא** is often used after the first, 1 K. 20. 8 **לֹא תִשְׁמַע וְלֹא תִאָּחֵז** *listen not, nor consent*, Am. 5. 5; but in impassioned language **אֶל**

is retained, Hos. 4. 15, Ob. 12-14.—Gen. 22. 12; 30. 34; 33. 9; 45. 20, Deu. 15. 3.

(b) To express advice or recommendation; Jud. 15. 2 her sister is prettier *תְּהִינָּה לָהּ תַּחְתָּיָה* *have her* instead of her; Gen. 41. 33 *יֵרָא פְּרַעַה אִישׁ וְשִׂיתָהוּ* (so Baer) *let Ph. look out a man and place him*; v. 34. Ex. 8. 25, 1 K. 1. 2; 22. 13.

(c) To express a wish, request, or entreaty; 1 S. 1. 23 *תִּשְׁבֶּנָּה יְקוֹם י' דְּבָרָו* *may Je. fulfil his word*; 1 K. 17. 21 *תִּשְׁבֶּנָּה נַפְשֵׁה־יִלְדֵּי הַזֶּה* *may the soul of this child return*; Gen. 18. 30 *אַל־תֵּכָחַד לְאָדָמִי* *be not angry*, Lord. Gen. 13. 8; 19. 7; 26. 28; 30. 24; 31. 49; 44. 33; 45. 5, Ex. 5. 21, Nu. 23. 10, 1 S. 24. 16, 2 S. 19. 38, 1 K. 20. 32.

Rem. 1. In a few cases the coh. appears in 3rd pers., Deu. 33. 16 (*rd.* חֲבוּאָה?), Is. 5. 19, Ps. 20. 4, Job 11. 17. On the other hand a few cases occur of juss. in 1st pers., 1 S. 14. 36, 2 S. 17. 12, Is. 41. 23 (Kth.), 28. These facts might suggest that coh. was at one time a complete tense-form (like Ar. *energic*), and that the same was true of juss. At present the fragmentary forms supplement each other.

Rem. 2. Except in neg. sent. the juss. of 2nd pers. is rare, the imper. being used. in 2nd pers. 1 S. 10. 8, Ez. 3. 3 (Sep. points *Ḳal*), Ps. 71. 21. It is also rarely that the juss. is used after *לֹא*; Gen. 24. 8, 1 Sam. 14. 36, 2 S. 17. 12; 18. 14 (coh.), 1 K. 2. 6, Ez. 48. 14. Deu. 13. 1.?

Rem. 3. The form *יִסְּף* &c. (hiph. of *סָפַף*) occurs with no juss. sense, *e.g.* Nu. 22. 19, Deu. 18. 16, Hos. 9. 15; Jo. 2. 2, Ez. 5. 16. So Gen. 4. 12 (hardly from being apod. of a condition). There seems a confusion with *Ḳal* of *אָסַף* as a *פֶּא'*; cf. 2 S. 6. 1, Mic. 4. 6, Ps. 104. 29.

On some anomalous uses of juss. and coh. cf. § 65, R. 5. 6.

## THE MOODS WITH LIGHT VAV

§ 64. Imper. with simple vav.—The imper. with simple vav following another imper. expresses the certain *effect* of the first, or it may be its *purpose*. The first imper. in this case virtually expresses a condition which carries with it the second as a consequence. Gen. 42. 18 וְאֵת עֲשׂוּ דָּחִיזוּ *do this and live*; 2 K. 5. 13 וְרָחֹץ וְשָׁהָר *wash and become clean*; Is. 45. 22 וְהוֹשָׁעוּ אֵלַי *look unto me, and be saved*. Sometimes the certain *issue* rather than strict consequence is expressed, as in the ironical concession, Is. 8. 9 הִתְאַזְרוּ *gird yourselves, but (ye shall) be confounded*. 2 K. 18. 31, Am. 4. 4; 5. 4, 6, Jer. 25. 5; 27. 12, Ps. 37. 27. Without vav, Hos. 10. 12, Song 4. 16, Pr. 20. 13.

§ 65. Juss. and coh. with simple vav.—The coh. and juss. with simple vav are greatly used to express *design* or *purpose*; or, according to our way of thought, sometimes *effect*. If the purpose-clause be neg. וְלֹא with indic. is almost always used.

(a) After an imper., or anything with imper. sense, as coh. or juss. Gen. 27. 4 וְהָבִיאתָ לִי וְאָכְלָה *bring to me that I may eat*; Ex. 14. 12 וְנַעַבְדָּה אֶת־מִצְרַיִם *leave us alone, that we may serve Egypt*; Jud. 6. 30 הוֹצֵא וְיָמַת אֶת־בְּנֶךָ *bring out thy son, that he may die*; Ex. 32. 10 וְיִחַר־אַפִּי לִי וְיִחַר־אֲפִי *let me alone, that my anger may burn*; Gen. 42. 2 וְנָמוּת וְלֹא נָחִיָּה *buy corn for us, that we may live, and not die*; 1 S. 5. 11 וְשָׁב וְלֹא *... and return, and not kill me*; 2 S. 13. 25 וְלֹא נִכְבֵּד עָלַיָּה *let us not all go, that we be not burdensome to thee*. Cf. Rem. 1.

(b) After clauses expressing a wish or hope. Jud. 9. 29 וְיִהְיֶה אֶת־הָעָם הַזֶּה בְּיָדִי וְאֶסְרֶה *would that this people were in my hand, that I might (then I would) remove Abim.*

Is. 25. 9, Jer. 8. 23; 9. 1; 20. 10 (after אָוִלִי, cf. coh. Ex. 32. 30), Ps. 55. 7, Job 6. 9, 10; 13. 5; 22. 28; 23. 3-5; 16. 20, 21 my eye drops (= a prayer) *that he would vindicate*.

(c) After neg. sentences. Nu. 23. 19 לֹא אִישׁ אֵל יִכְזֹב God is not a man, *that he should lie*; cf. inf. 1 S. 15. 29. Ps. 51. 18 לֹא תִחַפֵּץ זֶבַח וְאַתָּנָה thou desirest not sacrifice, *that I should give it*. 2 K. 3. 11, Is. 53. 2, Ps. 49. 8-10; 55. 13. Without *and*, Job 9. 33 there is no daysman, *that he might lay his hand upon us both*. So *v.* 32.

(d) After interrog. sentences. 1 K. 22. 20 מִי יַפְתָּה אֶת־אֲחָזָב הַעֵל who will entice Ahab *to go up*? Am. 8. 5 מָתִי יַעֲבֹר הַחֹדֶשׁ וְנִשְׁבְּרָה שָׁבֶר when will the new moon be over, *that we may sell corn*? Ex. 2. 7, 1 S. 20. 4, 1 K. 12. 9 (cf. inf. *v.* 6), 2 K. 3. 11. Is. 19. 12; 40. 25; 41. 26, 28, Jer. 23. 18 (*rd.* last word וְיִשְׁמַע, cf. *v.* 22), Hos. 14. 10 (Jer. 9. 11), Jon. 1. 11, Lam. 2. 13, Job 41. 3, Est. 5. 3, 6.

Instead of vav with juss. or coh. the more vigorous imper. with vav may be found in the above cases, *a-d.* Gen. 20. 7; 45. 18, Ex. 3. 10, 2 S. 21. 3, 1 K. 1. 12, 2 K. 5. 10; 18. 32; Ps. 128. 5, Job 11. 6, Ru. 1. 9.

Rem. 1. Additional exx. of § 65*a.* Gen. 13. 9; 18. 30; 19. 20; 27. 21; 30. 25, 28; 42. 20, Ex. 8. 4; 14. 15, 16, Nu. 14. 42; 21. 7; 25. 4, Deu. 1. 42; 5. 28, 1 S. 9. 27; 11. 3; 15. 16; 17. 10; 18. 21; 28. 7, 2 S. 14. 7; 16. 11, 1 K. 13. 6, 18; 18. 27, 2 K. 5. 8; 6. 22, Is. 2. 3; 5. 19; 55. 3, Jer. 37. 20; 38. 24, Hos. 2. 4, Ps. 45. 12; 81. 9, 11; 83. 5; 90. 14, Job 13. 13.

In the cases *a-d*, Ar. uses *fa* with subjun. Occasionally Heb. uses vav with volunt. to express design even after the indic. in the past, as Lam. 1. 19 בָּקְשׁוּ אֶת־לֶחֶמְכֶּם וְיִשְׁיִבּוּ they sought food *that they might revive* their soul (cf. inf. *v.* 11). Is. 25. 9, 1 K. 13. 33, 2 K. 19. 25.

Rem. 2. The idea of *design* expressed by the consn. is illustrated by its interchange with ל and inf., *e.g.* 1 K. 12. 6 inf. with *v.* 9 juss., 1 K. 22. 7 with *v.* 8, cf. Deu.



17. 17 with *v.* 20. *Effect* is rather expressed by *vav* perf., וְהָיָה not וְהָיָה, though the distinction is not always apparent; comp. 1 S. 15. 25 coh. with *v.* 30 *vav* perf. Ex. 8. 12, 1 S. 24. 16, 2 S. 21. 6, 1 K. 1. 2. The juss., however, does not express effect simply *so as that*, apart from design; though there is a tendency to put design into the action rather than the agent, and this might explain some cases of juss.; cf. § 149, R. 3.—On the other hand, in negative sent. *vav* perf. often expresses the effect or consequence of the action, the whole compound expression (first verb and its consequence *vav* perf.) being under the neg.; Deu. 7. 25, 26 וְלֹא-תִבְיֵא וְהָיִיתָ . . . לֹא תִחַמְדָּךְ thou shalt not covet *and take*, thou shalt not bring it to thy house *and so become* a curse. Ex. 33. 20, Deu. 19. 10; 22. 4, Is. 28. 28, Ps. 143. 7.

Rem. 3. The neg. apod. is usually subordinated by לֹא (or לֹא) with *ordinary* impf. The form וְלֹא rather co-ordinates its clause to the preceding one, Deu. 33. 6, Gen. 22. 12, Jud. 13. 14, Ps. 27. 9, though some cases may seem dubious, Nu. 11. 15, 1 S. 12. 19, Ps. 69. 15, cf. both neg. Pr. 27. 2.

Rem. 4. The *vav* is occasionally omitted. Ps. 61. 8 וְיִנְצְרוּהוּ פִּי (imp. *pi.* מִנָּה) enjoin *that they keep him*. Ex. 7. 9, Is. 27. 4, Job 9. 32, 33, 35, Ps. 55. 7; 118. 19; 119. 17. In Ps. 140. 9 *rd.* perhaps וְיִרְשֵׁוּ and attach to *v.* 10.

Rem. 5. Some uses of coh. are peculiar. (a) It is not unnatural that the coh. or intentional should be used to express an action which one resigns himself to do, though under external pressure—a subjective *I must*. Is. 38. 10 אֶלְכֶּה, Ps. 57. 5, Jer. 3. 25? (b) Its use is also natural when a narrator recalls and repeats dramatically his thoughts and resolutions on a former occasion, as the Bride recites the resolutions she formed in her dreams, Song 3. 2, cf. 5. 2. So perhaps Ps. 77. 4, 7, Hab. 2. 1, Job 19. 18? But Ps. 66. 6 שָׂמְנוּ נִשְׂמְחָה there *did we rejoice*, can hardly be so explained (though impf. might be according to § 45, R. 2). Other cases occur where its usual sense cannot be attached to coh. The form, however, is but a fragment of a mood, which possibly had originally a wider range of meaning. There is also a tendency in the later stages of a language

to use the stronger forms without the special force they have in earlier times. Thus the coh. seems sometimes to be merely an emphatic impf., and rhythm may occasionally have dictated the form. Jer. 4. 19, 21; 6. 10, Ps. 42. 5; 55. 3, 18; 88. 16, Is. 59. 10.—In several cases after ער, Pr. 12. 19, Ps. 73. 17. Cf. Lam. 3. 50, where juss. יִשָּׁא is parall. to יִשְׁקֶה, not as Ps. 14. 2.

Rem. 6. The use of juss. forms, especially in later books, is full of difficulty. According to Mass. pointing (the strict moods being omitted) the following forms are in use :—

perf. 1a	הִקְטִיל	impf. 1b	יִקְטִיל	simple perf. and impf.
2a	יִקְטֹל	2b	וְהִקְטִיל	regular convers. forms.
3a	וְהִקְטִיל	3b	וְיִקְטִיל	vav copulative.
		4b	וְיִקְטֹל	the modified form

with or without simple vav used in the senses of the simple impf., e.g. in descriptions of past and present (= 1b), and as vav perf., &c. (= 2b, 3b). While 3a is in the main late (§ 58), 3b is common at all times in animated speech. The difficulty lies with 4b; e.g. Job 13. 27 וְחָשַׁם בְּפֶדֶי רַגְלִי *and thou settest my feet in the stocks* (the form preserved in the quotation, 33. 11). Ps. 11. 6, Is. 12. 1, Pr. 15. 25, Job 18. 9, 12; 20. 23, 26, 28; 27. 22, &c. Again, Joel 2. 20 וְעָלָה בְּאִשׁוֹ וְעָלָה צַחְחָתוֹ *his smell shall come up and his stink shall ascend*, where וְעָלָה = וְעָלָה or וְעָלָה; Zeph. 2. 13 יָדוּ יָמָיו *and he shall stretch his hand, for וְנָטָה or וְיָטָה*. I K. 9. 1; 14. 5, Mic. 3. 4; 6. 14, Lev. 15. 24; 26. 43, Ez. 14. 7, Is. 35. 1, 2; 58. 10, Dan. 8. 12; 11. 4, 10, 16–19, 25, 28, 30, &c.

It is perhaps well to endeavour to fit some known juss. sense on each case as it is met with, though it may prove a waste of ingenuity. Further, while the general principles of Syntax may be common to all the Shem. languages, appeals to analogies from cogn. languages are often precarious. The reader for ex. who calls in the use of Ar. *au*, or, with subj. in the sense of *unless*, or *else*, to explain the juss. Is. 27. 5 וְיָחֹזֵק אוֹ יִיחֹזֵק *or that (unless) he take hold*, will be disconcerted to find in the next verse a juss. יִשָּׁשׁ in a plain affirmative sentence.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Appeal to Ar. *au* in Is. 27. 5 is all the more precarious, inasmuch as the indic. is permissible after *au*. Cf. a case Noeld. *Carm. Arab.* 5. 7.

As many juss. forms cannot be understood in a juss. sense, many scholars are inclined to go behind the Mass. tradition, and point according to what is supposed to be classical usage. Two main lines of emendation present themselves: 1. to point י or י (vav conv.) in a number of cases where Mass. has י with juss. forms. *E.g.* Job 34. 37 יִרְבּ for יִרְבֵּי, Is. 63. 3 יִי for יִי. Pr. 15. 25, Job 15. 33; 20. 23; 27. 22, &c. 2. To substitute indicative (defectively written) for juss. of Mass. *E.g.* Mic. 3. 4 יִסְתַּחֵר for יִסְתַּחֵר. Deu. 32. 8, Ps. 85. 14, Job 34. 29, &c. In cases where there is consonantal shortening in the form only the first method is available; in cases where there is mere vowel difference either method may be used, *e.g.* Job 13. 27 וְחָשַׁם may be read וְחָשַׁם or וְחָשַׁם as may seem necessary. 3. These two principles may need to be supplemented by more or fewer of the assumptions referred to, § 51, R. 5.

Unfortunately even these very wide operations on the Mass. text fail to explain all the instances. Cases like Jo. 2. 20, Dan. 11. 4, 16, Lev. 15. 24, Ez. 14. 7, &c. remain. In these cases the juss. seems used as an ordinary impf., and the question is raised how wide the usage may be. While therefore it is of course legitimate to subject any case of Mass. pointing to criticism, sporadic emendations, so long as uncertainty remains on the *general* question, afford little satisfaction.

The state of the question being understood the following cases may be looked into. Exx. of שׁוּב Is. 12. 1, Job 10. 16, Ecc. 12. 7, Dan. 11. 10, 18, 19, 28. שִׁים Zeph. 2. 13, Ps. 85. 14, Job 13. 27; 24. 25; 33. 11, Dan. 11. 17. נִלַּ Is. 35. 1, 2; 61. 10, Zech. 10. 7, Pr. 23. 25, &c. הִיא Gen. 49. 17, 1 S. 10. 5, Lev. 15. 24, Ps. 72. 16, Job 18. 12; 20. 23; 24. 14. חוֹק *hiph.* Is. 27. 5; 42. 6, Job 18. 9. רָעַם *hiph.* 1 S. 2. 10, 2 S. 22. 14, Job 37. 4, 5; 40. 9 (nowhere in indic.). שָׁלַךְ *hiph.* Job 15. 33; 27. 22, Dan. 8. 12, cf. Ps. 68. 15. סָחַר *hiph.* Mic. 3. 4, Job 34. 29. מָחַ Is. 50. 2, Job 36. 14. חוֹס Ps. 72. 13 and often. מָטַר *hiph.* Ps. 11. 6, Job 20. 23. רוּם Nu. 24. 7, 1 S. 2. 10, Mic. 5. 8.—Nu. 24. 19, Deu. 28. 8, 21, 36; 32. 8, 18, 1 K. 8. 1, Is. 27. 6; 63. 3, Hos. 14. 7, Mic. 6. 14; 7. 10, Jer. 13. 10 (cf.

coh. 3. 25; 4. 19, 21), Nah. 3. 11, Zech. 9. 5, Mal. 2. 12? Ez. 14. 7 with Jo. 2. 20, Zeph. 2. 13, Ps. 12. 4; 25. 9; 47. 4; 58. 5; 90. 3; 107. 29, Job 10. 17; 17. 2; 20. 26, 28 (cf. 36. 15); 23. 9, 11; 27. 8; 33. 21, 27; 34. 37; 38. 24; 40. 19, Pr. 12. 26; 15. 25, Lam. 3. 50, Dan. 11. 4, 16, 25, 30.

The frequency with which certain words appear anomalously in the juss., and the place of others in the clause, suggest that rhythm sometimes dictated the form (Job 23. 9, 11). The fact that the anomalous juss. is often at the head of the clause has little meaning, as this is the usual place of the verb.—Pointing like Ex. 22. 4 כִּי יִבְעֶר אֵשׁ seems due to the accentual rhythm, and no more implies an intermediate יִבְעֶר than מִיָּנִיחַת implies anything but מִיָּנִיחַ. Cf. Job 39. 26; 22. 28, Ps. 21. 2; 104. 20?

## GOVERNMENT OF THE VERB

### THE ACCUSATIVE

§ 66. Verbs subordinate other words to themselves in the *accusative* case. This accus. is of various kinds. Besides the acc. of the object, verbs may subordinate words to themselves in a freer way, in what may be called the adverbial accus., *e.g.* in definitions of *place* and *time*. Again, the action of the verb may reach its object not directly, but through the medium of a preposition. Very many so-called prepositions, however, are really nouns, and stand themselves in the adverbial *acc.*

The accus. termination *a* in the Shemitic speeches is probably the remains of a demonstrative particle (Eth. *ha* or *a*), which indicated the *direction to* of the verbal action or the verbal state, and this demonstrative nature of the case explains its very wide usage.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> With this idea of *direction to* of the verbal action or *bearing on* of the condition expressed by the verb is to be compared the use of prep. ל with *obj.* in Aram. and later Heb.

half 6  
66-78  
for Manuscript

The chief accusatives are these—(1) The acc. of *absolute object* or infin. abs., with which may be connected the *cognate acc.* (2) The acc. in definitions of *time, place, and measure.* (3) The acc. of *condition*, or state of subject or object of the verbal action, including acc. of *manner* of the action. (4) The acc. of *specification*, or, as it is called, of *respect.* (5) The acc. of the direct *object* of transitive verbs. (6) Certain other accusatives, less common or doubtful in Heb., as the acc. of *motive* or purpose of the action; the acc. after *היה* *to be*, &c.; and that after certain particles as *הנה* *behold*, &c.

### 1. The Absolute Object

§ 67. (a) Any verb, transitive or intransitive, may subordinate its own inf. abs. or *nomen verbi* in the acc., with the effect of adding force to the predication. Gen. 2. 17 מות *thou shalt die*; 18. 18 יהיה לגוי גדול *he shall be a great nation*; Is. 6. 9 שמעו שמעו *hear ye indeed*. This acc. mostly precedes the verb, but may follow it, and does so always in the case of *imper.* and *ptcp.* See Inf. Abs. § 86.

(b) Cognate accus. The cognate noun may be subordinated in the same way as an inner acc. in order to strengthen the verb; 1 S. 1. 6 וקצטמה צרתה גסכעם *and her rival (fellow-wife) continually aggrieved her*; Lam. 1. 8 יבשו בשת חטא חטא ירושלם *Jer. sinned (a sin)*; Is. 42. 17 יבשו בשת חטא חטא *they shall be ashamed (with shame)*. 1 K. 1. 12, Is. 21. 7, 24. 16; 66. 10, Mic. 4. 9, Hab. 3. 9, Ez. 25. 12, Zech. 1. 2, Job 27. 12, Ps. 14. 5; 106. 14.

More frequently the cognate acc., instead of strengthening the action absolutely, expresses a concrete instance of the effect or product of the action; 2 K. 12. 21 ויקשרקשר *and they made a conspiracy*, so 15. 30; Gen. 40. 8 חלום חלמנו *we have dreamed a dream*. Ex. 22. 5, Josh. 7. 1; 22. 20, 31. Usually this acc. is strengthened either (1) by a *gen.*, or (2) by one or more *adj.* 1 S. 20. 17 נקשו נקשו *they struck*.

*he loved him with his love for his own soul*; Jer. 22. 19 *he shall be buried with the burial of an ass*; 2 K. 13. 14 *he was sick of his disease*. Lev. 26. 36, Deu. 16. 18, Josh. 9. 9, 2 S. 4. 5, Is. 14. 6; 27. 7; 45. 17, Jer. 30. 14, Zech. 7. 9, *cf.* Ps. 139. 22. With *adj.*, Gen. 27. 34 *he cried with an exceeding loud and bitter cry*. Gen. 12. 17; 50. 10, Deu. 7. 23, Josh. 22. 31, Jud. 21. 2, 1 S. 17. 25, 2 S. 13. 15, 36, 1 K. 1. 40, 2 K. 4. 13, Jer. 8. 5; 14. 17, Zech. 1. 14, 15; 8. 2, Jon. 1. 10, Neh. 2. 10.

Rem. 1. When abs. obj. is inf. cons. it is generally introduced as a comparison, with *כִּי*, Is. 19. 14; 34. 4, *cf.* noun, 30. 14; but acc. simply (as Ar.) also occurs, Is. 24. 22; 33. 4.

Rem. 2. The cognate acc. may be *plur.*, Gen. 12. 17; 30. 8, 37, Ez. 16. 38. Occasionally too a noun from a different root but cognate in sense is used, Is. 14. 6 (clause instead of *gen.*), Jer. 20. 11; 31. 7, Zech. 8. 2. *Cf.* Ps. 13. 4 *sleep* (the sleep of) *death*; Ps. 76. 6, Pr. 3. 23.

Rem. 3. Perhaps it should be considered a form of cognate acc. when verbs of *expression* (speak, cry, weep, &c.) or of conduct subordinate the organ of expression or acting in the acc., 2 S. 15. 23 *all the land were weeping with a loud voice*, Prov. 10. 4 *he who works with a slack hand*. Deu. 5. 19, 1 K. 8. 55, Is. 19. 18, Ez. 11. 13, Ps. 12. 3; 63. 6; 109. 2, Ezr. 10. 12. *Cf.* Jer. 25. 30 with a *hēdad*.

## 2. Free Subordination to the Verb of Words in the Acc.

§ 68. Acc. of time.—Definitions of time are put in acc. (a) In answer to the question *when*? Hos. 7. 5 *יום מלִּכְנוּ* *on the day* of our king; 2 S. 21. 9 *תְּחִלַּת קִצִּיר שְׁעָרִים* *in the beginning* of barley harvest; Ps. 127. 2 *יִתֵּן לְיָדוֹ שָׁנָא* *he giveth to his beloved in sleep*. Gen. 14. 15; 27. 45; 40. 7, Hos. 1. 2; 7. 6, Ps. 91. 6 (*at noon*; elsewhere with prep. *בְּ*);

Ps. 119. 62 **לַיְלָה חֲצוֹת** *at midnight*; Ps. 5. 4; 6. 11. (b) In answer to *how long*? Gen. 3. 14 **כָּל־יְמֵי חַיֶּיךָ** *all the days* of thy life; Hos. 3. 4 **יָמִים רַבִּים יֵשְׁבוּ** *many days* shall they abide. Or, *how many*? of time; Gen. 7. 4, 24; 14. 4; 15. 13.—Gen. 21. 34; 27. 44.

§ 69. Acc. of place.—Definitions of place are put in acc. (a) In answer to the question *where*? In prose this is usual with the words **בֵּית** *house*, **פֶּתַח** *door*, and some others, but chiefly when the definition of locality is general, prepositions being used when it is more precise. This acc. is also generally defined more fully by a following *gen.* Gen. 24. 23 **הֲיֵשׁ בֵּית־אָבִיךָ מָקוֹם** *is there room in thy father's house*? 2 S. 9. 4 **בֵּית מְכִיר** *he is at the house of M.*; Gen. 18. 1, 10 **יָשָׁב פֶּתַח־הָאֹהֶל** *as he sat at the door of the tent*.—Gen. 38. 11; 45. 16, Ex. 33. 10, Josh. 1. 4, 15; 12. 1; 23. 4, 1 K. 19. 13, 2 K. 2. 3, Is. 3. 6, Jer. 36. 10. Gen. 28. 11 *at the place of his head*, 1 S. 26. 7; Ru. 3. 8, 14 *at the place of his feet*. Without a following *gen.*, Ru. 2. 7. Proper names compounded with **בֵּית** are similarly construed, 2 S. 2. 32, Hos. 12. 5. Comp. Jer. 27. 18 with v. 21.

(b) In answer to *whither*? Gen. 27. 3 **צֵא הַשָּׂדֶה** *go out to the field*; 45. 25 **וַיָּבֹאוּ אֶרֶץ כְּנָעַן** *and they came to the land of C.* The ה of direction is frequently appended, Gen. 24. 16 **וַהֲתַרְדּוּ הָעֵינָהּ** *and she went down to the fountain*; 12. 5; 39. 1, 12; 42. 38; 43. 17. Of course prepp. (**עַד**, **אֶל**, &c.) may be used before noun of *place*, and must be used with names of *persons*, to which, too, the ה local cannot be appended; Gen. 45. 25 **וַיָּבֹאוּ אֶרֶץ כְּנָעַן אֶל־יַעֲקֹב** *to the land of C. to Jacob* (cf. Jer. 27. 3). The prep. is used also with creatures, Gen. 31. 4 **הַשָּׂדֶה אֶל־צֹאנוֹ** *to the field to his flock*.—Gen. 13. 10; 24. 27, Ex. 4. 9; 17. 10, Josh. 6. 19, 24, Jud. 1. 26; 19. 18, 1 S. 1. 24; 17. 17, 20, 2 S. 20. 3, Is. 14. 11,

Jer. 16. 8; 18. 2, 3, Nah. 2. 6.—In Ez. 11. 24; 23. 16 **בְּסוּדִים** is now name of the country; Jer. 50. 10; 51. 24, 35.

(c) In answer to *how far?* Gen. 7. 20, 1 K. 19. 4, Ez. 41. 22, Jon. 3. 4.

Rem. 1. In elevated speech and poetry words are put in acc. in answer to *where?* more freely, 1 K. 8. 43 *in heaven*, Is. 16. 2 *at the fords*, 15. 8; 45. 19 *in a waste* (in vain), 2 Chr. 33. 20. In 1 S. 2. 29 **מִעוֹן** is corrupt in some way. Job 22. 12, Ps. 92. 9, *height* is scarcely acc. of place but concrete for adj. as predicate, thou *art height* = high; cf. Ps. 10. 5, Is. 22. 16. In the frequent **אֶת־פְּנֵי**, 1 S. 1. 22; 2. 11, 17, 18, Ex. 34. 23, &c., **אֶת** is prep.

Rem. 2. The acc. *whither?* is also used freely; Gen. 31. 4 *called Rachel to the field*, 31. 21 *set his face to mount Gilead*, Is. 10. 32 *wage his fist toward the mount*, Is. 40. 26, Ps. 55. 9, Job 5. 11, Ps. 134. 2, Lam. 5. 6.—The force of the ה of direction has in many cases become enfeebled, e.g. **שָׁמָּה** = *there*; so it is used with prep. of motion *to* Josh. 13. 4, Ez. 8. 14, Ps. 9. 18; and even with prep. *in* and *from*, Josh. 15. 21, Jer. 27. 16. In later style it becomes a mere ornate ending, Ps. 116. 14, 15, 18; 124. 4; 125. 3, though perhaps for sake of rhythm earlier, Hos. 8. 7; 10. 13, Ps. 3. 3.

Rem. 3. When questions *how long?* *how far?* &c. are answered in *numbers*, it is strictly the numeral that is in acc. The case of the thing enumerated will depend upon the numeral, being e.g. in *gen.* after numeral, **עֶשְׂרֵת מַנִּים** *ten times*, Gen. 31. 7, or in apposition with it, or possibly in the acc. of specification after it, as **יָמֵי אַרְבָּעִים** *forty days*. See § 37, R. 6. Possibly under this acc. comes the use of **מִסְפָּר** *according to the number*, Job 1. 5, Jer. 2. 28, Ex. 16. 16. Or it is acc. of limitation.

Rem. 4. The verb **בֹּא** *to come*, when = *come upon* in a hostile sense, has often acc. *suff.* of person in poetry and later style, Is. 28. 15, Job 15. 21; 20. 22, Ps. 35. 8; 36. 12. With *noun* Is. 41. 25 (though **יָבֵס** has been suggested), Ez. 38. 11. In a favourable sense, Ps. 119. 41, 77. Similarly **אָחַז** *to come upon*, Job 3. 25.



he a 'being' is -  
understood. And  
like like 'yigooas'  
implies spiritual  
mode - 'going into  
state'

§ 71. Acc. of specification.—When to the general statement of the action there is added the point of its incidence, or the respect in which it holds, this secondary limitation is put in the acc., Gen. 3. 15 **הוּא יְשׁוּפֶקָה רֹאשׁ** *he shall bruise*

thee *on the head*; 37. 21 לֹא נִכְנֹוּ נַפֶּשׁ let us not smite him *as to life* (mortally), 1 K. 15. 23 חָלָה אֶת־רַגְלָיו he was diseased *in his feet*. Gen. 17. 25; 41. 40, Deu. 33. 11; 19. 6, 11, Jud. 15. 8, 2 S. 21. 20 (1 K. 19. 21), Jer. 2. 16, Ps. 3. 8; 17. 11, Job 21. 7. Prov. 22. 23.

Rem. 1. In § 70a the Ar. consn. is assumed as the type. For ex. (a) רָאוּ אִישׁ יֵצֵא they saw *a man coming out*. (b) רָאוּ הָאִישׁ הַיֵּצֵא they saw *the man who was coming out*. (c) רָאוּ הָאִישׁ יֵצֵא they saw *the man coming out*. In a, b, *coming out* is adj. in agreement with *a man, the man*, but in c it is acc. of condition to the obj. *the man*. It is possible, however, that in such cases as Job 27. 19 he lieth down *rich, rich* might be nom. in appos. to subj. in *lieth down*; Job 15. 7; 19. 25, 2 S. 19. 21 (so Hitz.). Eth. seems to use App. while Ar. has acc. The sing. in such cases as Is. 20. 4, Job 12. 17; 24. 10 (cf. pl. Jer. 13. 19) favours acc. of condition.—The word of condition is naturally an adj. or ptcp. expressing a temporary state, or at least a state which might have been different, and so some nouns as Gen. 38. 11; 44. 33 may be similarly used. With Is. 21. 8, cf. karra zaidun 'asadan, Zeid charged *like a lion*. With Gen. 38. 11 cf. Kor. 11. 75, and with 2 S. 12. 21 Ḥamas. 392, l. 3. Other exx. of nouns, Gen. 15. 16 *as the fourth generation*, Deu. 4. 27 *as a few men*, 2 K. 5. 2 *in bands*, Am. 5. 3, Is. 65. 20 *a hundred years old*, Jer. 31. 8 *as a great assembly*, Zech. 2. 8 *as open villages*, Ps. 58. 9. The text of 1 S. 2. 33 die אֲנָשִׁים *as men* (in manhood) is doubtful; Sep. *by the sword of men*.

Rem. 2. The acc. of *manner* of the action of an adj. may be *mas.* or *fem.*, Is. 5. 26 (Joel 4. 4), sing. or plur., esp. fem. plur. Ps. 139. 14, Job 37. 5. If a noun: (1) in principle any noun may be used, Mic. 2. 3 רֹמָה, Ps. 56. 3 מָרוֹם *haughtily*,<sup>1</sup> Is. 60. 14 שָׁחוּחַ *bowing down*, Prov. 31. 9 צָדָה *in*

<sup>1</sup> Ye shall not walk רֹמָה *to height*, i.e. so that there shall be height (to your walking), rather than *so that ye shall be high* (be height to you). Heb. refers such adverbial modifications rather to the *action* (Ar. more to the *subj.*).

*righteousness*, Jud. 5. 21 וְעַתָּה *in power*; Lev. 19. 16, Nu. 32. 14, Is. 57. 2. (2) The noun may be *plur.*, Lam. 1. 9 פָּלְאִים she came down *wonderfully*, Hos. 12. 15 בִּמְרוֹרִים *bitterly*, Ps. 58. 2; 75. 3, cf. 1 S. 15. 32 above. (3) The acc. may extend to a phrase, Josh. 9. 2, 1 K. 22. 13 אֶחָד *unanimously*, cf. Zeph. 3. 9; Lev. 26. 21, 23, 24, Pro. 7. 10, 2 S. 23. 3 ruling יִרְאַת א' *in the fear of God*. Ps. 83. 6 is a mixed consn. for לֵב אֶחָד (1 Chr. 12. 38). See § 140, R. 1. This usage of the noun is mostly poetical, prose rather employs a prep., לְבַטַח *confidently*, but בְּמַח Jud. 8. 11, &c., Lam. 1. 5 שָׁבִי *into captivity*, elsewhere בְּשָׁבִי; Ps. 119. 78, 86 שָׁקֵר *falsely, in vain*, usually לְשָׁקֵר 1 S. 25. 21. Jer. 23. 28, Ps. 73. 13, 119. 75, Job 21. 34. Comp. Is. 30. 7 with 49. 4; 65. 23. Ps. 119. 75 אֶמְיִנָה with 2 K. 12. 16.

Rem. 3. The acc. of restriction (§ 71) is usually an indef. noun, Gen. 3. 15; 37. 21, Ps. 3. 8. The phrase *smite in the bowels* is usually אֶל-הַחֹמֶשׁ, 2 S. 2. 23; 4. 6; 20. 10. In 3. 27 אֵל may have fallen out. The acc. 1 K. 15. 23 *in his feet* is בְּרַגְלָיו, 2 Chr. 16. 12, as is usual, cf. 2 S. 2. 18, Am. 2. 15 (so Arab. *fi rijlaihi*). The acc. of respect is little used after adjs. in Heb., the gen. consn. being employed; cf. § 24, R. 5. The place of acc. of resp. is often taken by a prep., 1 K. 22. 24 עַל-הַחַיִּי, Mic. 4. 14.

Rem. 4. The acc. of *motive*, so common in Arab., perhaps appears Is. 7. 25 יִרְאַת שִׁטִּיר *for (out of) fear of thorns*. —Possibly also הָיָה when = *become*, takes acc. after it, Hos. 8. 6 the calf of Sam. יִהְיֶה שִׁבְבִּים *shall become splinters*. The frequent use of prep. *l* makes this consn. probable; cf. Jer. 26. 18. So Eth.; the Ar. use is wider. And so perhaps verbs of similar meaning, as הִפֵּךְ *to turn* (also niph.), Jer. 2. 21, Lev. 13. 3, 4, 10.

### 3. The Acc. of the direct Object

§ 72. Many verbs govern the direct acc. in Kāl; and many of those intrans. in Kāl govern acc. in the Caus. (hiph. &c.). Of the latter kind are בָּיָא *come*; hiph. *bring*, &c.

Before the direct acc., when also *def.*, the particle אֵת is

common. It is greatly used before persons, and especially before pronouns, which it assumes as suff. in the case of the pers. pron. It is also used, however, before things. Gen. 2. 15 וַיִּקַּח אֶת-הָאָדָם he took *the man*; 2. 24 יָעֹזב אֶת-אָבִיו וְאֶת-אִמּוֹ shall leave *his father and his mother*; 4. 11 לְקַחַת אֶת-דַּמִּי אֶחָיִךְ to receive *thy brother's blood*; 40. 4 וַיִּשְׁרַת אֹתָם and he served *them*; 41. 10 וַיִּתֵּן אֹתִי and he put *me*. Though the use of אֵת is common, it is very often wanting, and is much less employed in poetry and elevated condensed style than in the broader prose writing. It is altogether wanting for ex. in the poems, Ex. 15., Deu. 32., Jud. 5., 1 S. 2., and other poetical passages.

Rem. 1. The direct obj. when a pron. is often appended to the verb. as suff., esp. in earlier style, Gen. 4. 8 וַיַּהַרְגֵהוּ and slew *him*; in later style אֹת with suff. has greater currency. But אֹת must be used in these cases: (a) when for the sake of emphasis the obj. is to be placed before the verb; Jud. 14. 3 אֶתְּהָא קָחֵלִי get *her* for me. Gen. 7. 1; 24. 14; 41. 13, 1 S. 8. 7; 21. 10, Hos. 2. 15. (b) When obj. is governed by inf. abs., which is too inflexible to receive suff.; Gen. 41. 43 וַיִּתֵּן אֹתוֹ and set *him* over, &c., 1 S. 2. 28, Jer. 9. 23, Ez. 36. 3. (c) When the verb, whether fin. or infin., has already a nearer suff. either of subj. or obj.; 2 S. 15. 25 וַיְהִי אֲנִי אֹתוֹ he will let *me* see *it*; Gen. 29. 20 בְּאַהֲבָתוֹ אֶתָּה because of *his* loving *her*. Gen. 19. 17; 38. 5, Deu. 7. 24, 1 S. 1. 23; 18. 3, 2 K. 8. 13—the form Deu. 31. 7 is unusual, cf. 1. 38; 19. 3. Similarly when subj. of inf. cons. is a noun, Deu. 22. 2. In Ar. and Eth., as in Ital., the verb can have two suff., a nearer and more remote.

Rem. 2. When several obj. under the same verb are coupled with *and* אֵת is usually repeated before each of them, esp. if they be distinct from one another, Gen. 1. 1. But usage fluctuates, the newer broader style multiplying אֵת. Gen. 8. 1; 10. 15-18; 12. 5, 20; 15. 19-21; 21. 10.

Rem. 3. The use of אֵת with any acc. except that of direct obj. is rare. (a) Of time, *how long*? Ex. 13. 7, Deu.

*This shows that usage was not fixed. The trouble is we have it in poet. text.*

9. 25; *when?* Lev. 25. 22. (b) Of place, *whither?* Nu. 4. 19, Jud. 19. 18, Ez. 21. 25. (c) Of restriction, Gen. 17. 11, 14, 25 (not 24), 1 K. 15. 23.

Rem. 4. To the rule that **אֵל** is used only before def. obj. there are apparent exceptions. First, it is used with undefined obj. (a) In poetry, which greatly dispenses with the art.; e.g. in the case of words denoting a *class*, Is. 41. 7; 50. 4, Pr. 13. 21. (b) In prose with words which are of the nature of pronoun, e.g. **כָּל** all, Deu. 2. 34, 2 S. 6. 1; **אֲחֵר** another, Jer. 16. 13. So with **אֶחָד** one; and Num. in general have a certain definiteness of their own, Gen. 21. 30, Nu. 16. 15, 1 S. 9. 3, 2 S. 15. 16. Comp. the usage with *man*, *woman*, in the sense of *any one*, Ex. 21. 28, Nu. 21. 9, cf. Lev. 20. 14. In some other cases the phrase though put indefinitely has a particular reference, e.g. 2 S. 4. 11 *a righteous man* (Ishbosheth), 1 S. 26. 20 *a flea* (one who is, &c.), i.e. David. In 2 S. 5. 24 *a known* kind of divine rustling is referred to, and *art.* of 1 Chr. 14. 15 might be accepted were it not the habit of Chron. to correct anomalies. 2 S. 18. 18 *pillar* might be cons. before rel., but text is uncertain (Sep.). 1 S. 24. 6 *of the robe* has prob. fallen out after *skirt* (Sep.). On 1 K. 12. 31; 16. 18, cf. § 22, R. 3.

Secondly, **אֵל** seems used otherwise than before the obj. (a) Some of the cases are only apparent. For ex. a neut. verb used impersonally with prep. and subj. is felt to have the force of an act. vb.; 2 S. 11. 25 **אֶל־יָרֵעַ בְּעֵינַי אֶת־הַדָּבָר** = *take not amiss* the thing; so 1 S. 20. 13 (**יִיטֵב** rd.) Neh. 9. 32 **אֶל־יִמְעַט לְפָנַי אֶת כָּל־הַחֲלָאָה** *regard not as little*; so even the noun **מַעַט** with prep. **לְ**, Josh. 22. 17. Similarly **הָיָה לְ** = *to have*, Josh. 17. 11; cf. the Eth. usage with prep. *ba*, in, with, as *baya* is *with me* = *I have*, followed by acc. (Dill. p. 343). (b) In some cases a particle like *behold*, or a verb like *thou hast*, *seest*, may float before the writer's mind under whose regimen the noun falls, as Ez. 43. 7 **אֶת־מְקוֹם בְּסֵאֵי ִי** *behold* (Sep. *thou seest*) the place of my throne. But in many cases **אֵל** seems merely to give emphasis or demonstrative distinctness to the subj., particularly the emph. which an *additional* or new thing has, or which is natural in *resuming* things already spoken of. 1 S. 26. 16 where is

the spear ואת־צֶפֶת and *the cruse?* 1 S. 17. 34 there came the lion ואת־הַלֵּוֹב and *the bear too* (the verbs are frequent.). Ex. of resumption, Jud. 20. 44, 2 S. 21. 22, 1 K. 2. 32, Ez. 14. 22, Zech. 8. 17. Other ex. Nu. 3. 26; 5. 10, 2 K. 6. 5, Jer. 27. 8; 36. 22, Ez. 17. 21; 35. 10; 44. 3 (47. 17-19?), Neh. 9. 19, 34, Hag. 2. 17, Zech. 7. 7, Ecc. 4. 3, Dan. 9. 13. Cf. Ez. 43. 17 after prep.; 1 S. 30. 23 text obscure (Sep.).

§ 73. Classes of verbs governing acc. of obj.—(a) As in other languages active verbs take acc. of obj., as נתן *give*, לקח *take*, שים *put*, רדף *pursue*. But so also many verbs properly *stative*, as אהב *love*, שנא *hate*, חפץ *desire*, and even יכל *to be able* (Is. 1. 13, *prevail over* Ps. 13. 5). So בכה *to weep for, bewail*.

(b) The causative of verbs intrans. in Kal, as בוא *come*, hiph. *bring*, יצא *go out*, hiph. *bring out*, עלה *ascend*, hiph. *bring up*, ירד *go down*, hiph. *bring down*, &c.

(c) Verbs of *fulness* and *want*, as מלא *be full of*, שבע *be satisfied with*, חסר *to want*, שכל *be bereaved of*. Is. 1. 11 שבעתי עלות אילים I am sated with *burnt-offerings of rams*; v. 15 ידיכם דמים מלאו your hands are full of *blood*; Deu. 2. 7 לא חסרת דבר thou didst want nothing. Gen. 18. 28; 27. 45, Ex. 15. 9. The acc. here is perhaps properly one of specification.—Pr. 25. 17 שבע with acc. of person, so מלא Ex. 15. 9.

(d) Verbs of *putting on* and *putting off* clothes, as לבש *put on*, פשט *strip*, עטה *be clothed with* (more poetical). 1 K. 22. 30 לבש בגדיה ואתה but *don thou thy robes*; 1 S. 19. 24 ויפשט גם־הוא בגדיו he, too, *stripped himself of his clothes*; 28. 14 והוא עטה מעיל wearing a robe. Gen. 38. 19, Deu. 22. 5, 1 S. 28. 8, Is. 49. 18, Lev. 6. 4, Song 5. 3. Is. 59. 17, Ps. 109. 29. For *put off* הסיר is often used.

(e) Verbs signifying to *inhabit, dwell in*, as ישב *dwell in*, שכן *id.*, גור *dwell with*, Is. 44. 13, Jer. 17. 6, Ps. 37. 3, Jud.

5. 17, Is. 33. 14, 16, Ps. 94. 17. In poetry even acc. of person, Ps. 5. 5; 120. 5.—The consn. with prep. is more usual in prose.

(f) Verbs of *speaking*, as *דַּבֵּר* *to speak to*, *עָנָה* *answer, hear*, *קָרָא* *call*, *צִוָּה* *command*, &c. But consn. with prep. is also common in most of these cases.

Rem. 1. The verbs *בָּוא* *go in*, *יָצָא* *come out*, may also be construed with acc., Jer. 10. 20 *בָּנֵי יִצְחָק* my children have gone out from me, 2 K. 20. 4, Jos. 8. 19. So *הִלַּךְ* in the sense of *go through, walk in* (different from acc. of goal, *whither?*) Deu. 1. 19; 2. 7, Is. 50. 10 (darkness), Job 29. 3.

Rem. 2. Under (c) may be classed such verbs as *שָׂרַץ* *to swarm with*, Ex. 7. 28, *פָּרַץ* *to multiply greatly*, cf. Pr. 3. 10. *נָזַל* *to flow with*, Jer. 9. 17, and similar verbs, as *שָׂטַף* *to overflow with*, Is. 10. 22; *יָרַד* *go down (flow) with*, Jer. 13. 17, Lam. 3. 48, Ps. 119. 136; *הִלָּךְ* *go (flow) with*, Jo. 4. 18; *נָטַף* *to drop*, Jud. 5. 4, Jo. 4. 18, Song 4. 11; and others. Also *עָלָה* *to come up (be overgrown) with*, Is. 5. 6 *וְעָלָה שִׁמְרֵי וְעָלָה* it shall come up in thorns and briars; 34. 13.

Rem. 3. Under (d) come such verbs as *אָזַר* *to gird (oneself) with*, 1 S. 2. 4; *הָגִיר* *to gird on*, 1 S. 25. 13, Is. 15. 3; *עָדָה* *to deck (oneself) with*, Hos. 2. 15, Is. 61. 10, Job 40. 10; and others which mostly occur with two acc.

Rem. 4. The pron. suff. is usually direct obj., but sometimes indirect, Zech. 7. 5 *צִמְתִּי אֲנִי* did ye fast for me? Job 31. 18 *גָּדַלְנִי כְּאָב* grew up to me as a father. This kind of consn. (instead of prep.) is easier with suff., e.g. Job 6. 4 *אַרְרָא אֶגְדָּלְכָּם* array against me, Neh. 9. 28 *בָּרַךְ אֶתְּךָ* cry unto thee, Is. 44. 21 *נִשְׁכַּח אֶתְּךָ* forgotten of me, Jer. 20. 7, 1 K. 16. 22, 2 Chr. 28. 20. In Is. 65. 5 *רַד. פִּי. קִדְשָׁתִּיךָ* stand back! I shall sanctify thee! cf. Ez. 44. 19.—So with reflex. vb. Ps. 109. 3, though such verbs may take direct acc., Gen. 37. 18, Jos. 18. 5, Jud. 19. 22, Is. 14. 2. Ps. 42. 5 *אֶרְדֵּם* is explained by Hitz. in *Rücksicht auf sie*; perhaps *pi. אֶרְדֵּם*.

Rem. 5. The pron. obj. is often omitted contrary to our idiom, particularly after vbs. of *giving, bringing, putting, telling*, and others. Gen. 2. 19 *וַיָּבֵא* and brought them, 1 S. 17. 31 *וַיַּגִּידוּ* they told them, 1 S. 19. 13 *וַתִּשֶׂם* she put them. Gen. 12. 19; 18. 7; 27. 13, 14; 38. 18, Deu. 21. 12.—Different

is the case where certain verbs by a brachylogy may omit their obj. *e.g.* נשא נשא *lift up*, sc. קול, Is. 3. 7; 42. 2. ל נשא *forgive*, sc. עון, Is. 2. 9, Gen. 18. 24. ברית sc. ברית 1 S. 20. 16, 2 Chr. 7. 18. הפיל sc. נורל *lot*, 1 S. 14. 42, Job 6. 27, cf. Jud. 18. 1. שים sc. לב Job 4. 20, so בונן Job 8. 8. נטר *to retain*, sc. אף *anger*, Jer. 3. 5, Ps. 103. 9. שלח sc. יד 2 S. 6. 6. הקשה sc. ערף *neck*, Job 9. 4, cf. Jer. 7. 26. So מלא אחרי sc. ללכת *to go*, Jos. 14. 14. In 1 S. 24. 11 *eye* seems om., but perh. *rd.* 1st pers. with Sep. Syr. Cf. 2 K. 10. 13.

Rem. 6. Sometimes the obj. is regarded as the *instrument* or *means* by which the action is realised, and construed with prep. ב. Ex. 7. 20 הרים בַּמִּטָּה *to lift up with the rod*, Lam. 1. 17 פָּרְשָׁה בְיָדֶיהָ *she stretches out with her hands*. Jer. 18. 16 *to wag with the head*; Job 16. 10 *to open with the mouth*, Ps. 22. 8; Job 16. 9 *to gnash with the teeth*; Jer. 12. 8 *to give forth with the voice*. Cf. Pr. 6. 13. So the phrase קרא בִּשְׁם *to call with the name = invoke* Gen. 4. 26, *proclaim* Ex. 34. 5, &c.

Rem. 7. The direction of the action upon obj. is sometimes indicated by prep. ל, particularly with ptc. and inf. whose rection is weaker than that of fin. vb. Is. 11. 9 לִים מְכַסִּים *covering the sea*, cf. different order, Hab. 2. 14. Am. 6. 3, Is. 14. 2. The caus. (hiph., pi.) not uncommonly reaches its obj. by ל, Nu. 32. 15, 1 S. 23. 10 (2 S. 3. 30), Is. 29. 2, Am. 8. 9, Hos. 10. 1, cf. Jer. 40. 2, Ps. 69. 6; 73. 18, Job 11. 6.—In later style ל is used in all the senses of את, *e.g.* (a) direct obj. 1 Chr. 16. 37; 25. 1; 29. 22, Ezr. 8. 16, 24. (b) resumptive (or appos.) 1 Chr. 5. 26, 2 Chr. 2. 12; 23. 1, Ps. 136. 19, 20. (c) giving prominence to preposed subj.

#### 4. Verbs with two Acc. of the Object

§ 74. Many verbs and forms of verbs govern two objects. There are several cases. First, when the two obj. (generally a pers. and a thing) have no relation to one another, and could not stand as subj. and pred. in a simple proposition, as, he showed *him the place*. Secondly, when the two obj.



are so related that in a simple sentence the one might be pred. of the other, as *man is dust*; he made *man* (of) *dust*. Thirdly, in a wider way, when the action is performed upon the main obj. through the medium of some other thing, this *means* as coming also under the action of the verb is considered a remoter *obj.*, as, they stoned *him* (with) *stones*.

§ 75. To the first class belong—(a) The causatives of verbs transitive in the *Kal*; Deu. 8. 3 וַיִּאֱכֹלֶה אֶת־הַמָּן he fed thee with manna; Jud. 4. 19 הִשְׁקִינִנָּה מַעַרְמִים give me a little water to drink; 4. 22 אֶרְאֶךָ אֶת־הָאִישׁ I will show thee the man. So הוֹדִיעַ to show, 1 S. 14. 12; הִבֵּן, הוֹרָה; to show Is. 28. 9; הִנְחִיל make to inherit, Deu. 3. 29; 31. 7; לָמַד to teach, Jud. 3. 2, Deu. 4. 5; הִשְׁמִיעַ cause to hear, 2 K. 7. 6, Song 2. 14. 2 K. 6. 6; 11. 4. An ex. of three acc. 2 K. 8. 13 showed me thee king, &c.

(b) The caus. of verbs of plenty and want (§ 73 c) אָמַלְאוּ אֶת־כִּלְיָהֶם בָּר they filled their sacks with corn; 26. 15. 1 K. 18. 13 וַיִּסְמְּנוּ לָהֶם וְלִבְנֵיהֶם I supported them with bread and water, Gen. 47. 12, Is. 50. 4. הִשְׁבִּיעַ to satisfy with, Ps. 132. 15. חָפַר to make want, Ps. 8. 6. רָוָה to water with, Is. 16. 9. Cf. Jud. 19. 5, Ps. 51. 14; 104. 15, Lam. 3. 15. Some cases may belong to a.

(c) The caus. of verbs of clothing with, stripping off (§ 73 d). Under this may come verbs of covering, girding, surrounding with, overlaying or plating with, crowning, &c. 1 S. 17. 38 וַיִּלְבֹּשׁ אֶת־דָּוִד מִדָּוִד he put his garments on David, Gen. 41. 42, Ps. 132. 16, 18. Gen. 37. 23 וַיִּשְׁרֹטוּ אֶת־בְּגָדָיו they stripped Joseph of his coat. Nu. 20. 26, 28, Is. 22. 21. If the action be performed on oneself one acc. may be represented by reflex., 1 S. 18. 4 וַיִּתְּשַׁעַט he stripped himself of the robe. Comp. § 73, R. 4.

(d) Verbs of asking, answering, calling, commanding in

These are very,  
who separate acc.  
from chance  
and kind a kind  
then. Others are  
separating from  
separate acc. in  
and from from  
and some substituted  
a special accusative of  
the verb.  
§ 75 faulty.

the sense of *intrusting to*, &c. (§ 73 f). Is. 58. 2 **יִשְׁאַלּוּנִי** **מִשְׁפָּטֵי צְדָקָה** they ask *me for judgments* of righteousness. 1 K. 12. 13 **וַיַּעַן אֶת־הָעָם קָשָׁה** he returned *the people a harsh answer*, 1 S. 20. 10. So the phrase **הֵשִׁיב דְּבַר**, Gen. 37. 14 **וַהֲשִׁיבֵנִי דְּבַר** and return *me an answer* (or, bring *me word*), 2 S. 24. 13, 1 K. 12. 6. 1 S. 21. 3 **הִמְלִךְ צִנְיָ דְּבַר** intrusted *me with a matter*. So **שָׁלַח** in this sense, Ex. 4. 28, 1 K. 14. 6. To *call*, Gen. 41. 51, 52. Is. 45. 11, Ps. 137. 3. 1 K. 18. 21.

Similarly the verbs in § 73, R. 1; **הוֹלִיךְ** Hos. 2. 16, Deu. 8. 2, Lam. 3. 2.

§ 76. When two nouns might form the subj. and pred. in a simple affirmation they become under a verb a double obj. acc. There are two cases: e.g. *man is dust*;—he made *man* of *dust* (so-called acc. of *Material*); and, *the stones are an altar*;—he built *the stones* into *an altar* (so-called acc. of *Product*). The nearer obj. is usually *def.* and the more remote *indef.* Such verbs are those of *making, placing, putting, appointing*, and verbs of the mind as to *see, know, consider, think, find*, &c. Gen. 2. 7 **וַיַּצֵּר אֶת־הָאָדָם עֹפָר** he made *the man* (out of) *dust* of the ground. Deu. 27. 6 **וְיִבְנֶה אֶת־מִזְבֵּחַ יְהוָה** (of) *whole stones* shalt thou build *the altar* of Je. Gen. 27. 9, Ex. 20. 25; 25. 18, 28; 38. 3, 1 K. 7. 15, 27.—1 K. 18. 32 **וַיִּבְנֶה אֶת־הָאֲבָנִים מִזְבֵּחַ** he built *the stones* into *an altar*. Is. 3. 7 **לֹא תִשְׁמְנִי קִצְיוֹן עָם** appoint *me* not *a ruler* of a people, 5. 6; 28. 15, Gen. 28. 18, Ex. 32. 4, 1 S. 28. 2, Mic. 4. 13; 6. 7. Deu. 1. 15 **וַהֲתִין אֹתָם** **וְרָאשִׁים** and I made *them heads*, 1 K. 14. 7, Is. 3. 4. Gen. 15. 6 **וַיַּחְשְׁבֶהָ לוֹ צְדָקָה** he counted *it righteousness* to him.

The same consn. occurs with adj. and ptpc., which then forms a predicate acc. (tertiary pred.). Gen. 7. 1 **אֶתֶּה רְאִיתִי** **יְתִנְךָ** **יְנֻכָּה** *thee* have I perceived *righteous*, Deu. 28. 25 **יְנֻכָּה** *thee* have I perceived *righteous*, Deu. 28. 25

The fact that  
אֶת־ stands before  
either of them  
shows that the  
accusative is used  
in both cases.  
Hence any אֶת  
may be used in  
either acc. place.  
as above.  
there is no  
distinction.

Je. shall make *thee defeated*, v. 7. Jer. 22. 30, Is. 53. 4; 26. 7. 2 K. 14. 26.

§ 77. More generally, when in reaching the main obj. the verb brings some other thing under its action, both are put in acc. of obj. Is. 5. 2 **וַיִּטְעֵהוּ שֵׂרֶק** he planted *it* with *choice vines*, Jud. 9. 45 **וַיִּזְרְעָהּ מֶלַח** he sowed *it* with *salt*. Mic. 7. 2 hunts *his brother* with *a net*, Mal. 3. 24 smite *the earth* with (into) *a curse*, Ps. 64. 8 shoot *at them* with *arrows*; Ps. 45. 8 anointed *thee* with *oil*; 2 K. 19. 32 (**קִדְּמָה** *pi.*); Ps. 88. 8. Jos. 7. 25 **וַיִּרְגְּמוּ אוֹתוֹ אֲבָן** they stoned *him* with *stones*, Lev. 24. 23, 2 Chr. 24. 21; also with **ב** *instrum.*, and so **סָקַל** *to stone* always, Jos. 7. 25, Deu. 13. 11, 1 K. 21. 13.—Pr. 13. 24.

§ 78. Besides the double obj. verbs may have two acc. of different kinds, as obj. and *cog. acc.*, 1 K. 2. 8 **קָלַלְנִי קָלָלָהּ** *cursed me* with *a bitter curse*, 2 K. 17. 21, 1 K. 8. 55; acc. of *condition*, Gen. 27. 6 **שָׁמַעְתִּי אֶת־אָבִיךָ מְדַבֵּר** I heard *thy father speaking*; acc. of *restriction*, Gen. 37. 21 smite *him* as *to life* (mortally); acc. *loci*, 37. 24 they cast *him* **הַבּוֹרָה** *into the pit*, &c.

Rem. 1. Under § 75 *b* may come verbs of *giving, granting, &c.*, נתן, חַן *to grant* Gen. 33. 5; to *bless with* Gen. 49. 25, 28; to *requite with* שָׁלַם 1 S. 24. 18, Ps. 35. 12.

Rem. 2. Under § 75 *c* might be classed כָּסָה *pi. to cover*, Mal. 2. 13, Ps. 104. 6; חָזַר *pi. to gird* Ps. 18. 33, חָנַר *to gird* Ex. 29. 9; סָבַב *surround with* 1 K. 5. 17, עָטַר *pi. to surround with, crown* Ps. 5. 13; 8. 6; 103. 4; סָפַן *to ciel with* 1 K. 6. 9; צָפָה *pi.*, חָפָה *pi. to overlay with* 1 K. 6. 20, 21, 22, Ex. 25. 11, 28, 2 Chr. 3. 4–9; טָח *to daub with* Ez. 13. 10. Song 3. 10 paved *with love*. Some of these cases might be classed under § 77.

Rem. 3. Under § 76 come such verbs as עָשָׂה *make*, בָּנָה *build*, נָתַן *make, put*, Jos. 9. 27; 11. 6, 1 K. 14. 7. שָׂם *put*, 1 S. 28. 2, 2 K. 10. 8, Is. 28. 15, Ps. 80. 7; 105. 21. שָׂא *put* Is. 5. 6, Ps. 21. 7; 88. 9; 110. 1. בָּרָא *create*, Is. 65.

18. הפך *to turn into* Ps. 114. 8. Ex. of so-called acc. of product, 1 K. 11. 30 rent *it* into 12 *pieces*, Am. 6. 11 smite *the house* into fissures, Hab. 3. 9 cleave *the ground* into rivers, Ps. 74. 2. Ar. Gram. regards such cases as acc. of specification.

Rem. 4. The affinity of the consn. § 76 to the usage of Apposition (§ 29) is evident. The two obj. are virtually in Appos. 2 Chr. 2. 15.

Rem. 5. For second obj. ל is frequently used, esp. with persons, Gen. 2. 22 built the rib אֶת־הָאִשָּׁה into a woman; 12. 2 I will make thee לְנִי a nation. With שִׁים Is. 14. 23; 23. 13; 28. 17. So חָשַׁב *to reckon* Gen. 38. 15, 1 S. 1. 13, and usually; *to turn into* Am. 6. 12, &c. And prep. for 2nd acc. is common in other cases, as *to satisfy with* בְּ Is. 58. 11, Lam. 3. 15; *to smite on the cheek* עַל, Mic. 4. 14; *to overlay with* בְּ, Jer. 10. 4, 2 K. 19. 1.

Rem. 6. Ecc. 7. 25 לִדְעוֹת רָשָׁע בְּכָל to know *wickedness* (to be) *folly*, is an ex. of verb of the mind. The consn. with כִּי *that* is more usual. Ar. Gr. draws a distinction between verbs like *to see*, &c. as verbs of *sense* and as verbs of the mind. In both cases they take 2 acc., but the 2nd acc. differs. I saw *him sleeping* (verb of sense), *sleeping* is acc. of condition; in the other case it is 2nd obj., *perceived him* (to be) *sleeping* = *that* he was sleeping, pred. acc.

Rem. 7. Two acc. appear in the phrase עָשָׂה בָּלָה *to make* (to be) a *full end*, utterly destroy, Neh. 9. 31 עֲשִׂיתָם בָּלָה, Nah. 1. 8, Jer. 30. 11, though אַחֵם seems prep. Jer. 5. 18. Strong consns. occur in poetry, Ps. 21. 13, put *them the back* שָׁבָם, 18. 41 make *them the back* עָרַף, i.e. cause them to turn the back (in flight) to one. Ex. 23. 27.

Rem. 8. Sentences beginning with כִּי, אֲשֶׁר, אֲשֶׁר *that*, *how that*, after *tell*, *show*, &c. form virtually a 2nd obj. § 146. And so words with כִּי *as*, *for*, Gen. 42. 30 held us אֶת־בְּמִרְגָּלִים *spies*, Ps. 44. 12.—Unique perhaps is הִנִּיד with 2 acc., Ez. 43. 10. 2 S. 15. 31 רָד. וְהִנִּיד; 2 K. 7. 9 בֵּית is acc. *loci*; Job 26. 4 אֶת־מִי = *by whose help* (inspiration), as Gen. 4. 1, according to parallel clause.

## 5. Construction of the Passive

§ 79. When *one obj.* is governed by the act. this may become subj. of the pass., as in other languages. But frequently the pass. is used, as we say, impersonally (3 sing. mas.), and governs in the same way as the act.—the idea being that the pass. expresses an action of which the agent is unknown, or, not named. 1 K. 2. 21 יָתַן אֶת־אֲבִישָׁג *let Abishag be given*; Jer. 35. 14 הוֹקֵם אֶת־דִּבְרֵי יְהוֹנָדָב the commands of Jon. *are performed*; Gen. 40. 20 יוֹם הֵלֵדָתָא the day Ph. *was born* (inf.). Ex. 21. 28 לֹא יֵאָכַל אֶת־בָּשָׂרוֹ its flesh *shall not be eaten*. Gen. 4. 18; 27. 42, Ex. 10. 8, Deu. 12. 22, Jos. 9. 24, 2 S. 21. 6, 11, 1 K. 18. 13, 2 K. 5. 17, Hos. 10. 6, Am. 4. 2, Jer. 38. 4.

§ 80. When *two obj.* are governed in the act. the nearer of the two usually becomes subj. of the pass., and the more remote is retained in accus. Is. 6. 4 וְהַבֵּית יִמְלֵא עָשָׁן and the house was filled *with smoke*; Ex. 1. 7, Is. 2. 7, 8; 38. 10. Gen. 31. 15 הֲלוֹא נִכְרִיּוֹת נִחְשְׁבָנוּ לוֹ are we not counted *for strangers* by him? Cf. 15. 6, Is. 40. 17. Mic. 3. 12 צִיּוֹן שָׂדֶה תִּחְרֹשׁ Zion shall be ploughed *into a field*; Is. 6. 11; 24. 12. 1 K. 6. 7 הַבַּיִת שֶׁלֹּמֶה בָּנָה was built *of unhewn stones*, Ezr. 5. 8, cf. Deu. 27. 6.—Gen. 17. 11, Ex. 13. 7; 25. 31, Lev. 6. 9, Jud. 18. 11, 1 K. 7. 14; 14. 6 (cf. Ex. 4. 28); 22. 10, Ps. 80. 11, Pr. 24. 31. So cog. acc. Jer. 14. 17.

§ 81. The connexion between the real personal agent and pass. vb. is usually expressed by prep. ל. Gen. 14. 19 בָּרֹךְ לְאֵל עֲלֵיוֹן blessed *by God*; 31. 15 נִחְשְׁבָנוּ לוֹ we are counted *by him*; Is. 65. 1 נִמְצָאתִי לֹלָא בְקוֹשְׁנֵי I was to be found *by those who sought me not*. Gen. 25. 21, Ex. 12. 16, Jos. 17. 16, 1 S. 15. 13, Jer. 8. 3, Neh. 6. 1. More rarely by מן (*from, of source*), Hos. 7. 4 מֵאֹפֶה הִנֵּי אֵתָא an oven heated *by a baker* (text doubtful), Lev. 21. 7; cf. Jud. 14. 4,

Mal. 1. 9, Job 4. 9, 1 Chr. 5. 22. Prep. מן is usual of *cause* or means, not personal. Gen. 9. 11 יִכָּרֵת מִמֵּי הַמַּבּוּל be cut off *by the waters* of the flood, Ob. 9, Job 7. 14. Prep. ב (through, of instrum.) is also used of persons, Gen. 9. 6 יִשָּׁפַד בְּאָדָם דָּמוֹ through men shall his blood be shed.

Rem. 1. More rarely the remoter obj. becomes subj. of pass., Lev. 13. 49 וְהִרְאָה אֶת־הַכֹּהֵן and it shall be shown *to the priest*, cf. Ex. 26. 30. So Ar. can say, 'u'tiya zeidan dirhamun, a dirhem was given Zeid, though usually, Zeid was given a dirhem (zeidun dirhaman).

Rem. 2. It is seldom that both acc. of act. are retained in pass., Nu. 14. 21, Ps. 72. 19. Such impers. use of pass. is easier when the act. governs one acc. and prep., Gen. 2. 23 יִקְרָא אִשָּׁה לְזֶאת this shall be called woman (acc.), Is. 1. 26, Nu. 16. 29. Of course all acc. except that of the obj. must be retained in pass.

Rem. 3. The exx. given above show that the use of acc. after pass. is classical, though the usage perhaps increased in later style. It is common with יָלַד to bear, Gen. 4. 18 (J); 21. 5; 46. 20, Nu. 26. 60. The consn. of this word in some cases is uncertain, Gen. 35. 26 (Sam. pl.), cf. 36. 5, 1 Chr. 2. 3, 9; 3. 1, 4. Other exx. Gen. 21. 8, Nu. 7. 10. Ex. 25. 28; 27. 7, Lev. 16. 27. Nu. 11. 22; 26. 55 (cf. v. 53); 32. 5. Gen. 17. 5; 35. 10. Gen. 17. 11, 14, 24, 25 (acc. of restriction). In some cases where noun with אֵת precedes the pass. the אֵת may merely give definiteness to the subj., Jud. 6. 28; and in other cases אֵת may be resumptive, Jos. 7. 15.

Rem. 4. The pass. *be heard* in sense of *answered* is niph. of עָנָה, Job 19. 7, Pr. 21. 13. Pass. of שָׁמַע does not seem used in this sense with personal subj. (cf. Del. N.T. Matt. 6. 7).

#### SUBORDINATION OF ONE VERB TO ANOTHER

§ 82. There are two cases—(a) When the first verb expresses the *mode* of the action denoted by the second. In this case the second verb expresses the real action, and the first has to be rendered adverbially. Gen. 31. 27 נִתְּבַחַת

הִקְשִׁיתָ לְשֹׂאֵל לָרֶחַק thou hast fled away *secretly*; 2 K. 2. 10 thou hast asked *a hard thing* (lit. *done hardly as to asking*); Ex. 8. 24 לֹא תִרְחֲקוּ לָלֶכֶת ye shall not go *far away*; Ps. 55. 8. Jer. 13. 18 הִשְׁפִּילוּ שִׁבּוֹ sit down *low*. 1 S. 1. 12; 2. 3; 16. 17, 2 S. 19. 4, 1 K. 14. 9, 2 K. 21. 6, Is. 23. 16; 29. 15; 55. 7, Jer. 1. 12; 16. 12, Hos. 9. 9, Am. 4. 4, Jon. 4. 2, Ezr. 10. 13, 2 Chr. 20. 35. The consn. is common with שׁוּב *to do again*, הִרְבָּה, הִגְדִּיל &c.

(b) When the two verbs express distinct ideas. Gen. 11. 8 וַיַּחְדְּלוּ לְבִנּוֹת הָעִיר and they *gave up building* the city; 1 S. 18. 2 וְלֹא נָתַנוּ לָשׁוּב he did not *allow* him to *return*. 1 S. 17. 39 *rd.* perhaps לָלֶכֶת וַיֵּלֶךְ.

§ 83. Modes of connection.—(a) The second verb is subordinated to the first in *inf. cons.*, with, or less commonly without, ל, or still less commonly in *infin. abs.* See exx. above, and cf. § 90 c.

(b) The verbs are *co-ordinated* in the same tense-form with *vav*. Gen. 24. 18 וַתַּחֲמֹד וַתֵּרֶד כִּדָּה she *hasted to let down* her pitcher; 44. 11. 2 K. 6. 3 הוּא־לִנָּה רָלָה *consent to go*; Jud. 19. 6. Gen. 25. 1 וַיִּקַּח אִשָּׁה אַבְרָם and *took another wife*; 1 K. 19. 6 וַיִּשָּׁב וַיִּשְׁכַּב and he *lay down again*; 2 K. 1. 11, 13. Instead of the same tense the equivalent *vav conv.* form may be used, Hos. 2. 11 אָשׁוּב אֶלְקַחְתִּי I *will take back again*. Gen. 27. 42, 2 S. 7. 29, 1 S. 20. 31, Is. 6. 13, Mal. 1. 4, Job 6. 9.—Jos. 7. 7, Is. 1. 19, Est. 8. 6, Dan. 9. 25.

(c) The verbs are co-ordinated without *vav*, *asyndetously*. Esp. in imper.; 2 K. 5. 23 קח כְּפָרִים הוּאֵל *please take* two talents; 1 S. 3. 5 שָׁכַב שׁוּב *lie down again*; v. 9, Gen. 19. 22, Deu. 2. 24. Jos. 5. 2, Is. 21. 12, Jer. 13. 18, Ps. 51. 4.—*Impf.* Hos. 1. 6 אֶחְסֶיהֶם עוֹד אֶרְחָם I *will no more pity*; Gen. 30. 31 אֶשׁוּבָה אֶרְעָה צֹאנֶךָ I *will keep* thy flock *again*; 1 S. 2. 3 אַל-תִּדְּבָרוּ תִּדְּבָרוּ *speak not always*. Mic.

7. 19, Lam. 4. 14, Ps. 50. 20; 88. 11; 102. 14, Job 10. 16; 19. 3; 24. 14. Or with equivalent *vav conv.*, Is. 29. 4 וְשָׁלַחְתָּ מֵאֶרֶץ הַדְּבַר thou shalt speak low out of the ground (1 S. 20. 19 rd. תִּפְקַד וְשָׁלַחְתָּ shalt be greatly missed a third time, cf. v. 18).—*Perf.* Ps. 106. 13 קָדְרוּ שָׁכָחוּ speedily they forgot. Hos. 5. 11; 9. 9, Zeph. 3. 7, Zech. 8. 15.—*Ptcp.* Hos. 6. 4; 13. 3.—The vigorous וְכָלְנִי הִרְתִּי Gen. 31. 40 reminds of Ar. *kuntu . . . ya'kuluni*;—more usually with inchoative *pendens*, as Gen. 24. 27. § 106.

Rem. 1. The second verb is occasionally subordinated in *impf.*, Is. 42. 21 חִפֵּץ לִמְעַן צִדְקוֹ יִנְהַיֵּל Je. was pleased to make great; Job 32. 22 לֹא יִרְעָתִי אֶכְנֶה I am not good at flattering; Is. 47. 1 לֹא תוֹסִיפִי יִקְרָאוּ לְךָ thou shalt no more be called. Lev. 9. 6, Nu. 22. 6, Lam. 1. 10. The consn. is more common in Syr., Noeld. § 267.

Rem. 2. In a few instances the *ptcp.* or an *adj.* is subordinated (*acc.*). Is. 33. 1 בְּהִתְחַסֵּד שׂוֹדֵד when thou art done destroying; 1 S. 3. 2 תֵּיטֵן חֲחֹלוֹ בְּהוֹת his eyes had begun to be dim. 1 S. 16. 16, Hos. 7. 4, Jer. 22. 30, Neh. 10. 29. So probably a noun, Gen. 9. 20, N. began (as) a husbandman (*acc.*). The consn., and N., the husbandman, began and planted (was the first to plant, or, planted for the first time, Gen. 10. 8, 1 S. 14. 35; 22. 15), is rather unnatural, though cf. the appos. Gen. 37. 2. In this sense “begin” is usually followed by *inf.*, but cf. Ezr. 3. 8.—“One of them,” says—

“Or (nae reflection on your lear),  
Ye may commence a shaver,” &c.

Rem. 3. The *asyndetous consn.* § 83c is very common in Syr., Noeld. § 337. In Ar. the older and classical consn. was with *fu*, and, Wr. ii. § 140; de Lag. *Uebersicht*, p. 209 *seq.*, does not alter this fact.

Rem. 4. Such words as לָךְ, לָכֵּה come, קום arise, are used almost as interjections though construed regularly, Is. 22. 15 לָךְ-בֹּא, 1 K. 1. 13 לָכֵּי וּבֹאִי v. 12, Gen. 19. 15, 1 S. 9. 5. The *mas.* לָכֵּה is even used to a woman, Gen. 19. 32. Both verbs often merely confer liveliness on the real action, Hos. 5. 15; 6. 1, Gen. 19. 35, Ps. 88. 11. Some fixed compound



phrases express only a *single* idea, as וַיֵּעַן וַיֹּאמֶר *answered and said*, וַתֵּהָר וַתֵּלֶד *conceived and bore* = *she bore*, Gen. 21. 2. Text 1 S. 1. 20 is probably quite right. Comp. 1 Chr. 4. 17 where וַתֵּהָר alone is used for the whole phrase.

Rem. 5. In some instances the modifying verb stands second, Jer. 4. 5 קָרְאוּ מְלֵא *cry with full voice*, cf. 12. 6 קָרְאוּ מְלֵא. Is. 53. 11, Jo. 2. 26.

### THE NOMEN ACTIONIS OR INFINITIVE

#### 1. *Infinitive Absolute*

§ 84. The infin. abs. as an abstract noun expresses the bare idea of the verbal action, apart from the modifications which subject-inflections or tense-forms lend to it. Used along with the inflected form it gives emphasis to the expression of the action, and, when used alone, graphically represents the action in its exercise, continuance, prevalence, and the like, sometimes almost with the force of an exclamation.

Construction of inf. abs.—Expressing the bare notion of the verb the inf. abs. refuses to enter into close construction, receiving neither suffixes nor prep. It may, however—

(a) Be the subj. in a nominal sent., esp. when the pred. is טוב *good*, or לא טוב (in poet. בֶּל טוֹב) *not good*, but also otherwise. Pr. 28. 21 הִכָּרְפָּנִים לֹא טוֹב *to be partial is not good*. 1 S. 15. 23, Jer. 10. 5, Pr. 24. 23; 25. 27, Job 25. 2. In Job 6. 25 it is subj. to a verbal sent.

(b) Or the obj. of a verb. Is. 1. 17 לִמְדוּ הַיָּטֵב *learn to do well*; 42. 24 לֹא אָבוּ הָלֹךְ *they willed not to walk*. Is. 7. 15; 57. 20, Pr. 15. 12, Job 9. 18; 13. 3. Rarely in gen. Is. 14. 23 בְּמִשְׁאֵט הַשִּׁמְד *with the besom of destruction*. Pr. 1. 3; 21. 16. Cf. Rem. 1.

(c) It may govern like its own finite verb, e.g. acc., Hos. 10. 4 בָּרִית בָּרִית *making covenants*; Is. 22. 13 בָּקֵר בָּקֵר *kill oxen and slaying sheep*. Is. 5. 5; 21. 5;

59. 4, 13, Pr. 25. 4, 5. Or prep., Is. 7. 15 מָאוֹס בָּרַע וּבָחַר to refuse *evil* and choose *good*. It is not followed by *gen.* either of noun or pron.

Rem. 1. 1 S. 1. 9 is the only ex. of inf. abs. with prep. (text dubious). The inf. abs. tends, however, to become a real noun (Job 25. 2, Lam. 3. 45), and may take prep. when so used, Is. 30. 15, and also when used adverbially, Neh. 5. 18. The inf. cons. hiph. is occasionally pointed like inf. abs., e.g. Deu. 32. 8, Jer. 44. 19, 25, which introduces some uncertainty (Deu. 26. 12, Neh. 10. 39 should perhaps be read *pi.*). Inf. abs. as obj. seems to occur first in Is.

§ 85. Use of inf. abs.—The inf. abs. is used *first*, along with the forms of its own verb, to add emphasis. In this case it stands chiefly before its verb, but also after it. *Secondly*, it is used adverbially to describe the action of a previous verb. And, *thirdly*, it is used instead of the finite or other inflected forms of the verb.

§ 86. Use along with its own verb.—(a) When *before* its verb the kind of emphasis given by inf. abs. may be of various kinds, e.g. that of strong *asseveration* in promises or threats; that of *antithesis* in adversative statements; the emphasis natural in a *supposition* or *concession*; and that of *interrogation*, particularly when the speaker is animated, and throws into the question an intonation of surprise, scorn, dislike, &c. Such shades cannot be reproduced in translation. Occasionally such a word as *indeed*, *surely* (Gen. 2. 17), *forsooth* (37. 8), *of course* (43. 7), *at all* (Hos. 1. 6), &c., may bring out the sense, but oftenest the kind of emphasis is best expressed by an intonation of the voice.

Ex. of *asseveration*: Gen. 2. 17 תָּמוּת תָּמוּת *thou shalt (surely) die!* 16. 10; 18. 10, 2 S. 5. 19. Frequently in injunctions; Ex. 21. 28 יִסְקַל הַשּׂוֹר the ox *shall be stoned*, 23. 4, Deu. 12. 2, and often. *Antithesis*: Jud. 15. 13 לֹא כִּי אָסַר נֶאֱסַרָה תְּהִיט לֹא נִמְתָּה *nay, we will bind*

*thee, but we will not kill thee.* 2 S. 24. 24, Deu. 7. 26; 13. 10; 21. 14, and often, 1 S. 6. 3, 1 K. 11. 22, Am. 9. 8, Is. 28. 28, Jer. 32. 4; 34. 3. *Supposition* (very common): Ex. 21. 5 **וְאִם יֹאמַר הָעֶבֶד** *but if the slave should say.* Jud. 11. 30, Ex. 22. 3, 11, 12, 16, 22, Jud. 14. 12, 1 S. 1. 11; 20. 6, 9, 21, 2 S. 18. 3. So *concession*: Gen. 31. 30 **וַעֲתָה הֲלֹךְ** *well, thou hast gone off* because, &c. (but why steal my gods?). 1 S. 2. 30. In *questions*: Gen. 24. 5 **הֲשֵׁב** *am I, then, to bring back?* 37. 8, 10 **הֲמֹלֵךְ** *shalt thou rule* (forsooth) over us? 43. 7 **הֲיָדַע** *were we (then) to know?* Nu. 22. 30, 37, 38, Jud. 11. 25, 1 S. 2. 27, 2 K. 18. 33, Is. 50. 2, Jer. 26. 19, Ez. 14. 3; 18. 23, Zech. 7. 5.

The peculiar emphasis of inf. abs. is well felt when a speaker gives a report regarding circumstances, or repeats (directly or indirectly) the words of another, or his own thoughts. Gen. 43. 3, 7, Jud. 9. 8; 15. 2, 1 S. 10. 16; 14. 28, 43; 20. 3, 6, 28; 23. 22, 2 S. 1. 6. Also when restrictive particles, **אֲדָּה**, **אֲדָּה**, are used, Gen. 27. 30; 44. 28, Jud. 7. 19.

(b) In negative sent. inf. abs. precedes the neg. Is. 30. 19 **לֹא תִבְכֶּה בְּכֹךְ** *thou shalt not weep.* Jud. 15. 13 above, Ex. 8. 24; 34. 7, Deu. 21. 14, Jud. 1. 28, 1 K. 3. 27, Am. 3. 5, Jer. 6. 15; 13. 12. With **אֵל**, 1 K. 3. 26, Mic. 1. 10. Exceptions occur mostly when a denial is given to previous words, Gen. 3. 4, Am. 9. 8, Ps. 49. 8.

(c) When placed after its verb inf. abs. has often the same force as when before it. 2 K. 5. 11 **אֲמַרְתִּי אֵלַי יֵצֵא** *I thought, He will (certainly) come out unto me.* Nu. 23. 11, 2 S. 3. 24; 6. 20, Jer. 23. 39, Dan. 11. 10, 13. In this case inf. abs. is sometimes strengthened by **גַּם**. Gen. 46. 4 **וְאָנֹכִי אֶעֱלֶה גַם-עִלָּה** *I will also bring thee up*; 31. 15, Nu. 16. 13. Inf. abs. always stands after *imper.* and *ptcp.*, Nu. 11. 15 **הָרַגְנִי כִּי הָרַג** *kill me rather* (at once); Jer. 22. 10

לְהִלָּךְ בָּכוּ בָּכוּ *weep, indeed*, for him that is gone away. Jud. 5. 23, Is. 6. 9. With ptc. Jer. 23. 17, Is. 22. 17, Jud. 11. 25?

But inf. abs. after its verb suggests an indefinitely prolonged state of the action, and therefore expresses continuance, prevalence, &c. Nu. 11. 32 וַיִּשְׁטְחוּ לָהֶם שְׂטוֹחַ *and they went spreading them out* (the quails). Jer. 6. 29. This use is clearer when another inf. abs. is added; Jud. 14. 9 וַיֵּלֶךְ הָלֹךְ וְאָכַל *he went on, eating as he went*; Gen. 8. 7 וַיֵּצֵא יָצֵא וְשׁוּב *and it went (always) out and back*. 1 S. 6. 12, 1 K. 20. 37, 2 K. 2. 11, Is. 19. 22. This use is akin to the adverbial use, cf. 2 K. 21. 13, where *rd.* probably וְהָפֹךְ מִזֶּה, with larger accent at *dish*. This inf. *before* the verb, Is. 3. 16, cf. Ps. 126. 6.

Rem. 1. Exx. like Gen. 43. 3, 7, Am. 9. 8 hardly prove that infin. abs. intensifies the action in the same sense as the *pi.* With 1 S. 20. 6 cf. v. 28. In Gen. 19. 9 the inf. after verb may emphasise the assumption *to be judge* on the part of one who was a stranger rather than the *habit* of judging. Jos. 24. 10.

Rem. 2. The inf. abs. is oftenest of the same conjug. as the finite, whether before or after it, *e.g.* *Kal* Gen. 2. 16, *niph.* Ex. 22. 3, *pi.* Gen. 22. 17, *pu.* 40. 15, *hiph.* 3. 16, *hoph.* Ez. 16. 4, *hith.* Nu. 16. 13. But as the *nomen actionis* of the *Kal* expresses the abstract idea of the verb in general, it may be joined with any other conjug., *e.g.* with *niph.* Ex. 21. 20; *pi.* 2 S. 20. 18; *pu.* Gen. 37. 33; *hiph.* 1 S. 23. 22, Gen. 46. 4; *hoph.* Ex. 21. 12 (and always in this phrase *shall be put to death*); *hithpo.* Is. 24. 19. Other combinations are rarer, *e.g.* inf. *hoph.* with *niph.* 2 K. 3. 23, and with *pu.* Ez. 16. 4; inf. *pi.* with *hiph.* 1 S. 2. 16. Occasionally the inf. is from another verb, cognate and similar in sound, Is. 28. 28, Jer. 8. 13; 48. 9 (Zeph. 1. 2?). If text right in Jer. 42. 10, שׁוּב, the weak *yod* has fallen away, cf. Jud 19. 11, 2 S. 22. 41.

Rem. 3. Instead of inf. abs. the abstract noun is some-

times used; Is. 35. 2, Jer. 46. 5, Mic. 4. 9, Hab. 3. 9 (last two cognate stems), Job 27. 12, cf. Is. 29. 14, both inf. and noun.—Occasionally the form of inf. cons. is used, Nu. 23. 25, Ru. 2. 16, Jer. 50. 34, Pr. 23. 1 (all due to assonance with following verb), Ps. 50. 21, Neh. 1. 7.—2 K. 3. 24 חֲכֹחַ text amiss (but cf. § 96, R. 4), Ez. 11. 7 *rd.* אֲרִיא. Cf. however, Jos. 4. 3; 7. 7, Ez. 7. 14.

Rem. 4. The verb הָלַךְ with its inf. abs. is followed: (a) mostly by another inf. abs. as above in c, *e.g.* 2 S. 3. 16. וַיֵּלֶךְ הָלוֹךְ וַיִּבְכֶּה, Jos. 6. 9, 2 K. 2. 11; but (b) also by ptcp. 2 S. 18. 25 וַיֵּלֶךְ הָלוֹךְ וַיִּקְרַב, Jer. 41. 6, cf. 2 S. 16. 5; and (c) by a finite tense, 2 S. 16. 13 וַיֵּלֶךְ הָלוֹךְ וַיִּקְלַל, Jos. 6. 13, 1 S. 19. 23, 2 S. 13. 19, cf. Is. 31. 5.

But הָלַךְ is often used in a metaphorical sense to express *progress, continuance*, &c. in an action or condition, which is expressed by ptcp. or adj. Gen. 26. 13 וַיֵּלֶךְ הָלוֹךְ וַיִּגְדַּל *he grew ever greater*. Jud. 4. 24, 1 S. 14. 19, 2 S. 5. 10, 1 Chr. 11. 9. In the same sense the ptcp. הֹלֵךְ is used in a predication. 2 S. 3. 1 וַדָּוִד הֹלֵךְ וַחֲזָק *D. waxed stronger and stronger*. Ex. 19. 19 *always waxed louder*. 1 S. 2. 26 (17. 41 in a literal sense), 2 S. 15. 12, 2 Chr. 17. 12, Est. 9. 4, Pr. 4. 18.

Used adverbially with inf. abs. of other verbs inf. abs. of הָלַךְ expresses the same idea of progress or endurance. Gen. 12. 9 וַיֵּסֶע הָלוֹךְ וְנִסְיָא *he continued always journeying*; 8. 3 *always receded more and more*, cf. v. 5.

§ 87. Adverbial use of inf. abs.—The inf. abs. is used to describe adverbially the manner, degree, &c., of the action expressed by a previous verb. This inf. is itself without *and*, but other inf. may be subjoined to it. Deu. 9. 21 וַאֲכַתְּ וַאֲחַדְּתָהּ *and I beat it, grinding it small*; 1 S. 3. 12 אֲקִים אֶת כָּל־אֲשֶׁר דִּבַּרְתִּי מֵהַיּוֹם וְכֵלָה I will fulfil all that I have spoken, *from beginning to end*. Gen. 21. 16; 30. 32, Nu. 6. 23, Jos. 3. 17; 6. 3, 11, 1 S. 17. 16, 2 S. 8. 2, Is. 57. 17, Mic. 6. 13, Zech. 7. 3, Jer. 3. 15; 12. 17; 22. 19. Cf. Gen. 30. 37 מִחֲשֹׁשׁ. Some inf. abs. (chiefly high.) have become

almost simple adverbs, as **הַיִּטֵּב** *well, very*, **הַרְבֵּה** *much, very*, **הַרְחֵק** *far*, Gen. 21. 16, Jos. 3. 16.

Rem. 1. Here belongs the phrase of Jer., *e.g.* 7. 13 **וְאָדַרְתִּי . . . הַשִּׁבְחָה** I spoke, *earnestly speaking*, in which inf. of first verb is repeated; 11. 7; 25. 4; 29. 19; 32. 33; 35. 14, 15. As adverbial inf. is without *and*, delete *vav* in 26. 5.—Instead of inf. of first verb there is finite form, Is. 57. 17, cf. 31. 5. In Hos. 10. 4 the inf. might exegese **וַיִּבְרוּ דְבָרִים**, giving examples of their idle or swelling words; or they may express actions on the same line as their talk.

§ 88. Inf. abs. instead of inflected forms.—(a) When circumstances, personal relations, &c., have already been suggested by an inflected verbal form, it is often thought sufficient to subjoin further actions in the bare inf. form. This inf. may follow any inflected form, and, unlike the adverbial inf., is introduced by *and*. Jud. 7. 19 **וַיִּתְקְעוּ בַּשּׁוֹפָרוֹת וַיִּפְּצוּ הַכִּדְרִים** they blew with the trumpets, *and broke* the pitchers; 1 K. 9. 25 **וַיִּקְטֹרֶשׁ וַיִּזְבֹּחַ** and Solomon offered sacrifices (freq.) *and burnt incense*; Jer. 14. 5 **וְגַם אֵילַת בְּשָׂדָה יִלְדָה וְעִזּוֹב שָׂדוֹת יִקְנִי וְכָתוּב בִּסְפָר וְחָתוּם עֲדֵים** even the hind calves, *and for-sakes* (her young); Jer. 32. 44 **וְהָעָר׃ יִקְנוּ אֲדָמָה וְהָעָר׃ יִשְׁבְּעוּ וְהָעָר׃ יִשְׁבְּעוּ** they shall buy fields, *and subscribe deeds, and seal them, and take witnesses*. The usage becomes more common in later style. Cf. Rem. 1.

(b) The bare inf. abs. is used without a preceding inflected form when the verbal action or state in itself, apart from modifications of time, person, &c., is to be forcibly presented, *e.g.* in injunctions which are general; in descriptions of prevailing conduct or condition of things; but also in any case where the action in itself, apart from its conditions, is to be vividly expressed. Ex. 20. 8 **זָכוֹר אֶת יוֹם הַשַּׁבָּת** *remember* the sabbath day!—Hos. 4. 2 **וְנָאֵף וְרָצַח וְנָאֵף וְרָצַח וְנָאֵף** *false swearing, and murder, and theft, and adultery* (they

practise)!—1 K. 22. 30 בַּמִּלְחָמָה נִבְּאָה הִתְחַפֵּשׂ *disguise myself* (will I), and go into the battle! 2 K. 4. 43 כֹּה אָמַר יְהוָה אֲכֹל הַחֵמֶר *thus saith Je., Eat (shall ye) and leave over!*

(c) So in other cases where the action in itself, apart from its circumstances, is to be stated, the inf. abs. is sufficient. Is. 20. 2 וַיֵּצֵא כֵן הָלַךְ עָרוֹם וְיָחָף *he did so, walking naked and barefoot*, Is. 5. 5. Particularly when the action is first indicated by *this*. Jer. 9. 23 בֹּאֵת יִתְהַלֵּל בְּזֵאת יִתְהַלֵּל הַשָּׂפָל וְדַע אֲתִי *in this let one glory, in understanding and in knowing me*; Is. 58. 6 is not *this* the fast that I like, פָּתַח חֲרָצִבוֹת רָשָׁע *to loose the bonds of wickedness, &c.* (three inf., cf. *v.* 7). Gen. 17. 10; Deu. 15. 2, Is. 37. 30, Zech. 14. 12.

Rem. 1. Exx. of *a*. After perf., 1 S. 2. 27, 28, Hos. 10. 4, Jer. 19. 13; 22. 14, Hag. 1. 6, Zech. 3. 4; 7. 5, 1 Chr. 5. 20, 2 Chr. 28. 19, Ecc. 4. 1, 2; 9. 11, Est. 9. 6, 12, 16, cf. 17, Dan. 9. 5.—After impf., Jer. 32. 44; 36. 23. With *וְ* or, Lev. 25. 14, Nu. 30. 3, Deu. 14. 21.—After vav impf., Gen. 41. 43, Ex. 8. 11, Jer. 37. 21, 1 Chr. 16. 36, Neh. 8. 8.—Vav perf., Zech. 12. 10.—Inf., 1 S. 22. 13, Jer. 7. 18, cf. 32. 33.—Ptcp., Hab. 2. 15, Est. 8. 8.

Rem. 2. Exx. of *b*. Inf. abs. as imper., Ex. 12. 48; 13. 3, Deu. 1. 16; 5. 12; 31. 26, Jos. 1. 13, 2 K. 3. 16, Zech. 6. 10. So הִלַּךְ *go*! 2 S. 24. 12, 2 K. 5. 10, and often in Jer., 2. 2; 3. 12, &c. Is. 14. 31? (נָאִי inf. abs.).—Of prevailing conduct or condition, Is. 21. 5; 22. 13; 59. 4, 13, Jer. 7. 9; 8. 15; 14. 19, Ez. 21. 31, Hag. 1. 9.—Exx. of *c*, Jer. 3. 1 (אָשׁוּב), Ez. 23. 30, 46, Job 40. 2, Pr. 17. 12; 25. 4, 5.

Rem. 3. Like inf. cons. (§ 96), inf. abs. when used for finite may be continued by fin. form, Is. 42. 22; 58. 6.

Rem. 4. A force akin to that of inf. abs. is sometimes obtained by repeating the verb in another form. Ps. 118. 11, Zeph. 2. 1, Hab. 1. 5, Is. 29. 9 (Hos. 4. 18). But in some of these places text is doubtful.

Rem. 5. When inf. abs. is used for finite verb the *subj.*

is occasionally expressed with it, Deu. 15. 2, Lev. 6. 7, Nu. 15. 35, 1 S. 25. 26, Is. 42. 22, Ps. 17. 5, Job 40. 2, Pr. 17. 12, Ecc. 4. 2, Est. 9. 1. Gen. 17. 12, 13 make it probable that כל־זכר v. 10 is subj. and not acc. after pass.

Rem. 6. In § 86 (cf. § 67) and § 87 the inf. abs. is no doubt in acc. ; possibly also in § 88, cf. Kor. 2. 77.

## 2. The Infinitive Construct

§ 89. The inf. cons. has the qualities both of noun and verb, being used like a gerund, admitting prepp. and suffixes, and yet having the government of its verb. As *nomen verbi* it does not of itself express tense; the time is either indefinite or suggested by the context and circumstances. It is too little of a noun to take the *art.*, § 19.

§ 90. Cases of inf. cons. itself.—(a) The inf. cons. may be *nom.* as subject to a nominal sentence, especially when the pred. is "good" or "not good" (§ 84 a), but also otherwise, Gen. 2. 18 לֹא טוֹב הָיִיתָ הָאָדָם לְבַדּוֹ *man's being alone* is not good; Is. 7. 13 מְקֹם הַלְאֹת אֲנָשִׁים הַמַּעֲטָם *is wearying men* too little for you? Gen. 29. 19; 30. 15, Ex. 14. 12, Jud. 9. 2; 18. 19, 1 S. 15. 22; 23. 20; 29. 6, 2 S. 18. 11, Is. 10. 7, Mic. 3. 1, Ps. 118. 9, Pr. 10. 23; 13. 19; 16. 6, 12, 16, and often.

(b) It may be in *gen.* by a noun or prep. Gen. 2. 4 בְּיוֹם יְהוָה עֲשׂוֹת יְהוָה in the day of *Jehovah's making*; 14. 17 אַחֲרֵי שׁוֹבוֹ מִהַכּוֹת *after his returning from smiting*. Gen. 2. 17; 21. 5; 24. 30; 29. 7, Is. 7. 17, Hos. 2. 5, 17. Also, though rarely, after an adj. or ptcp. in *cons.*, Is. 56. 10, Jer. 13. 23, Ps. 127. 2, Pr. 30. 29. In a few instances כל *all* precedes inf. cons., Gen. 30. 41, 1 K. 8. 52, Ps. 132. 1, 1 Chr. 23. 31.

(c) It may be in *acc.* as obj. to an active verb. 1 K. 3. 7 לֹא יָדַע צֵאת וְבֹא I know not *how to go out or come in*. Gen. 8. 10, Ex. 2. 3, Deu. 2. 25, 2 K. 19. 27, Is. 1. 14; 11. 9, Jer. 15. 15, Am. 3. 10, Ps. 101. 3. The acc. sign אֶת occurs before inf. 2 K. 19. 27 (Is. 37. 28). The inf. cons. with



prep. ל, which expresses the direction of the action of governing verb, has in usage greatly superseded the simple inf. when *obj.*; Gen. 18. 29 וַיִּסַּף עוֹד לְדַבֵּר, 11. 8; 13. 16. This inf. with ל has become almost a simple verbal *form*, and appears often as subj. in the nominal sent., 1 S. 15. 22, 2 S. 18. 11, Is. 10. 7 with 28. 19, Mic. 3. 1, Ps. 118. 8, Pr. 21. 9 with 25. 24. Cf. Hab. 2. 14.

Rem. 1. It is usually the whole clause rather than the mere inf. that is grammatical subj.; comp. the forcible phrase 2 S. 14. 32. The inf. cons. is too little nominal to be subj. to a verb: in 2 S. 22. 36 *rd.* with Ps. 18. 36 וַתִּנָּחַר; 1 K. 16. 31 הִנָּקֵל is ptc., cf. 1 S. 18. 23. In 2 S. 24. 13 נִסְדָּךְ is loosely appended to preceding words. Is. 37. 29 שְׁאֲנִיָּךְ if text right may be an ex., or adj. used substantively (vocalisation varies). Ps. 17. 3 וַיִּמְחֵי if inf. is scarcely subj. to following verb. On the other hand the fem. inf. tends to be a real noun, and may be subj. to a verb, Pr. 10. 12.—It is rare that the mas. form of inf. is construed as fem. (neut.), 1 S. 18. 23, Jer. 2. 17 with 2. 19.

Rem. 2. Deu. 25. 2 בֶּן הַפֹּת *worthy of a beating* (adjudged the bastinado) is peculiar, cf. 1 S. 20. 31.

§ 91. Government by inf. cons.—(a) The agent or subj., which usually immediately follows inf., is in the *gen.* Gen. 2. 4 עֲשׂוֹת יְהוָה *Jehovah's making*; 19. 16 עֲלֵיו *in Jehovah's pitying* him. Gen. 16. 16; 24. 11, Ex. 17. 1, Deu. 1. 27, 1 K. 10. 9. So with suff., Gen. 3. 19 עַד שׁוֹבָהְךָ *until thy returning* to the ground, 3. 5; 39. 18.

When separated from inf. by intervening words the subj., with a looser construction, must be supposed to be in the *nom.*; Is. 20. 1 וַיִּשְׁלַח אֹתוֹ קֶרְגֹּן *when Sargon sent* him. Gen. 4. 15, Nu. 24. 23, Deu. 4. 42, Jos. 14. 11, Jud. 9. 2, 1 S. 16. 16, 2 S. 18. 29, Is. 5. 24, Jer. 21. 1, Ez. 17. 10, Ps. 51. 2; 56. 1; 76. 10; 142. 4, Pr. 1. 27; 25. 8, Job 34. 22.

(b) The inf. cons. puts its *obj.* in the same case as the verb does from which it is derived, *i.e.* acc. or *gen.* through

a prep. 1 S. 19. 1 **לְהַמִּית אֶת־דָּוִד** *to kill David*; Deu. 10. 15 **לְאַהֲבָה אֹתָם** *to love them*; Nu. 22. 11 **לְהִלָּחֵם בּוֹ** *to fight with him*. Gen. 2. 4, Deu. 2. 7, 1 K. 12. 15; 15. 4, Gen. 19. 16, Deu. 30. 20, Is. 7. 1. The inf. may take two acc. like its verb, Gen. 41. 39, Deu. 26. 19, Jos. 10. 20.

(c) When subj. and obj. are both expressed the usual order is: inf., subj., obj. Gen. 41. 39 **אֶחָדִי הוֹדִיעַ אֵי אֶת־ה'** *after God's showing thee*; Hos. 3. 1 **יְאֻהֲבֵת י' אֶת־בְּנֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל** *as Je. loveth the children of Israel*; and with pron. as subj. Gen. 39. 18 **כִּתְּרִימִי קוֹלִי** *when I lifted up my voice*. Gen. 11. 11, 13; 13. 10; 24. 30; 39. 19, 1 K. 11. 24; 13. 23, 31, Is. 10. 15, Am. 1. 3, 6, 9, 11, 13, &c.

Rem. 1. The subj., especially when a pron., is often omitted: (a) when clear from the context, Gen. 24. 30 **כִּרְאֹת** *when he saw*; 19. 29, Deu. 4. 21, 1 K. 20. 12, Ez. 8. 6.

(b) When general and indeterminate, Gen. 33. 10 **כִּרְאֹת** *as one sees*; Jud. 14. 6, 1 S. 2. 13; 18. 19, 2 S. 3. 34; 7. 29, Is. 7. 22; 10. 14.—Gen. 25. 26, Ex. 27. 7; 30. 12, Nu. 9. 15; 10. 7, Zeph. 2. 2, Zech. 13. 9, Ps. 42. 4 with *v.* 11, Job 13. 9; 20. 4. The *obj.* is also often omitted, when a pron., in the same circumstances. § 73, R. 5.

Rem. 2. The subj. is probably *nom.* in some cases where it is not separated from inf. (a above), *e.g.* when **ל** of inf. has pretonic *gameç*; 2 S. 19. 20 **לְשֹׁם הַפֶּלֶא** with Gen. 16. 3 **לְשֹׁבֹת אֲבָרָם**, 1 K. 6. 1, Job 37. 7. The inf. hiph. of ע'ו' verbs is never shortened except with suff. (Gen. 39. 18 in c above), *e.g.* Is. 10. 15 **כִּהְיִיף שִׁבְטִי**, 14. 3 **כִּי־יִהְיֶה הַיּוֹם**, 2 S. 17. 14, Ps. 46. 3.

Rem. 3. The obj. of inf. when a *noun* is probably acc. and not gen. objecti. When inf. has suff. this is clear, Gen. 39. 18, Deu. 9. 28. Also the particle **אִם** is frequently expressed, Gen. 14. 17; 25. 26, Deu. 10. 12, 15; 11. 22, 1 S. 18. 19; 25. 2, Zech. 13. 9. Cases in which neither of these marks is present are probably to be decided on the same analogy, *e.g.* Jud. 14. 6 **כִּשְׁסַע הַיָּדִי** *as one rends a kid*, Is. 10. 14 *as one gathers eggs*, 17. 5, 1 K. 18. 28, Ps. 66. 10;

101. 3, Pr. 21. 3. The fem. inf., while it may take acc., is occasionally construed with gen. *obj.*, Ps. 73. 28 קִרְבָּת אֱלֹהִים *to draw near to God*, Mic. 6. 8, so Aram. Ezr. 4. 22. So the common לִקְרָאתִי *to meet me*, לִקְרָאת דָּוִד *to meet David*, &c. Similarly fem. verbal noun, Deu. 29. 22, cf. acc. Ez. 17. 9, Am. 4. 11, and with mas. noun, Nu. 10. 2 (Hab. 3. 13?). In Nu. 23. 10 *rd.* perhaps מִי סָפַר. Others consider cases like Is. 10. 14; 17. 5 as gen. *obj.* (Hitz. on Is. 1. 7).

Rem. 4. Though inf. has a distinct suff. for acc. only in 1 *p. s.* and occasionally in others, *e.g.* 3 *s.* לְהוֹצִיאֵנִי, Jer. 39. 14, and 1 *pl.* לְהוֹצִיאֵנִי, Ex. 14. 11, there seems no reason to doubt that the suff. of all the persons are often in acc. There is no syntactical reason why inf. should govern acc. of 1 *p. s.* and not of the other persons, as it does govern acc. of all persons with אֵת. A gen. *obj.* would in many cases be awkward, as Gen. 37. 4 דִּבְרוּ *to speak to him*, and where the suff. is parallel to אֵת as 37. 22, Deu. 1. 27. In Deu. 23. 5 the suff. has verbal *n* demons. Comp. *exx.* like Nu. 22. 23, 25, Deu. 9. 28; 26. 19 with Ps. 89. 28, Jud. 13. 23; 14. 8; 18. 2, 1 S. 2. 25; 19. 11, 1 K. 20. 35, 2 K. 9. 35, Ps. 106. 23, 26, 27. When prep. ל precedes inf. the suff. is mostly acc.; also often when מ precedes, and even when other prepp. are prefixed.—Nu. 22. 13 לְהַחֲמִי = לְהַחֲמִי, and Jer. 27. 8 תִּמְצִי seems used as *trans.*, though cf. Sep.

§ 92. Usage of inf. cons.—The inf. cons. with prepp. has all the meanings of the finite forms with conjunctions. Gen. 4. 8 בְּהִיּוֹתָם *when they were* in the field; 3. 19 עַד שׁוּבָה *until thou return*, cf. Hos. 10. 12 יְבוֹא *until he come*, Gen. 39. 16, 2 S. 10. 5. Gen. 39. 18 כְּהִרְמִי קוֹלִי *when I lifted up*, cf. 37. 23 כַּאֲשֶׁר בָּא *when he came*. The prepp. become conjunctions, taking finite forms, by combination with the rel. אֲשֶׁר, which, however, is often omitted, as Hos. 10. 12 above, 5. 15. Gen. 18. 12 with Jud. 11. 36, 2 S. 19. 31; Am. 1. 11 with 2 S. 3. 30; 2 S. 3. 11 with Is. 43. 4.—Gen. 13. 10; 34. 7; 35. 1, 1 S. 9. 15, 2 S. 12. 6, Ex. 19. 18. Cf. § 145.

§ 93. The prep. ל, which properly expresses the direction

of the action of previous verb, is used with inf. cons. in a weaker sense (like gerund in *do*) to explain the circumstances or nature of a preceding action. This gerundial (adverbial) use is very common. 1 S. 14. 33 הָעָם חָטְאוּ לְאֹכַל עַל הַדָּם the people are sinning *in eating* with the blood; 1 K. 5. 23 תַּעֲשֶׂה אֶת־חֲפְצִי לָתֵת לָחֶם בֵּיתִי thou wilt do my desire *in giving* (so as to give) bread for my house. Gen. 18. 25; 19. 19; 29. 26; 34. 7; 43. 6, 1 S. 12. 17, 19; 19. 5; 20. 20, 2 S. 14. 20, 1 K. 8. 32; 14. 8; 16. 19. So the frequent לֵאמֹר *saying*. Similarly in explanation of a comparison, Gen. 3. 22, 2 S. 14. 25, Is. 21. 1, Ez. 38. 16, Pr. 26. 2, 1 Chr. 12. 8.—Jos. 22. 26 is peculiar if text right. Is. 44. 14 לְכַרֵּת text dubious.

§ 94. The inf. with ל is also used as a circumscription in various senses of the imperfect. (a) As a periphrastic fut. Gen. 15. 12 וַיְהִי הַשָּׁמֶשׁ לְבוֹא and it was, *the sun was about to set*, Jos. 2. 5. Is. 38. 20 לְהוֹשִׁיעַנִי י' *Je. is (ready, about) to save me*. Is. 10. 32, Jer. 51. 49, Ps. 25. 14; 49. 15, Pr. 19. 8, Ecc. 3. 15, 1 Chr. 9. 25.—In 1 S. 14. 21 *rd.* קָבְרוּ גַם־הֵמָּה *they also turned to be*. (b) As a gerundive, in the sense of *is to be, must be, ought to be*. 2 K. 4. 13 מָה לַעֲשׂוֹת לָךְ הֵי־שָׁ לְךָ הֵי־שָׁ לְךָ *what is to be done for thee? should one speak for thee to the king?* 2 K. 13. 19 לְהַנּוֹת חֶמֶשׁ אֹרֶשׁ *percutiendum erat*. Is. 5. 4, Hos. 9. 13, Ps. 32. 9; 49. 15, Job 30. 6, 2 S. 4. 10. Or in the sense of *can be*, Jud. 1. 19, 2 S. 14. 19 (אֵשׁ = אִשׁ).—The consn. in Gen. 15. 12, Jos. 2. 5 appears to be as 1 S. 7. 10, 2 S. 2. 24, 1 K. 20. 40, 2 K. 2. 11, and often, the vb. *was* being understood.

§ 95. The *negative* inf. is formed—(a) Usually by particle צִוִּיתִיךָ לְבִלְתִּי אֲכַל־מִמֶּנּוּ with ל, as Gen. 3. 11 I commanded thee *not to eat of it*, Deu. 4. 21, 1 K. 11. 10. This particle negatives inf. in its various uses, *e.g.* when it expresses purpose, Gen. 4. 15; 38. 9, and frequently in its

gerundial or explicative sense, Gen. 19. 21, Ex. 8. 25, Deu. 3. 3; 8. 11; 17. 12, Jos. 5. 6, Jud. 2. 23; 8. 1, Jer. 16. 12; 17. 23, 24, 27.

(b) The inf. as periphrastic fut. or gerundive (§ 94) is negated by **לֹא** or **אֵין**. Am. 6. 10 **לֹא לְהִזְכִּיר בְּשֵׁם י'** the name of Je. *must not be mentioned*; Jud. 1. 19 (could not dispossess), 1 Chr. 5. 1. Est. 4. 2 **אֵין לְבוֹא אֶל־הַשַּׁעַר** the gate *must not be gone to*. Ezr. 9. 15, 2 Chr. 5. 11; 20. 6, 17; 22. 9, Est. 8. 8, Ps. 40. 6, Ecc. 3. 14. There seems no difference in sense between **לֹא** and **אֵין**, though the latter is common in the later style; cf. 1 Chr. 15. 2 with 23. 26. Jer. 4. 11 does not belong here.

§ 96. In the progress of the discourse, when new clauses are added with *and*, the inf. is very generally changed into the finite construction. Gen. 39. 18 **בְּהִרְיָמִי קוֹלִי וָאָקְרָא** lifted up my voice *and cried*; 2 K. 18. 32 **עַד בָּאִי וְלָקַחְתִּי אֹתְכֶם** till I come *and take you*. Gen. 27. 45, Jud. 6. 18, 1 S. 24. 12, Is. 5. 24; 10. 2; 13. 9; 30. 12, 26; 45. 1, Am. 1. 9, 11, Ps. 104. 14, 15. This resolution is necessary with a neg. clause, Am. 1. 9. Cf. Rem. 2.

Rem. 1. The pleonastic neg. **לֹא** (§ 95) occurs 2 K. 23. 10 (cf. **לֹא** Ez. 21. 20), and **מִבְּלִיתִי** Nu. 14. 16 *because Je. was not able*.—The inf. is sometimes negated by prep. **מִן** *away from*, as Is. 5. 6 **מִהַמָּטִיר** command *not to rain*. So after *to swear* Is. 54. 9, cf. Deu. 4. 21, and *to beware* Gen. 31. 29 (cf. *v.* 24), 2 K. 6. 9. Occasionally a periphrasis of **לֵאמֹר** *saying* and direct speech is employed, Gen. 3. 11 with *v.* 17, Am. 2. 12.

Rem. 2. The finite tense consecutive to the inf. (§ 96) will show the *nuances* of time, relation, &c., in which the inf. was used. Thus Gen. 39. 18, 1 S. 24. 12, the inf. referred to a past act; 2 K. 18. 32, Jud. 6. 18 to a future one, and Am. 1. 11 to a frequentative action. Loose constructions occasionally arise in the process of resolution, *e.g.* Hos. 9. 7 **וְעַל־אֲשֶׁר רַבָּה** *i.e.* **עַל רֵב עֲוֹנֹתָ וְרַבָּה** *and because . . . is great*;

so Jer. 30. 14, 15. So perhaps 1 S. 4. 19 וַיָּמָת . . . אֶל-הַלֵּקָה, *i.e.* וַיָּמָת (עַל) אִשְׁרָיִם and regarding the fact that he was dead.

Rem. 3. Sometimes, esp. in later style, the inf. with suff. appears used for finite form, Job 9. 27 אֲמַרִי *if I think* (my thought be). Jer. 9. 5, Zeph. 3. 20, Dan. 11. 1. Comp. also the consn. Ex. 9. 18, 2 S. 19. 25.

Rem. 4. The inf. cons. with *and* is used, particularly in later style, in continuation of a preceding finite or other form (cf. inf. abs. § 88). Several times וַלֵּךְ, Ex. 32. 29, Jer. 17. 10; 19. 12, Dan. 12. 11. Originally and in the older passages the inf. stood perhaps under the influence of a *will* or *purpose* implicitly contained in preceding clause, but in many cases this cannot any more be discovered; the inf. is merely a shorter way of indicating the action. Am. 8. 4, Hos. 12. 3 (Sep. wants *and*), 1 S. 8. 12, Jer. 44. 19, Ez. 13. 22, Is. 44. 28, Lev. 10. 10, 11, Neh. 8. 13, Ps. 104. 21, Job 34. 8, 1 Chr. 6. 34; 10. 13, 2 Chr. 7. 17; 8. 13, Ecc. 9. 1, Dan. 2. 16, 18. In Gen. 42. 25 *and to restore* is under "commanded," the preceding clause being brachylogy usual with "command." Prep. omitted 1 Chr. 21. 24, cf. 2 S. 24. 24.

Rem. 5. Though the *pass.* inf. is quite common the act. is often used where *pass.* might be expected. Gen. 4. 13, Ex. 19. 13, 1 S. 18. 19, Is. 18. 3, Hos. 10. 10, Jer. 6. 15; 25. 34; 41. 4, Hag. 2. 15, Ps. 42. 4; 67. 3, Job 20. 4, Ecc. 3. 2.

*Obs.*—In composition, if doubt arise, it is safe to use prep. ל before inf., as the bare inf. being a noun can be governed properly only by a trans. verb. The prep. must be used: 1. After verbs expressing *purpose* and verbs of motion, Gen. 2. 15, Ex. 3. 4. 2. After a nominal sent., pos. or neg., Gen. 2. 5; 24. 25. 3. After an adj., Gen. 19. 20, Is. 5. 22 (Job 3. 8 a rare exception). 4. After a noun, Hos. 8. 11; 10. 12, Is. 5. 22, unless the inf. be gen., Gen. 29. 7. Such verbs, however, as יָכַל *to be able*, מָאָץ *to refuse*, are trans. in Heb. and may take bare inf., Deu. 1. 9, Hos. 8. 5, Is. 1. 13, Nu. 22. 14, Jer. 3. 3; so נָאָחָה *to be weary*, Is. 1. 14, Jer. 15. 6.

THE *NOMEN AGENTIS* OR PARTICIPLE

§ 97. The ptcp. or *nomen agentis* partakes of the nature both of the noun (adj.) and the verb. It presents the person or subj. in the continuous exercise or exhibition of the action or condition denoted by the verb. The *pass.* ptcp. describes the subj. as having the action continuously exercised upon him, or at least differs from the adj. in presenting the state of the subj. as the result of an action.

Rem. 1. The ptcp. carries the notion of action, operation, like the verb, while the quality expressed by the adj. inheres in the subj. as a mere motionless characteristic. On the other hand the ptcp. differs from the impf. in that the continuousness of the impf. is not unbroken, but mere repetition of the action. The ptcp. is a line, the impf. a succession of points.

It is but natural, however, that act. ptcps. expressing conditions or operations which are habitual should come to be used as nouns, as אהב *friend*, איב *enemy*, שפט *judge*, שמר *watchman*, חזה *seer*, &c., and that pass. ptcps. should in usage become adjectives. The ptcp. *niph.* in particular has the sense of the Lat. gerundive and adj. in *bilis*, as נורא *to be feared*, terrible, נחשב *æstimandus*, נחמד *desirable*, נחעב *detestable*, נכבד *honourable*. Occasionally ptcp. *Pu.*, מזהל *laudandus*, Ps. 96. 4. Possibly Kal, Ps. 137. 8 (some point שדודה). Jer. 4. 30, Is. 23. 12, are real or imagined pasts. See Is. 2. 22, Ps. 18. 4; 19. 11; 22. 32; 76. 8; 102. 19, Job 15. 16. In like manner the difference between ptcp. and impf. is often scarcely discernible in usage. Gen. 2. 10, Ex. 13. 15, Lev. 11. 47, Nu. 24. 4, 16. Cf. Jud. 4. 22 with 2 K. 6. 19.

§ 98. Construction of ptcp.—The ptcp. is construed—  
(a) Verbally, taking the government of its verb, *acc.* or *prep.*  
Gen. 32. 12 ירא אנכי אתו *I fear him*; 25. 28 רבקה אהבת *Reb. loved Jacob*. Gen. 27. 8; 37. 7, 16; 40. 8, 17; 41. 9; 42. 29, 1 S. 11. 3, 2 S. 14. 18, 1 K. 18. 3, Am. 5. 8, 9, 18.

With prep. Gen. 16. 13; 26. 11, 1 S. 17. 19; 23. 1, 2 S. 23. 3, Ps. 89. 10. The ptcp. may take any acc. taken by its verb; Deu. 6. 11 **מְלֵאִים כָּל־טוֹב** *full of every good*, Am. 2. 13; cogn. acc. 1 K. 1. 40; or two acc., 2 S. 1. 24 **הַמְלֵבְשָׁכֶם שָׁנִי** *who clothed you with crimson*. Zeph. 1. 9.

(b) Or, nominally, being in cons. with following gen. Gen. 3. 5 **יָדָעִי טוֹב וְרָעִי** *knowing good and evil*; Hos. 2. 7 **נָתַנִּי לַחֲמִי וּמִיָּמִי** *who give my bread and water*. This consn. is very common: the *act.* ptcp. of verbs governing a direct obj. take this obj. in gen.; and the *pass.* ptcp. of such verbs take the subj. of the verbs in the gen. Gen. 22. 12 **יָדַעְתִּי אֶתְּהָא** *thou fearest God*; Hos. 3. 1 **אִשָּׁה אֲהָבַת רֵעִי** *a woman loved by a paramour*. Gen. 19. 14, 25, Ex. 15. 14; 23. 31, Jud. 1. 19; 5. 6, 2 S. 4. 6; 6. 13, 1 K. 2. 7; 12. 21, Is. 5. 18, Hos. 6. 8. So ptcp. of other act. conjugations, Is. 5. 8; 19. 8, 9, 10; 28. 6; 29. 21, Jer. 23. 30, 32, Hos. 5. 10; 11. 4, Ps. 19. 8, 9; cf. 136. 4-7. Pass. ptcp., Gen. 24. 31 *blessed by Je.*, 2 S. 5. 8 *hated by*, Is. 53. 4, Job 14. 1. Frequently the *cause* or *instrument* takes the place of the subj., Is. 1. 7 **אֵשׁ שָׂרְפֹתָם** *burnt with fire*. Gen. 20. 3; 41. 6, Deu. 32. 24, Is. 14. 19; 22. 2; 28. 1 *stricken down with wine*, Jer. 18. 21, Hos. 4. 17.

(c) In like manner suff. to ptcp. may be *acc.* or *gen.* Deu. 8. 16 **הַמְאֲכִילָה מֶן** *who fed thee with manna*. Deu. 8. 5 (*n* demons.); 13. 6, 11; 20. 1, Is. 9. 12; 10. 20; 47. 10; 63. 11, Jer. 9. 14 (cf. 23. 15), Ps. 18. 33; 81. 11, Job 31. 15; 40. 19. Often in *gen.*; Gen. 27. 29 **מְבָרְכֶיךָ** *they who bless thee* (thy blessers), 4. 14, Ex. 20. 5, 6, 1 S. 2. 30, Is. 50. 8, Ps. 7. 5; 55. 13, Job 7. 8.

Rem. 1. The mixed consn., gen. and acc. (for 2 acc.), Am. 4. 13 is curious.—The verbs **בָּא** *to go into* and **צָא** *to come out of*, may be consd. with acc. (Gen. 44. 4, Deu. 14. 22, 2 K. 20. 4, Lam. 1. 10, Ps. 100. 4), and so their ptcp. with. gen. Gen. 9. 10; 23. 10, 18; 34. 24; 46. 26,



Ex. 1. 5, Jud. 8. 30. Similarly other kinds of acc., as that of *direction*, Is. 38. 18 יֵרֵד בּוֹר *gone down to the pit*, 1 Chr. 12. 33, 36, or of *respect*, Is. 1. 30 fading *in its leaf*. In poetry this brief forcible consn. of gen. represents prose consn. with prep.; Ps. 88. 6 *lying in the grave*, though cf. 57. 5; Mic. 2. 8, Is. 22. 2. Particularity with suff., Ps. 18. 40 קָמִי *those rising up against me*, cf. Ps. 3. 2. Deu. 33. 11, Is. 22. 3, Ps. 53. 6; 73. 27; 74. 23; 102. 9, Pr. 2. 19. Is. 29. 7 *who war against her and her stronghold* is so condensed as to be suspicious.

The pass. ptc. also may retain the acc. of act. verb, as 1 S. 2. 18 חֲגוּר אֶפֹד *girl with an ephod*, Jud. 18. 11, Ez. 9. 2, 3, Neh. 4. 12; or take the gen., Is. 3. 3; 51. 21, Joel 1. 8, Ez. 9. 11. Particularly when the gen. explains the extent of application of ptc. (§ 24 d). Is. 3. 3 נִשָּׂא פָּנִים *he whose face is lifted up*. Ps. 32. 1 חֲסִי הַחֲטָאָה *he whose sin is covered*. 2 S. 13. 31, Is. 33. 24, Pr. 14. 2. In 2 S. 15. 32 קָרַע בְּתֹנֶתוֹ ב' *is not acc. of respect, as to his garment, but subj. to rent, though rent at the same time is acc. of condition to Hushai*. On the other hand Jud. 1. 7 is rather an ordinary circ. cl., *cut off* being pred. to *thumbs*, although elsewhere this word is fem. Ex. 12. 11, Jer. 30. 6.

§ 99. The ptc. becomes virtually a noun, as Is. 19. 20 מוֹשִׁיעַ *one who saves, a saviour*, and may be subj. or obj. of a sentence. When in apposition with a noun it is used as an adj., Deu. 4. 24 אֵשׁ אֹכֶלֶת *a devouring fire*, 4. 34 *an out-stretched arm*, Gen. 22. 13, Is. 18. 2, 5, Jud. 1. 24 אִישׁ יֹצֵא *they saw a man coming out*. Am. 5. 3, Is. 2. 13; 10. 22. With the art. the ptc. may like the adj. designate a class. Am. 5. 13, Is. 14. 8; 28. 16, Mic. 4. 6; or have the sense of *he who . . . , whoever*, Gen. 26. 11 הַנֹּעֵץ בְּאִישׁ הַזֶּה *whoever touches*, 2 S. 14. 10; and so with gen., Gen. 9. 6, Ex. 21. 12, 15, 16.

When in appos. with a preceding def. subj. the ptc. with art. has the meaning very much of a relative clause. Gen. 12. 7 הַנִּרְאָה אֵלָיו י' *Je. who had appeared to him*; 1 S.

1. 26 אֲנִי הָאִשָּׁה הַנִּצָּבָה I am the woman *who stood*, cf. Jud. 16. 24. This usage is very common: Gen. 13. 5; 27. 33; 35. 3; 43. 12, 18; 48. 15, 16, Ex. 11. 5, Jud. 8. 34, 1 S. 4. 8, 2 S. 1. 24, 2 K. 22. 18, Is. 8. 6, 17, 18; 9. 1, Am. 4. 1; 5. 3, Mic. 3. 2, 3, 5. With pass. ptc., Nu. 21. 8, Jud. 6. 28 the altar *that had been built*, 20. 4 the woman *who was murdered*, 1 K. 18. 30, Ps. 79. 10.—Ps. 19. 11 resumes *v.* 10 (they) *which are more desirable*. Ps. 18. 33; 49. 7.

Rem. 1. Of course the ptc. with art. is not to be used as an ordinary rel. clause after an *indef.* noun, only after def. words as pron., proper name, or other defined word. In later style exceptions occur, Jer. 27. 3; 46. 16, Ez. 2. 3; 14. 22, Ps. 119. 21, Dan. 9. 26, though in most of these cases the preceding word is really def. though formally undetermined. In other cases the preceding subj. receives a certain definiteness from being connected with *all*, Gen. 1. 21, 28, or a numeral, Jud. 16. 27, cf. 1 S. 25. 10, or from standing in a comparison, Pr. 26. 18 (Ps. 62. 4 *rd.* perhaps וְיִירָהוּ), or from being described by an adj., Is. 65. 2, cf. *v.* 3.

Rem. 2. When another ptc. follows one with art. it is often without art., as predicate, Is. 5. 20, Am. 6. 4, Job 5. 10. But in vigorous speech the clauses are made parallel and the art. used, Is. 40. 22, 23, Mic. 3. 5. Occasionally the rel. pron. takes the place of the art. as more distinct, Deu. 1. 4, Jer. 38. 16, Ez. 9. 2, Ps. 115. 8. Both are used 1 K. 12. 8; 21. 11.

Rem. 3. When the ptc. as direct pred. receives the art. it becomes coextensive with the subj. Gen. 2. 11 it is *that which goeth round*. 45. 12 my mouth is *that which speaketh*. Deu. 3. 21 thine eyes were *they which saw*. Gen. 42. 6, Deu. 3. 22, 1 S. 4. 16, Is. 14. 27.

§ 100. (a) The ptc. as pred., unlike the finite verb, does *not* contain the subj., which must be expressed. 1 S. 19. 11 מָחָר אֶתָּה מוֹמָת *to-morrow thou shalt be slain*; Gen. 38. 25 הִמָּחָה עָלֵיהֶם *she was brought forth*; 1 S. 9. 11 הֵמָּה עָלֵיהֶם *they were going up*. The pron., however, is often omitted if

the subj. has just been mentioned, particularly after הִנֵּה Gen. 24. 30 וַיָּבֹא אֶל־הָאִישׁ וְהִנֵּה עֹמֵד he came to the man, *and, behold, he was standing*. Gen. 37. 15; 38. 24, 41. 1, 1 S. 30. 3, 16, Am. 7. 1, Is. 29. 8. With גַּם Gen. 32. 7. Occasionally the pron. is omitted anomalously, Jos. 8. 6, Ps. 22. 29 (*he* is ruler), Neh. 9. 3, 5. In 1 S. 6. 3 אֲתָם has probably dropped out. On ptc. with general subj. § 108 c.

(b) Owing to the emphasis thrown by the idea and usage of ptc. on the subj. the latter usually precedes. Gen. 2. 10 וַיָּצֵא וְנָהָר and a river went forth; 24. 21 וַהֲאִישׁ מִשְׁתַּחֲוֶה לָּהּ and the man gazed at her, 24. 13, 37 (see above in a). This order is usual with הִנֵּה and in rel. clauses, 18. 17; 24. 37; 28. 20; 31. 43. On the other hand, if emphasis fall on ptc., and in clauses beginning with כִּי *for, that*, אִם *if*, which give prominence to the pred., the ptc. precedes the subj. Gen. 30. 1 וְאִם אֵין מִתָּה אֲנֹכִי and if not *I die*; 3. 5 כִּי יֵדַע א' *for God knoweth*, 15. 14; 19. 13; 25. 30; 29. 9; 32. 12; 41. 32. With interrog., Gen. 4. 9; 18. 17, Nu. 11. 29. After אֵךְ Jud. 3. 24.

(c) The ptc. does not indicate time, its colour in this respect being taken from the connection in which it stands. The pass. ptc. refers chiefly to the past, though not exclusively. The act. ptc. is mainly descriptive of something present, *i.e.* either actually present to the speaker, or present to him in idea, as the *fut. instans*; or, as in circums. clauses, present to the main action spoken of, though this may be in the past. Gen. 4. 10 דָּמִי אֶחָדָה צֹעֲקִים thy brother's *blood crieth*. Gen. 19. 13, 14 כִּי מִשְׁחִיתִים אֲנִיחֵנוּ *for we are destroying* (going to des.). 1 S. 1. 12 she *prayed* long וַעֲלִי שֹׁמֵר אֶת־פִּיהָ *Eli watching her mouth*. See exx. in Rem. 1.

(d) Owing to its nominal character the ptc. is negated by אֵין. The place of the neg. varies. Gen. 41. 8 פֹּתֵר אֵין

אֲתֶם *there was none interpreting* them; cf. different order, 40. 8; 41. 15. Ex. 5. 16 נָתַן אֵין תֶּבֶן *straw is not given*; 1 K. 6. 18 אֵין אָבֶן נִרְאָה *no stone was seen*. The אֵין often takes suff. of subj., Gen. 43. 5 אִם אֵינְךָ מְשַׁלֵּחַ *if thou dost not let go*, Ex. 5. 10.—Gen. 20. 7; 39. 23; 41. 24, Ex. 3. 2, Deu. 4. 22; 22. 27, Jos. 6. 1, Jud. 3. 25, 1 S. 3. 1; 22. 8; 26. 12, 1 K. 6. 18, Hos. 5. 14, Am. 5. 2, 6, Is. 5. 27; 17. 2; 22. 22, Jer. 9. 21. See Rem. 3.

(e) When additional clauses are joined by *and* to a participial consn. the *finite* tense is usually employed, though not always. Gen. 35. 3 וַיְהִי עִמָּדִי ה' *the God who answered me, and was with me*; 27. 33 הָצֹד צִיד *who hunted venison, and brought it*. In animated speech without *and*, Is. 5. 8 מְגִיעֵי בֵית בְּבֵית שָׂדֶה בְּשָׂדֶה *who join house to house, lay field to field*; cf. Ps. 147. 14–16.—Gen. 7. 4; 17. 19; 48. 4, Deu. 4. 22, 1 S. 2. 6, 8, 31; 2 S. 20. 12, Is. 5. 23; 14. 17; 29. 21; 30. 2; 31. 1; 44. 25, 26; 48. 1, Am. 5. 7–12, Hos. 2. 16, Jer. 13. 10, Ps. 18. 33. This change to the finite is *necessary* when the additional clause is neg. See Rem. 4.

(f) As the ptc. presents the subj. as in the continuous exercise of the action, it is greatly employed in describing scenes of a striking kind and in circumstantial clauses (§ 138 b). Much of the picturesqueness of prose historical writing is due to it. So it is used with such particles as הִנֵּה *behold*, עוֹד *still, while*. 1 K. 22. 10 הַמֶּלֶךְ וְשָׂרָיו *the king and his servants* were sitting, each on his throne, clothed in their robes, and all the prophets were prophesying before them; so v. 12, 19. 2 S. 15. 30 David's ascent of Olivet, cf. v. 18, 23. Is. 6. 2, 2 S. 12. 19, 1 S. 9. 11, 14, 27, Is. 5. 28, Nu. 11. 27, 1 K. 12. 6, 2 K. 2. 11. With הִנֵּה, Gen. 25. 32; 37. 7; 41. 1–3, 1 S. 10. 22; 12. 2, 2 K. 17. 26. With עוֹד, Gen. 18. 22, Ex. 9.

2, 17, 1 K. 1. 14, 22, 42, 2 K. 6. 33, Jer. 33. 1, Job 2. 3. So with **יש** and **אין**. Gen. 24. 42, 49; 43. 4, Deu. 29. 14, Jud. 6. 36.

Rem. 1. The *time* of ptcp., § 100c. Exx. of present time: Gen. 16. 8; 19. 15; 32. 12; 37. 16; 43. 18, Deu. 4. 1; 12. 8 and often, Jud. 7. 10; 18. 3, 1 S. 14. 11, Is. 1. 7, Hos. 3. 1. Exx. of past time: Gen. 39. 23 **ואשר הוא עשה** **מלך** whatever *he did* Je. prospered, 37. 7, 15; 40. 6; 41. 1 seq., Ex. 18. 5, 14, Deu. 4. 12, Jud. 4. 22; 14. 4; 19. 27, 1 S. 2. 13; 9. 11, 1 K. 3. 2; 4. 20; 6. 27, 2 K. 13. 21. Exx. of fut. time: Gen. 7. 4; 17. 19; 41. 25, 28; 49. 29, Ex. 33. 15, Jud. 11. 9; 15. 3, 1 S. 20. 36, 2 S. 12. 23, 2 K. 4. 16, Ps. 22. 32; 102. 19. Particularly with **הנה**, as Gen. 15. 3; 20. 3; 24. 13; 1 S. 3. 11, 1 K. 13. 2, Is. 3. 1; 7. 14, Am. 8. 11. The ptcp. with **הנה** however may refer to any time, as pres., Gen. 38. 24 *is with child*, Jud. 9. 36, 1 S. 10. 22, 1 K. 1. 25; 17. 12; or past, Gen. 40. 6; 41. 1, Am. 7. 1, 4, 7.

The ptcp., even without copula, may express *juss.* sense; Gen. 3. 14 **אָרַר אֶתְּךָ** *cursed be thou*, 9. 26; 24. 27, 1 K. 2. 45, cf. Ru. 2. 19.

Rem. 2. In order to express more distinctly the idea of *duration*, particularly in past, the verb **היה** is sometimes used with the ptcp., generally in a clause of circumstance explicative of the main narrative, but also in an independent statement. Gen. 37. 2 **יוסף היה רעה** Jos. *was herding*; Jud. 16. 21 **ויהי טוחן בבית האסורים** and *he continued to grind*; 1 S. 2. 11 **והנער היה משירת אתי** and the child *continued to minister*. Gen. 4. 17; 39. 22, Ex. 3. 1, Deu. 9. 7, 22, 24; 28. 29, Jud. 1. 7, 1 S. 18. 29, 2 S. 3. 6, 17; 7. 6, 2 K. 17. 25-41; 18. 4, Is. 2. 2; 59. 2, Jer. 26. 18, 20, Hos. 9. 17, Ps. 122. 2, Job 1. 14. Pass. ptcp. Lev. 13. 45, 1 K. 22. 35, Jer. 14. 16; 36. 30, Zech. 3. 3. The usage is more common in the later style (occurring sometimes with almost no emphasis). Neh. 1. 4; 2. 13, 15, 1 Chr. 6. 17; 18. 14, 2 Chr. 30. 10; 36. 16, Est. 2. 15, Dan. 1. 16; 5. 19; 10. 9.

Rem. 3. The ptcp. is negated by **לא** when an attributive. Jer. 2. 2 **לא זרעה** a land *not sown* (cf. adj. Deu. 32. 6,

Hos. 13. 13). Jer. 18. 15, Hab. 1. 14 in an attributive clause, Job 29. 12. Cf. 2 S. 1. 21, Hos. 7. 8. But also in a number of cases when *pred.*, perhaps with rather more force, Nu. 35. 23 (= Deu. 19. 4), Deu. 28. 61, 2 S. 3. 34, Jer. 4. 22, Ez. 4. 14; 22. 24, Zeph. 3. 5, Ps. 38. 15, Job 12. 3. The double neg. of 1 K. 10. 21 is wanting in 2 Chr. 9. 20. The accents show Is. 62. 12, Jer. 6. 8, to be perf.; Zeph. 2. 1 is doubtful. Of course *לֹא נִחַמְתָּ* Hos. 1. 6, *לֹא נִחַמְתָּ* Is. 54. 11, are perfs.

Rem. 4. The finite tense which *continues* ptc. will vary (cf. on inf. § 96, R. 2). It will be *vav conv. impf.* when ptc. referred to a fact in the past, Gen. 27. 33; 35. 3, or was equivalent to a perf. of experience, Am. 5. 7, 8; 9. 5. It will be simple impf. or *vav conv. perf.* when ptc. expressed a thing habitual or general, 2 S. 20. 12, Am. 8. 14, Is. 5. 8, Mic. 3. 5, 9, or referred to fut., 1 K. 13. 2, 3.

Rem. 5. The ptc. being of weaker force than finite tense, sometimes uses prep. ל instead of acc. to convey the action, particularly when obj. precedes. Is. 11. 9 *לִים מְכַסִּים* waters covering the sea. Nu. 10. 25, Deu. 4. 42, Am. 6. 3 (cf. Is. 66. 5), Is. 14. 2. So in Ar., *limâlihi fîha muhîna*, making light of his money, Am. b. Kelth. v. 4.

Rem. 6. The ptc. without subj. tends to be used in later style for 3rd pers. like finite verb. Jos. 8. 6, Neh. 6. 6; 9. 3. 5, Is. 13. 5, and in Psalms. So occasionally for inf., Jer. 2. 17 *עַתָּה מוֹלִיכֶךָ* the time when he led thee. Gen. 38. 29 (comp. Mal. 1. 7 with 8; 1. 12; 2. 17; also 2. 15). In Ez. 27. 34 *רָד. עַתָּה נִשְׁבְּרָתָ*. Both uses are common in post-biblical Heb.

Rem. 7. The pass. ptc. appears in some cases to express a state which is the result of the subject's own action. Is. 26. 3 *בְּטוּחָה* trusting, Ps. 103. 14 *לְכוֹר* mindful, Is. 53. 3 *יָדוּעַ* acquainted with. Cf. 1 S. 2. 18, Jud. 18. 11, Ez. 9. 2, 3, Song 3. 8.

SUBORDINATION OF NOUNS TO THE VERB BY MEANS  
OF PREPOSITIONS

§ 101. The action of the verb often reaches the obj. through the medium of a prep. The prepp. may be assumed to be—1. Words expressing *locality*. 2. Then they are transferred to the sphere of *time*. 3. And, finally, they are used to express relations which are intellectual or ideal.

When several words are coupled together under the regimen of the same prep. it is often repeated before each, as Hos. 2. 21 **וּבְהֶחָסֶד וּבְהֶחָסֶד וּבְהֶחָסֶד** Gen. 12. 1; 40. 2, 2 S. 6. 5, Hos. 1. 7. But usage varies, Hos. 2. 20; 3. 2. Sometimes, in poetry especially, the prep. exerts its influence over a second clause without being repeated, Is. 28. 6 for **לְמַשִּׁיבֵי**, Job 15. 3 for **וּבְמַלְאִים**, Is. 30. 1 *from* my spirit, 48. 9 *for the sake of* my praise.

Certain prepp. of motion, chiefly **אֶל** and **מִן**, are used with verbs that do not express motion, and, on the other hand, a prep. of rest such as **ב** may be used with a verb of motion. This *pregnant* consn., as it has been called, permits the ellipse of a verb. 1 S. 7. 8 **אֶל-תִּהְיֶה שָׁמָּה מִמָּנֹי** *be not silent* (turning away) *from us*. Ps. 22. 22 **מִקְרָנֵי רָמִים עָנִיתָנִי** *heard* (and delivered) *me from* the horns. 1 S. 24. 16 **וַיִּשְׁפְּטֵנִי מִיָּדָה**, cf. 2 S. 18. 19. Is. 38. 17, Ez. 28. 16 *profane* (and cast) *thee from* the mount, Ps. 28. 1; 18. 22; 73. 27, Ezr. 2. 62.—Gen. 19. 27 **וַיָּשָׁם . . . אֶל-הַמָּקוֹם** *he rose early* (and went) *unto* the place, Song 7. 13. Gen. 42. 28 **וַיִּחְדְּדוּ אִישׁ אֶל-אָחִיו** *they trembled* (and looked) *unto* one another; and often with verbs of *fear*, *wonder*, &c., Gen. 43. 33, Is. 13. 8, Hos. 3. 5 *come trembling unto*, Mic. 7. 17, cf. Is. 41. 1. Ps. 89. 40 *profaned* (and cast) *to* the ground, 74. 7. Is. 14. 17, Gen. 14. 3. With 1 S. 21. 3 (if text **יִדְעָתִי** right) cf. Gen. 46. 28. 1 S. 13. 7 *rd. prob.* **מֵאַחֲרָי** *trembled from after* him

(left him from fear). So the brief language, 1 S. 15. 23, rejected thee מִמֶּלֶךְ *from* (being) *king*, cf. v. 26 מִקְהִיּוֹת מ' *from* being queen-mother. 1 K. 15. 13 removed her מִגְבִּירָה *from* being queen-mother. Is. 7. 8; 17. 1, Hos. 9. 12, Jer. 48. 2, Ps. 83. 5. Ps. 55. 19 פָּדָה בְּשָׁלוֹם *redeemed* (so as to be) *in* *peace*, Ps. 23. 6? 1 S. 22. 4 וַיִּנָּחֵם אֶת־פָּנָיו מִלֶּדֶם מ' *led them* (so that they were) *in the presence* of the king of Moab.

Rem. 1. The prepp. are either, (a) of rest *in*, as ב; (b) of motion in the direction of, as אֶל, ל, עַד; (c) of motion away from, as מִן; or (d) of the expression of other relations, as עַל *over, above, upon, תחת under, &c.* In addition there are compound prepp., mostly with אֶל or מִן as first element. See the Lexx. Only a few points can be noticed.

(a) Prep. ב is either *in, within* (Ar. *fī*), or, *at, on* of contact (Ar. *bi*). Most of its uses are reducible to these two senses, e.g. בַּבַּיִת *in the house*, בְּהָר, בְּאֶרֶץ *in, on the mountain*; of time, בַּבֶּקֶר. Hence its use with verbs *to touch* נָגַע, *to cleave to* דָּבַק, *to hold* אָחַז, חָסַם. From the sense of *in* (in the sphere of, embodied in) comes its use with pred. (*beth essentiae*), as Ps. 68. 5 בְּיָהּ שְׁמוֹ (in) *Jah is his name*, Ex. 18. 4 God בְּעֻזִּי *is* (in) *my help*, Ps. 35. 2. And otherwise, Ex. 6. 3 I appeared בְּאֵל שַׁדַּי *as El shaddai*, Is. 40. 10 בְּחֹזֶק *as a strong one*, Ps. 39. 7 *as an image*; Ps. 37. 20; 146. 5, Pr. 3. 26, Job 23. 13, Lev. 17. 11. With ptc. the plur. is used, though ref. be to a single person, Jud. 11. 35 בְּעֹלְבֵי among my troublers = *my troubler*, Ps. 54. 6; 118. 7; 99. 6 *as* (being) his priests, cf. Hos. 11. 4. So other allied senses, e.g. where we use *with*, בְּחֵיל כָּבֵד *with a great army* (in, in the element of; less naturally of contact, and so accompaniment), בְּמִסְקִל *with my staff*, Gen. 32. 11; so *with of instrument*, Mic. 4. 14 בְּשֵׁבֶט *with the rod*, Is. 10. 24, 34; of persons, *in, through*, Hos. 1. 7 בְּיָהוּהוּ *through Je.*, Gen. 9. 6. Similar is ב of *price*, Gen. 30. 16, בְּנִי בְרִידָי *for* (with) the mandrakes, v. 26, 33. 19; 37. 28, 1 K. 10. 29. Finally ב has partitive sense, Job 7. 13 my bed בְּשֵׁחִי *will bear of* (in) *my complaint*, Nu. 11. 17, Ez. 18. 20. On ב with obj., § 73, R. 6.

(b) Prep. אֶל expresses motion *towards*, in the direction of,



whether the goal be reached or not. Gen. 2. 19 brought them **אֶל־הָאָדָם** *unto* the man, 3. 19 *unto* the dust, 6. 18 *into* the ark, 19. 3, 2 S. 5. 8. Then less literally, Gen. 39. 7 lifted up her eyes **אֶל־יוֹסֵף** *towards* (upon) Jos., Deu. 24. 15; Gen. 32. 31 **אֶל־פָּנִים אֶל־פָּנִים** *face to face*, Nu. 12. 8 *mouth to mouth*. So after verbs *to speak*, **אֶל** **דִּבֶּר** (mostly with this verb). After verbs of speaking, in the sense of *of*, *in reference to*, Gen. 20. 2, 1 S. 1. 27; 3. 12, 2 S. 7. 19, Is. 29. 22, Ps. 2. 7. Naturally *unto* may mean *in addition to*, 1 S. 14. 34 eat **אֶל־הָדָם** *with the blood*, Lev. 18. 18, 1 K. 10. 7, Lam. 3. 41, Ez. 7. 26 (**עַל** is more common in this sense, and the two prepp. are often confounded). The verb may give to *unto* the complexion of *hostility*, Gen. 4. 8 rose up **אֶל־הָבֵל** *against* Abel, Gen. 22. 12, Jud. 1. 10, Is. 2. 4; 3. 8.

Prep. **ל** *to* may like **אֶל** imply motion to, Gen. 24. 54; 27. 14, 25, 1 S. 25. 35, Is. 53. 7, Jer. 12. 15 (perhaps oftener in later style, 2 Chr. 1. 13), but oftenest expresses *direction to*, and greatly in an ideal sense. Hence with verb *to say* **אָמַר**; and after verbs of *speaking*, *remembering*, &c., in the sense of *in reference to*, Gen. 20. 13 **אָמַרְתִּי** *say of me*, Ps. 3. 3; 132. 1, Jer. 2. 2, Ez. 18. 22; 33. 16, 1 K. 2. 4; 20. 7, Gen. 17. 20; 19. 21; 27. 8; 42. 9; 45. 1, Is. 5. 1. So Is. 8. 1 **לְמַחֲרָה**, though the **ל** is not to be translated. In particular, **ל** is used to introduce the indirect obj. (dat.), Jud. 1. 13 **וַיִּתְּנוּ־לּוֹ** gave *him*, and in the various senses of the dat., Gen. 24. 29 **וַיִּרְבֶּקֶה אָח** R. *had a brother*, 13. 5. The so-called *dat. commodi* (or, *incommodi*, Jer. 2. 21, Mic. 2. 4, Ez. 37. 11, Ps. 137. 7), Is. 6. 8 **מִי יִלְדֶּלֶט**, Jud. 1. 1, Deu. 30. 12, 13; particularly in the form of the *ethical dat.*, when the action is reflected back upon the agent and done *for* him. Mostly with imper.: Gen. 12. 1 **לָךְ לֵךְ** *get thee*, 22. 5 **שְׁבִרְלָכֶם** *sit you here*, 21. 16 **וַיִּשָּׁב לָהּ** she *sat her down*; Deu. 1. 7, 40; 2. 3; 5. 27, Jos. 7. 10; 22. 19, 1 K. 17. 3, Is. 2. 22; 36. 9; 40. 9, Am. 2. 13; 7. 12, Ps. 120. 6; 122. 3; 123. 4. On use of **ל** to express second obj. after *to make*, *put*, &c., § 78, R. 5; with agent of pass., § 81; to circumscribe the gen., § 28, R. 5.—Prep. **ל** also expresses the norm, *according to* (perh. allied to *in ref. to*), Is. 11. 3 **לְמַרְאֵה עֵינָיו** *according to the sight of his eyes*, Gen. 33. 14; 13. 3, 1 S.

25. 42, Hos. 10. 12? Comp. such phrases as 1 S. 1. 18 וַתֵּלֶךְ לְדֶרֶכָהּ *went her way*, 1. 17 לְשָׁלוֹם *go in peace*; to smite לְפִי חֶרֶב *with the edge*, Is. 1. 5 לְחַיִּי, 50. 11. On ל with obj. cf. § 73, R. 7.

The prep. עַד *unto, as far as to*, often includes the limit, 1 S. 17. 52; esp. the form עַד (וְעַד) מֵן, Gen. 31. 24 כְּסוּב *good or evil* (from g. to e.), 14. 23; 19. 11, Ex. 22. 3, 1 K. 6. 24, Is. 1. 6. The form לְמֵן is common, Deu. 4. 32, Jud. 19. 30, 2 S. 7. 6, cf. Is. 7. 17, Am. 6. 14. In later style the compound לְ עַד is common, 2 Chr. 28. 9; 29. 28, cf. 1 K. 18. 29; Jud. 3. 3 in the phrase "unto the entering in of Hamath," 1 Chr. 13. 5, cf. 5. 9. The sense *up to* becomes = *even* (cf. Ar. ḥatta), Nu. 8. 4, 1 S. 2. 5, Hag. 2. 19, Job 25. 5, cf. Ex. 9. 7, Deu. 2. 5.

(c) Prep. מֵן may be a noun = *a part*. Its various senses follow from this, e.g. (1) the partitive, Gen. 30. 14 מִדְּרָאִי בְנֵה *some of thy son's mandrakes*, 28. 11; 45. 23, Ex. 4. 9; 6. 25; 16. 27; 17. 5, Lev. 5. 9, 1 K. 1. 6, Job 27. 6, Neh. 5. 5, Ps. 137. 3 (§ 11, R. 1a). So perhaps such passages as Lev. 4. 2, Deu. 15. 7 (§ 35, R. 2), 1 S. 14. 45, 2 S. 14. 11, Ex. 12. 4, unless such cases belong to (3) below, e.g. 1 S. 14. 45 *from* (beginning with, starting from) *a hair*. Cases like Gen. 6. 2; 7. 22; 9. 10; 17. 12, where מֵן seems to particularise, are explainable in the same way.

(2) The sense *from, away from*, naturally follows. Hence use of מֵן in comparison, Ex. 12. 4, 1 S. 15. 22, 2 S. 20. 6, Hos. 6. 6 (§ 33 seq.). Hence also *privative* sense, *away from, without*, Gen. 27. 39 מִפֶּלַל *away from the dew*, Job 11. 15 מִמָּוֶה *without spot*, 19. 26; 21. 9, Is. 22. 3, Hos. 9. 11, Jer. 10. 14; 48. 45, Mic. 3. 6, Zech. 7. 11, Ps. 109. 24, Pr. 20. 3. So after verbs of *delivering, saving, redeeming from, restraining, ceasing from, fearing* and *being ashamed to do*, &c. And in pregnant consns. (§ 101 above); Gen. 27. 1, 1 S. 8. 7; 15. 23, 1 K. 15. 13, Is. 7. 8, Hos. 4. 6; 9. 12, Ps. 102. 5, cf. 1 S. 25. 17 *so that there is no* speaking to him. (3) The sense *from* may refer to *source, point of starting from*, e.g. frequently in the local (and temporal) sense, Gen. 12. 1; 13. 11; 15. 4, Ex. 15. 22, 1 S. 17. 33; 20. 1;

but then, naturally, in a *causative* sense (influence coming from), *from, because of, by*, as Gen. 48. 10 his eyes were set *from* old age, Is. 53. 5 pierced *because of* our transgressions. Gen. 9. 11; 16. 10; 49. 12, Ex. 6. 9, Deu. 7. 7, 1 S. 1. 16, 1 K. 14. 4, Is. 28. 7; 40. 26, Ob. 9, 10, Hos. 11. 6. Cf. § 81.

(d) Prep. *על* has the meaning *above, over, upon*; e.g. locally whether of motion or rest, as Gen. 2. 5 had not rained *upon* the earth, 2 K. 4. 34 he laid himself *upon* the child, Gen. 24. 30 he saw the bracelets *upon* the hands of his sister, Gen. 1. 20 let fowl fly *above* the earth. And in a figurative sense, Gen. 16. 5 *חַמְסִי עָלַיְךָ* my wrong be *upon thee*, 41. 33 set him *over* the land, Jud. 3. 10, 1 S. 15. 17.

From these senses comes the use of *על* with verbs to *cover*, as *נָפְסָה, to pity, spare* חוּם, *חָמַל, to burden*, as Is. 1. 14 *הֵיוּ עָלַי לְטָרָח* they are *a burden upon me*, 2 S. 15. 33, Job 7. 20. So to express *obligation*, 2 S. 18. 11 *לָתֶת לְךָ* *it would have lain upon me* to give thee, Gen. 30. 28, Jud. 19. 20, Pr. 7. 14. With words expressing the idea of *addition*, Gen. 31. 50 if thou take wives *עַל־בָּנָתִי* *in addition to* my daughters, 32. 12 *עַל־בָּנִים* *אִם* mother *with* children, Gen. 28. 9; 48. 22, Hos. 10. 14, Am. 3. 15. Other uses of *על* are similar, as Jud. 9. 17 *נִלָּחַם עֲלֵיכֶם* fought *for you* (*over*, protecting), but also in a hostile sense *against*, Gen. 43. 18 *to fall upon*, Gen. 34. 30 to gather themselves *against*, 50. 20 plot *against*, Nu. 10. 9, Am. 7. 9, Is. 7. 5, Ps. 2. 2. From the sense *over* (being higher) comes the meaning *beside, by* after *to stand, sit, &c.* Ps. 1. 3 *עַל־פְּלִיגִימִים* *by* the rivers of water, 2 S. 9. 10 *עַל־שֻׁלְחָנִי* *at* my table (also *אֵל*), Gen. 18. 2 standing *beside him*, 16. 7; 29. 2; 41. 1; Ex. 14. 2, Is. 6. 2.

From the sense *upon* comes the use of *על* to express the condition, circumstances in which an action is performed, on which it rests or which underlie it. Here *על* seems more general than *ב* and has such meanings as *amidst, although, notwithstanding, according to, &c.* Jer. 8. 18 *עָלַי יָנֹחַ* *amidst* trouble, Job 10 7 *עַל־דַּעְתְּךָ* *though* thou knowest, Is. 53. 9 *עַל־לֹא־חַמְסַם עָשָׂה* *notwithstanding that* he had done no evil, Job 16. 17. 2 K. 24. 3, Ps. 31. 24, Jer. 6. 14, Is. 38. 15; 60. 7.

Ps. 50. 5. So perhaps Ex. 12. 8 על־מִרְרִים *with* bitter herbs (the idea *in addition to* is less expressive), Nu. 9. 11.<sup>1</sup>

Prep. עִם is *with* of accompaniment. Hence the sense of *beside, near* locally, Gen. 25. 11; 35. 4, Jud. 9. 6, 1 S. 10. 2. So its use in comparisons, Job 9. 26 עִם־אֲנִיּוֹת אֲבָה like ships of reed, Ps. 88. 5; and in the sense *as well as*, 1 Chr. 25. 8, Ecc. 2. 16. In 1 S. 16. 12; 17. 42 עִם seems used adverbially, unless יָפֵה be employed nominally, *along with beauty* of eyes.

Ami & Ind (Ami)  
(Look of Ami  
himself)

Prep. תַּחַת *under, below*; hence such usage as 1 S. 14. 9 תַּחַתֵּנוּ *where we stand* (under us), on the spot, Jos. 5. 8; 6. 5, Jud. 7. 21, 2 S. 2, 23. So the sense *instead*; and אֲשֶׁר *because*.

The particle כִּי *like, as*, is either a prep. or an undeveloped noun, *instar*. If the latter, it may be in appos. with a previous word or in acc. of condition. If a prep. it is used in a pregnant sense; in either case it governs the gen. Ps. 95. 8 harden not your hearts כִּי־מִרְיָה as *at* M., 83. 10 do to them כִּי־סִקְרָא as *to* S., Gen. 34. 31 הַכֹּזֵנָה as *with* a harlot? Hos. 2. 5 הַיּוֹמָה as *on* the day. Is. 1. 25; 5. 17; 10. 26; 23. 15; 28. 21; 51. 9, Hos. 2. 17; 9. 9; 12. 10, Am. 9. 11, Ps. 35. 14, Job 28. 5; 29. 2.

The first element of the compound prepp. is chiefly מִן or מֵ. The form מִמֶּנִּי in earlier writings is mostly a prep. *incommodi*; in later style it is used for *because of, for the sake of*, even in a favourable sense.

<sup>1</sup> From the sense *upon* comes the general use of עַל as a prep. *incommodi*, opposed to לְ. Particularly in the expression of feelings and mental states with such words as *heart, soul, spirit*, the prep. suggests the pressure *upon* the subject of the feeling or state. Jer. 8. 18 עָלַי לִבִּי יָדַי my heart is *sick upon me*, Hos. 11. 8, Lam. 3. 20, Job 10. 1; 14. 22; 30. 16, Ps. 42. 6, 7, 12; 43. 5; 131. 2; 142. 4; 143. 4, Jon. 2. 8. In translation *in* must often be used, and sometimes the prep. is almost untranslatable, e.g. Gen. 48. 7 Rachel *died* עַל, cf. Nu. 11. 13, Jud. 14. 16. The primary sense may become weakened in usage, Neh. 5. 7.

Noun includes noun ~~verb~~. Part. originally a noun-verb. At first quality not distinguished from action. Davidson never uses noun only in sense of substantive.

## SYNTAX OF THE SENTENCE

### THE SENTENCE ITSELF

§ 102. A sent. consists of a subj. and pred. The subj. may be expressed separately, as אֲנִי יוֹסֵף *I am Jos.*, or in the case of the verbal sent. contained in the form, as מְכַרְתֶּם *ye sold*. Besides the mere subj. and pred. sentences usually contain additional elements, such as an obj. under the regimen of the pred., or some amplifications descriptive either of subj. or pred.

The subj. may be a pron., or a noun, or anything equivalent to a noun as an adj. or adverb used nominally, or a clause. Gen. 39. 9 אַתָּה אִשְׁתּוֹ *thou art his wife*; 3. 3 אָמַר אֱלֹהִים *God has said*; 2. 18 לֹא טוֹב הָיִיתָ הָאָדָם לְבַדּוֹ *that man be alone is not good*. So 2 K. 9. 33 וַיִּזְרֹק מִדָּמָהּ *some of her blood* spirted. Ex. 16. 27, 2 S. 1. 4; 11. 17, 2 K. 10. 10.

The pred. may be a pron., Jud. 9. 28 מִי שָׁכֵם *who is Shechem?* A noun, Gen. 39. 9 (above), an adj. or ptc., Gen. 2. 10 נָהָר יֵצֵא *a river went out*, Is. 6. 3 קְדוֹשׁ יְהוָה *holy is Je.*; a finite verb, Gen. 3. 3 (above); or an adverbial or prepositional phrase, Gen. 2. 12 שָׁם הִבְדִּילָהּ *there is bdolach*; Ps. 11. 4 בַּשָּׁמַיִם כִּסְאוֹ *in heaven is his throne*. The noun as pred. is very common, because the adj. is little developed in the earlier stages of the Semitic languages. See Nom. Appos. § 29 e.

The simple sent. is either nominal or verbal. A verbal sent. is one whose pred. is a *finite* verb. All other sentences

We do not want to emphasize the essential origin from them any more than is necessary.

are nominal.—This definition, though only partially exact, is sufficient.

### 1. *The Nominal Sentence*

§ 103. In the nominal sent., which expresses a constant and enduring condition, the subj. is the most prominent element. In general the emphatic word is placed first, hence in this sent. the order is—subj., pred. The subj. in the nominal sent. is very generally definite, but not always. Gen. 2. 12 **וְנֶהְבֵּה הָאָרֶץ הַהִיא טוֹב** and the gold of that land is good; 13. 13 **וְאֲנָשֵׁי סֶדֶם רָעִים** and the men of S. were wicked; 2. 10 **וַיָּצֵא נָהָר** and a river went forth; 29. 17 **וְעֵינֵי לָאָה רַכּוֹת** the eyes of L. were tender, 12. 6; 13. 7. Esp. after **וְהָיָה**, and when ptc. is pred., 16. 6 **הֲנִיָּה שְׁפָחוּתְךָ בְּיָדְךָ** thy maid is in thy hand. 20. 15, 16; 27. 42; 28. 12; 41. 3, 5, 6; 48. 1.

§ 104. This order is not invariable. There is considerable freedom in the disposition of the parts of the sent., and emphasis on the pred. may give it the first place. (a) A simple adj. when pred. often stands first, particularly if the subj. be also simple, though when the subj. is of some heaviness the adj. may be put at the end, cf. Gen. 2. 12 above. Jer. 12. 1 **צַדִּיק אַתָּה יְהוָה** righteous art thou, Je. Particularly if the adj. be in the comparative, 1 S. 24. 18 **מִפְּנֵי אַתָּה צַדִּיק** thou art more righteous than I; Gen. 29. 19 **טוֹב תִּתֵּנִי אֵתָּה לָּךְ** it is better that I give her to thee. Gen. 4. 13, Hos. 13. 12, Ps. 111. 2, 4; 116. 5; 118. 8, 9.

(b) In dependent sentences, e.g. after **כִּי** that, for, the pred. has a certain emphasis, and stands first. Gen. 3. 5 **כִּי יֵדַע אֱלֹהִים** for God knows, 3. 6; 22. 12. Esp. if subj. be a pron.; 3. 10 **כִּי עָרִים אָנֹכִי** because I was naked; 3. 19; 20. 7; 25. 30; 29. 9; 42. 33, Am. 7. 13. And in general the pronominal subj. is without emphasis, 24. 34; 26. 9; 30. 1, Am. 7. 14; though, of course, it may be otherwise, as when

God speaks solemnly of Himself, Gen. 15. 1; 26. 24; 28. 13. After nom. *pendens* the resumptive pron. with indef. pred. is unemphatic; 34. 21; 40. 12, 18; 41. 25-27; 42. 11.

(c) Naturally the pred. is emphatic in interrogative sentences of whatever kind. Gen. 24. 65 **מִי הָאִישׁ הַלָּזֶה** *who* (pred.) is yonder man? 1 S. 17. 43 **אֲנִי הַכֶּלֶב** *am I a dog?* Gen. 18. 17. **אֲנִי הֲמִכְסֶה** *shall I hide?* Gen. 4. 9, Jud. 2. 22, 1 S. 16. 4; though emphasis may alter this order, Ex. 16. 7, 8 **מָה וְנַחֲנִי** *what are we?* In answers the order of question is generally retained; Gen. 29. 4 . . . **מֵאֵתָּם מֵאֵתָּן** *from where are ye?* *from Haran* we, 24. 23, 24, 2 K. 10. 13. But great variety appears in use of the pron.; cf. Gen. 24. 65.

(4) The prep. **ל** with noun or pron. when meaning *to be to, to have*, often stands first; Gen. 26. 20 **לָנוּ הַמַּיִם** *the water is ours*; 29. 16 **וּלְלֶבֶן שְׁתֵּי בָנוֹת** *and L. had two daughters*. 19. 8; 31. 16; 48. 5, Ex. 2. 16, Jud. 3. 16, 1 S. 1. 2; 17. 12; 25. 2, 2 S. 14. 6. And so adverbial expressions, Gen. 2. 12.

In the nominal sentences above the predication is expressed by the mere juxtaposition of subj. and pred. without any copula. The time also to which the predication belongs is left unexpressed.

## 2. The Verbal Sentence

§ 105. In the verbal sent. the idea expressed by the verb is the emphatic element, and in ordinary calm discourse the order is—pred., subj. Gen. 4. 26 **וַיֵּלֶד בֶּן** *a son was born*. And with the <sup>sacred</sup> ~~conversive~~ <sup>tenses</sup> universally, which must stand at the head of the clause, Gen. 3. 2 **וַתֹּאמֶר הָאִשָּׁה** *and the woman said*. This kind of sentence is far the most common in prose narrative.

When, however, any emphasis falls on the subj. it may precede the verbal pred. This emphasis may be of various kinds, though generally due to some kind of antithesis,

*This is the infir-  
mest point of wh.  
§ is an illustration*

latent or expressed. Gen. 3. 13 הַנָּחָשׁ הִשְׁיֵאֲנִי *the serpent* beguiled me; 37. 33 כְּתָנֶת בְּנֵי חַיָּה רָעָה אֲכָלְתָּהּ *it is my son's coat, an evil beast hath devoured him*; 37. 27 וְיָדְנוּ אֶל-תְּהִיבוֹ but let not *our hand* be upon him. Often the antithesis is expressed: Is. 1. 3 יָדַע שׁוֹר קִנְיָהּ יִשְׂרָאֵל *the ox knoweth his owner, Israel does not know*; Gen. 4. 2 Abel was a shepherd אֲדָמָה עֶבֶד וְחַיָּה אֲדָמָה *but Cain was a tiller of the ground*; 1 S. 1. 22 ... וַיַּעַל הָאִישׁ *the man went up, but Hannah did not go up*. Gen. 6. 8; 18. 33; 33. 17; 35. 18; 37. 11, Hos. 2. 23, 24; Is. 1. 2 and *they*; Am. 7. 17. A new subject in distinction from others is thus introduced, e.g. Jud. 1. 29 *and Ephraim*; sometimes without *and*, Jud. 1. 30, 31, 33. Or any new point that is to be somewhat signalised, Gen. 2. 6 *and a mist went up*. 1 K. 2. 28 *and the report* came to Joab. But rhythm and style must also be taken into account.

In the circumstantial sent. (§ 137) the subj. is prominent, and precedes the verbal pred. Gen. 24. 31 וְאֲנֹכִי פָּנִיתִי הַבַּיִת *when I have made ready the house?* Job 21. 22 וְשָׁפוּט רָמִים יְהוָה יִלְמַדְדַּע *shall one teach God knowledge when he judges those on high?* Ex. 23. 9; 33. 12, Jud. 4. 21.

Rem. 1. As stated above, there is a departure from the ordinary prose narrative style with *vav impf.* when a *new* subject has to be introduced or any important point signalised which is the beginning of a new development, e.g. Gen. 4. 1, the new history after the fall. In these cases the subj. is placed first even in the verbal sent. This is particularly the usage when the event to be signalised was anterior to the events in the current of the narrative. Jud. 1. 16 וּבְנֵי קִינִי *now the Kenites* had gone up with Judah. Gen. 16. 1; 24. 62; 31. 19, Jud. 4. 11. See exx. § 39c.

Rem. 2. It is a point of style, however, especially in prophetic parallelism, and even otherwise, to vary the consn.,

is inferential  
clause

was going

same thing  
unscientific to  
anticipate



and after a conversive tense to use the simple tense and subj. before it with no emphasis. Is. 6. 7 **וְכָרַעְתָּ וְחָטַאתָ** **וְכָרַעְתָּ**. Is. 11. 13; 14. 25; 28. 18; 31. 3, Ps. 78. 64.

### 3. The Compound Sentence. *Casus pendens*

§ 106. In such a sent. as *Cain's father is dead* the language often prefers to say, *Cain, his father is dead*, **מֵת אָבִירֵקֵן** instead of **מֵת אָבִירֵקֵן**. So for: the way of *God* is perfect, **הָאֵל תָּמִים דְּרָכּוֹ** Ps. 18. 31. While a certain prominence is thus given to the main subject it is slight, and the rendering *as for God*, his way, &c., is an exaggeration. Such sentences are composite; the subj. is placed at the head in an isolated position as *casus pendens*, and the predication regarding it follows in a distinct sent., which may be nominal or verbal. The effect of this consn. is sometimes to give real emphasis to the chief subj., but often merely to give emphasis or vividness and lightness to the sentence as a whole. The consn. is common in sentences where the subj. is encumbered with complementary elements, so that it needs to be disentangled and restated. Gen. 3. 12 **הָאִשָּׁה הָאֲשֶׁר . . . הָיָא נָתַתָּה** *the woman whom thou gavest, &c., she gave me*; 15. 4 **הוּא יִרְשָׁה . . . הוּא יֵצֵא** *he who shall come out of thy loins, he shall be thine heir*; 24. 7 **יְאֹלֵהִי** *Je. the God of heaven who took me, and who, &c., he shall send*.

The subj. placed as an isolated inchoative is resumed by a pron. in the same case as the subj. would have had in a simple sent.

(a) Nom.—Gen. 42. 11 **קָלְנוּ בְּנֵי אִישׁ אֶחָד בָּחֲנוּ** *we are all sons of one man*; Is. 1. 13 **קָטַרְתָּ תוֹעֵבָה הִיא לִי** *incense (sacrificial smoke) is an abomination to me*. Jer. 12. 6 **בָּנָדוּ בְּךָ . . . גַּם־אֲחֵיהֶם** *even thy brethren have acted treacherously*. Gen. 14. 24; 22. 24; 30. 33; 31. 16;

34. 21; 41. 25; 44. 17; 45. 20, Ex. 12. 16, Jud. 4. 4, 2 S. 5. 1, Deu. 1. 30, 38, 39.

(b) Gen.—Jud. 17. 5 **וְהָאִישׁ מִיכָה לוֹ בַּיִת א'** *the man Micah had a house of God.* 2 K. 1. 4 **וְהָאִשָּׁר עָלִיתָ מִן הַמִּטָּה לֹא תֵרֵד מִמֶּנָּה** *from the bed which thou hast gone up into thou shalt not come down.* Is. 4. 3 **קְרוֹשׁ . . . וְהוֹשָׁאָר** *he that is left shall be called holy.* The prep. is sometimes placed before the main subj., and repeated with the pron. Gen. 2. 17 **וְיִמְעַץ הַדֵּעַת . . . לֹא תֹאכַל מִמֶּנּוּ** but thou shalt not eat *of the tree of knowledge.* 2 S. 6. 23.—Gen. 17. 4, 15; 48. 7, 1 S. 12. 23, 1 K. 1. 20; 12. 17, Is. 3. 12; 9. 1; 11. 10, Hos. 9. 8, 11, Ps. 10. 5; 11. 4; 125. 2, Jon. 2. 7.

(c) Acc.—Gen. 24. 27 **אָנֹכִי בַדֶּרֶךְ נִחַנִּי י'** *Je. led me in the way.* Gen. 28. 13 **לָהּ אֶתִּנֶּנָּה . . . הָאָרֶץ** *the land on which thou liest will I give thee.* Is. 1. 7 **אֲדַמְתְּכֶם זָרִים** *your land strangers devour in your sight.* The main subj. may be acc., which is resumed: Gen. 47. 21 **וְאֶת־הָעָם הָעֶבְרִי הֵעֲבִיר אֹתוֹ** *and the people he removed.* Gen. 13. 15; 49. 8, Nu. 22. 35, Jud. 11. 24, 1 S. 9. 13; 25. 29, 1 K. 15. 13; 22. 14, 2 K. 9. 27, Is. 8. 13, Ps. 125. 5, Deu. 13. 1; 14. 6.

(d) In the verbal sent. the expression of the resumptive pron. throws emphasis upon the subj., the place of which at the head gives it prominence. The same is the case in the nominal sent. when the pred. is definite, as 1 K. 18. 39 **יְהוָה הוּא הָאֱלֹהִים** *Jehovah is God!* Deu. 18. 2 **יְהוָה הוּא** *Jehovah is his inheritance.* In this case the pron. precedes the pred. Gen. 2. 14; 9. 18; 42. 6, Deu. 10. 17; 12. 23; 31. 6, 8, Is. 9. 14; 33. 6, 1 S. 17. 14.

When the pred. of the nominal sent. is indefinite the pron. usually follows the pred., and there is a balance of emphasis on subj. and pred., the resumptive pron. sinking almost to the rank of a copula. Gen. 41. 25 **חֲלוֹם פָּרְעָה הוּא** *the dream of Ph. is one;* 47. 6 **אֶרֶץ מִצְרַיִם לְפָנָיִה**

הוּא. Gen. 34. 21; 45. 20, Ex. 3. 5; 32. 16, Nu. 11. 7, Deu. 1. 17; 4. 24, Jos. 5. 15, 2 S. 21. 2, 1 K. 20. 31, Mic. 7. 3. Cf. Ps. 76. 8.

The sent. is also compound when *cas. pend.* is resumed by convers. tenses, *e.g.* 1 K. 12. 17.

Rem. 1. When the *cas. pend.* is to be resumed in acc. (*c* above) it may be put in acc. also in Ar. And in other languages—

Den König Wiswamitra,  
Den treibt's ohne Rast und Ruh . .

Rem. 2. The fact that the pron. agrees with subj. in gend. and numb., *e.g.* הָיָה הוּא הַנֶּפֶשׁ, seems to show that properly it is a resumption of the subj. and not an anticipation of the pred. Its occasional agreement with pred. (*e.g.* in Eth. &c.) is a familiar case of attraction, cf. Jer. 10. 3.

The consn. is probably different when the pron. stands after a pron. of 1st or 2nd pers., as 2 S. 7. 28 אַתָּה הוּא הָאֱלֹהִים. Here the 3rd pers. pron. strengthens the other, *thou art God*.<sup>1</sup> Is. 37. 16, Jer. 14. 22, Ps. 44. 5, Neh. 9. 6, 2 Chr. 20. 6, cf. Is. 51. 9, 10, and with 1st pers. Is. 43. 25; 51. 12; 52. 6. So 1 Chr. 21. 17 *I am he-who* (אֲשֶׁר) has sinned, Ez. 38. 17, cf. Jer. 49. 12. Others (Ew. Dr.) regard הוּא in these cases as pred., 2 S. 7. 28 *thou art he—God*. The same seems the consn. with הוּא יְהוָה Ecc. 1. 17, 1 Chr. 22. 1, and אֱלֹהֵי הוּא Gen. 25. 16, Lev. 23. 2, Nu. 3. 20, 21, 27, 33, &c., though the emphasis here is very slight.

In some cases הוּא appears to be pred., Is. 41. 4 אֲנִי הוּא *I am he* (43. 10, 13; 46. 4; 48. 12, Ps. 102. 28), where *he* (it) expresses the divine consciousness of himself, cf. the

<sup>1</sup> This use of the *third* pers. pron. seems secondary. Naturally it would be used to strengthen only words in the 3rd pers., *e.g.* Is. 7. 14, Nu. 18. 23, Ex. 12. 42, Ezr. 7. 6, 2 Chr. 32. 30. The same use of 3rd pers. pron. appears in the so-called Ar. "pron. of separation" (a mere empirical phrase). This 3rd pers. pron. should properly be used only after a subj. in 3rd pers., its use after *I, thou, &c.*, is no doubt secondary and analogical, and is less classical. *E.g.* John 14. 6 *ana hua elṭarīq* (van Dyck), *I am the way*, in the more classical trans. of the Jesuits is *ana elṭarīq, ana elbâb, I am the door, &c.*

beginning of 43. 11 and end of 43. 12. In sense, *it is I*, or *I am* (what I am) is nearly the same.

When the sent. is transposed with pred. first the pron. anticipates the subj., Lam. 1. 18 צָרִיק הוּא יְהוָה; Song 6. 8, 9 אִתָּהּ הִיא יֹנְתִי *one* is she, my dove; Pr. 30. 24, 29. Cf. Pr. 6. 16; 30. 15, 18. Peculiar is 1 S. 20. 29 וְהוּא צִוָּה לִי אֲחֵי (Sep. otherwise), cf. Ps. 87. 5.

# EXPRESSION OF SUBJECT IN VERBAL SENTENCE

§ 107. In the verbal sent. the subj. is expressed by the inflectional element of the form, except in 3rd pers., as יָדַעְתִּי *I know*, כָּמַרְתֶּם *ye sold* (where *tem* and *ti* express the subj.). In the nominal sent. the subj. has to be expressed. On its omission with ptcp. cf. § 100.

## 1. *Emphasis on Subject*

When emphasis falls on the pronom. subj. in verbal sent. it is expressed separately, being then placed chiefly before, but also after, the verb. The emphasis is often slight, and due to contrast. Gen. 42. 8 לֹא הִכְרָהוּ וְהֵם *but they* did not recognise him; 33. 3; 42. 23, Jud. 4. 3; 13. 5, Is. 1. 2, Hos. 2. 10, Am. 2. 9. After the verb, Jud. 8. 23 לֹא־אֶמְשֵׁל בָּכֶם *I will not rule over you*. Gen. 24. 60, Ex. 18. 19, 1 S. 20. 8; 23. 22, 2 S. 12. 28; 17. 15, 2 K. 10. 4, Is. 20. 6, Jer. 17. 18. The pron. is often strengthened by גַּם whether before the verb or after. Gen. 20. 6; 38. 11; 48. 19, Jud. 1. 3, 22; 3. 31, Hos. 4. 6.

Rem. 1. These additional exx. of pron. may be turned up. Gen. 30. 26; 31. 6; 42. 19; 43. 9; 45. 8, Ex. 20. 19, Deu. 3. 28; 5. 24, Jud. 8. 21; 15. 12. In many cases, however, the emphasis is not on the mere pron.; the expression of the pron. gives force or solemnity to the whole phrase, which is emphatic. Particularly in *responses* to preceding statements or requests, as Gen. 21. 24 *I will swear*, 38. 17; 47. 30, Jud. 6. 18 (11. 9), 2 S. 3. 13; 21. 6, 1 K. 2. 18;

5. 22, 2 K. 6. 3. But also in other cases, Jud. 5. 3 *I will sing, I will sing to the Lord*. Pr. 24. 32. And in prayers the *thou* is merely part of the solemnity of the sentiment, 1 K. 3. 6. And so in earnest appeals, as in the phrases *thou knowest, ye know*, the emphasis is not on the mere pron. but belongs to the whole expression. Gen. 44. 27, Jos. 14. 6, 1 S. 28. 9, 2 S. 17. 8, 1 K. 2. 5, 15; 5. 17, 20 (2 K. 9. 11), 2 K. 4. 1, cf. 2 K. 19. 11. Many languages whose inflected verb does not need the pron. show a tendency to express 1st and 2nd pron. So Moab. St. 1. 21 seq. Pleonastic expression of אֲנִי after verb is a peculiarity of Eccles., e.g. 1. 16; 2. 1, 11, 15, &c., cf. Song 5. 5.

## 2. The Indefinite Subject

§ 108. The indefinite, unnamed subj. (Eng. *they, one*) is expressed in various ways. (a) By 3 pers. sing. of verb, e.g. in the phrase *they called the name*, &c. Gen. 11. 9 בָּבֶלָה עָלֵינוּ קָרָא שְׁמָהּ בָּבֶלָה *they called its name Babel*. Gen. 16. 14; 21. 31, Ex. 15. 23. The 3 plur. is also used, 1 S. 23. 28, 1 Chr. 11. 7; 14. 11. But in other cases 3 sing. is of frequent use. Is. 7. 24 יְבֹא שָׁמָּה וּבִקְשֶׁת יָבֵא שָׁמָּה with arrows and bow *shall one go* there; Ex. 10. 5 לֹא יוּכַל לִרְאוֹת הָאָרֶץ so that *one shall not be able* to see the earth. Gen. 38. 28; 48. 1, Deu. 15. 2, 1 S. 16. 4; 23. 22; 26. 20, 2 S. 15. 31; 16. 23, 1 K. 18. 26, 2 K. 5. 4, Is. 6. 10; 8. 4; 14. 32, Am. 6. 12, Mic. 2. 4.

(b) By 3 plur. Gen. 29. 2 מִן־הַבְּאֵר הַהוּא יִשְׁקוּ הָעֶדְרִים from that well *they watered* the flocks; 1 S. 27. 5 יִתְנַדְּלִי let them give me a place. Gen. 41. 14; 49. 31, 1 S. 1. 25, 1 K. 1. 2; 15. 8, Hos. 11. 2, 7; 12. 9, Jer. 8. 4; 16. 6 (sing. and pl.), Job 6. 2, 2 Chr. 25. 16.

(c) By ptcpl., in plur. Gen. 39. 22 וְכָל־אֲשֶׁר עָשִׂים וְהָיָה הָיָה עִשָּׂה and whatever *they did* there. Is. 32. 12, Jer. 38. 23, Ez. 13. 7, Neh. 6. 10, 2 Chr. 9. 28. More rarely sing., Is. 21. 11 קָרָא אֵלַי one calleth unto me from Seir.

Rem. 1. The 3 sing. *fem.* seems used Num. 26. 59, 1 K. 1. 6. The real subject in *a*, *b* is the ptc. sing. or plur., קרא קרא *a caller*, or הַקּוֹרֵא *the caller*, called. The ptc. is often expressed: Is. 28. 4 אֲשֶׁר יִרְאֶה הָרְאָה אֹתָהּ which *one* (the seer) *sees*; v. 24. Nu. 6. 9, Deu. 22. 8, 2 S. 17. 9, Is. 16. 10, Jer. 9. 23; 31. 5, Ez. 33. 4, Am. 9. 1, Mic. 5. 2, Nah. 2. 3, Ps. 129. 3. In 2 K. 12. 10 אִישׁ is used for *one*, cf. 23. 8. Am. 6. 10 הָעוֹד עִמָּךְ are there *any* still beside thee? the subj. is rather understood.

Rem. 2. The 3 plur. is sometimes used where human agents cannot be supposed, in the sense of *pass.* Job 7. 3 and wearisome nights לִי מְנוּ *are appointed* me; 6. 2; 19. 26; 34. 20, Ez. 32. 25, Pr. 9. 11. The usage is common in Aram., Dan. 2. 30; 4. 22. So ptc. 4. 28, 29. Peculiar ptc. sing., Jud. 13. 19 וּמִפְּלֵא לַעֲשׂוֹת and something marvelous was done.

Rem. 3. The use of 2nd person for the indeterminate subj. is rare, except in the phrase עַד-בָּאֵךְ, בָּאֵךְ (בָּאֵכָה) *till thou comest* = *as far as*, 1 K. 18. 46, Gen. 10. 19, 30; 13. 10. Apparently, Is. 7. 25 שָׁמָּה לֹא תָבוֹא *thou shalt not come there*. In the injunctions of the Law *thou* is the community personified or each person, and in Prov. *thou* is the pupil of the Wiseman, though cf. Pr. 19. 25; 26. 12; 30. 28.

### 3. Impersonal Construction

§ 109. The verb is also used impersonally in 3 sing., perf. and impf., chiefly mas. but also fem. Jud. 2. 15 וַיִּצָּר לָהֶם *they were greatly distressed*; Gen. 32. 8. 1 S. 30. 6 וַיִּצָּר לְדָוִד *and it was*, וַיְהִי *and it shall be*. So many words followed by prep. ל; as ל רָע *to be amiss to*, Nu. 22. 34, Gen. 21. 12, 2 S. 19. 8; Jer. 7. 6. ל טוֹב 1 S. 16. 16, Hos. 10. 1, Jer. 7. 23. ל בָּר *bitter*, Ru. 1. 13, Lam. 1. 4. ל חֶם *to have heat*, 1 K. 1. 1, 2, Hag. 1. 6. Job 3. 13 לִי אֶזְנוֹ *I should have had rest*, Is. 23. 12, Neh. 9. 28. Cf. Gen. 4. 5, 1 S. 16. 23.

The fem. seems used in reference to the phenomena of

nature. Job 11. 17 תִּעֲפֶה (cohort.) *should it be dark*. Am. 4. 7 תִּמְטִיר *it rained* (freq.). Mic. 3. 6 *it shall be dark*, Ps. 50. 3; 68. 15. (But cf. 1 S. 29. 10 *when it is light* (mas.), 2 S. 2. 32, see Gen. 44. 3, Jer. 13. 16.) And of an unseen power, Job 18. 14 *it* brings him (he is brought) to the king of terrors. The *pass.* is also used impersonally in the *mas.* Gen. 4. 26 לָקְרָא אֶזְרוּ הוֹחֵל *then it was begun* to invoke; Ez. 16. 34 לֹא זוֹנָה וְאֶחָרֶיךָ *there was no whoring* after thee. The *pass.* in this case often governs like the act. (§ 79), Am. 4. 2 יִנָּשָׂא אֶתְכֶם *ye shall be taken away*. Nu. 16. 29, Deu. 21. 3, 4, 2 S. 17. 16, Is. 14. 3; 16. 10; 27. 13; 53. 5, Jer. 16. 6, Am. 9. 9, Mal. 1. 11 (ptcp.), Ps. 87. 3.

Rem. 1. The forms מֵיץ, רֵעַ, זֶה, &c., might be adjectives, but the use of impf. and inf. makes it more probable that they are perfs. Peculiar is Prov. 13. 10, by pride מִצָּחַ יֵצֵא *there comes strife* (es giebt). Rarely with suff., Job 6. 17 בָּחֳמוֹ *when it is hot*.

Rem. 2. It is scarcely impersonal use of fem. when it is employed of a subject suggested by some statement preceding, where we say *it*. Is. 7. 7 לֹא תָקִים *it* shall not stand (the purpose); 14. 24, Jud. 11. 39, 1 S. 10. 12. The fem. is often, however, used for *neut.*—Comp. these cases of fem.: Gen. 24. 14 (*thereby*), 1 S. 11. 2 וְשִׂמְחָהּ (*it*, putting out their eye), Gen. 15. 6 counted *it* (the *fact* that he believed) Ex. 30. 21, Jos. 11. 20 הִיחָה, 2 S. 2. 26; 3. 37, 1 K. 2. 15, 2 K. 19. 25; 24. 3, 20, Is. 22. 11; 30. 8, Mic. 1. 9, Jer. 4. 28; 5. 31; 7. 31; 10. 7; 19. 5, Ez. 33. 33, Job 4. 5; 18. 15.

Rem. 3. In poetry a peculiar consn. occurs in which the verb seems to have a double subj., one personal and the other the organ or member, &c., by which the action is actually performed. This neuter subj. has always a suff. of the same person as the personal subj., and may precede or follow the verb. Ps. 3. 5 אֶקְרָא אֶל־יְהוָה *my voice, I cried, i.e. I cried aloud*; Is. 10. 30 צְהִלִי קוֹלִי *shout aloud!* Is. 26. 9, Hab. 3. 15, Ps. 17. 10, 13, 14; 32. 8; 44. 3; 60. 7; 66. 17; 69. 11; 108. 2, 7; 142. 2. In a nominal sent. Ps. 83. 19.

—Others consider קָלִי, &c., to be acc., but the presence of the suff. distinguishes the present case from that in § 67, R. 3.

# COMPLEMENT OF THE VERBAL SENTENCE

§ 110. The sent. does not usually consist of mere subj. and pred.; the verbal sent. has usually an obj., and all sentences may have additional elements which are the complements of the two chief parts of the sentence. These complements usually follow the parts, subj. or pred., which they amplify. The order of the verbal sentence is: verb, subj., obj., or complement of the verb. But emphasis may alter this order. Gen. 3. 14 *עַל גִּחְוֹקֶךָ תֵּלֵךְ וְעָפָר תֹּאכַל* *on thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat.* 1 S. 20. 8 *וְעַד אָבִיךָ לְמַדּוּזָה תְּבִיאֵנִי* *but why bring me to thy father?* 1 K. 2. 26 *עֲנֹתָ לָךְ* *to Anathoth with you!* Gen. 15. 10; 20. 4; 38. 9, Deu. 5. 3, Jos. 2. 16, Is. 6. 5, Hos. 5. 6, Job 1. 12; 34. 31.

The adverb usually follows the verb, except negatives; and so longer designations of time. But short words of time, like *אָז then*, *עַתָּה now*, *בְּרִאשִׁית at first*, &c., precede.

§ 111. Out of this principle of emphasis may arise a variety of order, e.g.—

(a) Obj., verb, subj. 1 S. 2. 19 *וּמִעִיל קָמָן תַּעֲשֶׂה לִּי אִמִּי* *and a little robe his mother used to make him.* Gen. 42. 4, 1 S. 17. 36, 1 K. 14. 11. And very often when subj. is contained in the verb. Jud. 14. 3, 2 K. 22. 8, Is. 4. 1, Hos. 1. 7; 10. 6.

(b) Verb, obj., subj. 1 S. 15. 33 *בְּאִשֶּׁר שָׁקְלָה נָשִׁים* *as thy sword has bereaved women.* Gen. 21. 7, Nu. 19. 7, 18, 1 K. 8. 63; 19. 10, Is. 19. 13.

(c) Subj., obj., verb. Is. 1. 15 *וַיִּדְבְּרוּ דְּמִים מִלְּאִי* *This collocation brings the subj. and obj. into very close relation.* Jud. 17. 6 *every man what was right in his own sight* used to

110-116



do. Jer. 32. 4 *and his eyes his eyes* shall see, cf. 34. 3. Is. 11. 8; 32. 8.

Rem. 1. Other forms are occasional, as obj., subj., verb.  
2 K. 5. 13, Is. 5. 17; 28. 17. This order is usual in nominal sent. with participial pred. Gen. 41. 9 *אֲנִי מִזְכִּיר מֵ* *my faults* I call to remembrance. Gen. 37. 16, Jud. 9. 36; 14. 4, 2 K. 6. 22, Jer. 1. 11.

Rem. 2. Aramaic shows a liking for placing the verb at the end of the clause, the obj. and complement of the verb preceding it, as in c. Dan. 2. 16, 18; 3. 16; 4. 15. Cf. inf. Is. 49. 6. Jud. 6. 25. 2 Chr. 31. 7, 10.

Rem. 3. It is a point of style, however, particularly in prophetic and poetic parallelism, to vary the order of words. So even in ordinary prose. Ex. 3. 7 *רָאִיתִי אֶת־עֲנִי* *I saw my affliction* . . . *וְאֶת־צָעֲקָתָם שָׁמַעְתִּי* *and their cry I heard*, Is. 5. 24; 11. 8; 31. 1. Cf. 1 K. 20. 18 the double *take them alive*.

#### AGREEMENT OF SUBJECT AND PREDICATE IN RESPECT OF GENDER AND NUMBER

§ 112. There is less precision in the matter of agreement than there is in classical or other languages. Several general peculiarities appear—

1. When the pred. stands first the speaker's mind is fixed on the act in itself, and clear consciousness of the coming subj. is not yet present to him, and he puts the pred. in the most general form, mas. sing.<sup>1</sup>

2. There is a great tendency to construe according to *the sense* rather than strict grammatical law, hence gramm. singulars, such as collectives and words that suggest a plurality, are often joined with plur. pred., especially when they refer to persons.

3. On the other hand, there is a tendency to group things that resemble one another, or belong to the same class, under one conception, and construe them with a sing. verb.

<sup>1</sup> Ar. grammarians have a more ingenious explanation of this usage.

The plur. of lifeless objects and living creatures, not persons, may be treated as gramm. collect., and joined with sing. fem.

### 1. Agreement of Simple Subject

§ 113. (a) When subj. precedes the pred. there is in general agreement in gend. and numb., whether the subj. be person or thing. Gen. 15. 12 וְתִרְדָּמָה נָפְלָה and *a sleep fell*; v. 17 הַשָּׁמֶשׁ בָּאָה the *sun was gone down*; 16. 1. But exceptions occur; Mal. 2. 6 עוֹלָה לֹא־נִמְצָא *evil was not found*. Gen. 15. 17, Ex. 12. 49, Jer. 50. 46, Zech. 6. 14, cf. v. 7, Job 20. 26.

(b) When pred. precedes, while agreement in gend. and numb. is usual, esp. when subj. is personal, the verb is often in 3 sing. mas., even though the subj. be plur. or fem. This is common with הָיָה *to be*. The subj. having once been mentioned, however, following verbs are in proper agreement. Gen. 1. 14 יְהִי מְאֹרֹת יְהִי let *there be* lights, and *let them be* signs. Is. 17. 6 וְנִשְׁאַרְבוּ עֲלֵלוֹת there *shall be left gleanings*; 2 K. 3. 26 חֹזֶק כֹּמְנוֹ הַמִּלְחָמָה the *battle was too strong* for him, cf. v. 18. Deu. 32. 35, Is. 13. 22; 24. 12, Jer. 36. 32. Nu. 9. 6 וַיְהִי אֲנָשִׁים אֲשֶׁר הָיוּ 1 K. 11. 3 וַיְהִי־לּוֹ נָשִׁים שְׂרוֹת he *had wives, princesses, 700*. The *mas.* is apt to be used for 3 pl. fem. impf.; 1 K. 11. 3 וַיִּטּוּ נָשָׁיו אֶת־לִבּוֹ *his wives perverted his mind*; 2 S. 4. 1 וַיִּרְפוּ יָדָיו his *hands were paralysed* (cf. Zeph. 3. 16), Jud. 21. 21, Jos. 11. 11, Is. 19. 18, Jer. 13. 16, Ez. 23. 42, Hos. 14. 7. Gen. 20. 17; 30. 39. Song 6. 9. Imper., Is. 32. 11, Hos. 10. 8, Zeph. 3. 16.—1 S. 1. 2, Jud. 20. 46, Gen. 35. 5, 1 Chr. 2. 22; 23. 17, 22.

(c) Subjects in dual are necessarily joined with plur. pred., verb or ptc. Gen. 48. 10 עֵינֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל בְּרָדוּ מֵעֵן the *eyes of Israel were dim* from age. 2 K. 21. 12; 22. 20. Is. 1. 15, Mic. 7. 10. Ptcp., 1 S. 1. 13, 2 S. 24. 3, Is. 30. 20, Hos.

9. 14, 2 Chr. 16. 9. Cf. § 31, and on 1 S. 4. 15, Mic. 4. 11. § 116.

## 2. Agreement of Compound Subject

§ 114. When the subj. is compound, consisting of several elements joined by *and*.—(a) When subj. is first the verb is usually plur., and so the pred. in nominal sent. 2 S. 16. 15 וְאַבְשָׁלוֹם וְכָל־הָעָם בָּאוּ Abs. and all the people *came*; Gen. 8. 22; 18. 11. But sometimes the verb is sing., agreeing either with the word next it or with the chief element of the complex subj., or the several parts of subj. all forming one conception: 2 S. 20. 10 Joab and Abishai his brother יָרָה *pursued*. Hos. 4. 11 whoredom and wine and new wine יִקַּח־לָב *take away* the understanding. Hos. 9. 2, Deu. 8. 13. Neh. 5. 14 אֲנִי וְאֶחָי לֹא אֶכְלָתִי 2 S. 3. 22, Est. 4. 16.<sup>1</sup> If parts of the subj. be of different genders pred. is usually mas., Gen. 18. 11, but cf. Jer. 44. 25.

(b) When the pred. is first it perhaps oftenest agrees in gend. and numb. with the element of the subj. which is next it; but it may be in plur. When the subj. has once been mentioned following verbs are in plur. Gen. 31. 14 וַתֵּעַן רָחֵל וְלֵאמֹר R. and L. *answered and said*; Nu. 12. 1 וַיֹּאמְרוּ . . . וַתְּדַבֵּר מִרְיָם וְאַהֲרֹן Mir. and Aaron *spoke and said*; Gen. 3. 8 וַיִּתְּחַבֵּא הָאָדָם וְאִשְׁתּוֹ *hid themselves*. Gen. 7. 7; 9. 23; 21. 32; 24. 50, 55; 33. 7; 44. 14, Jud. 5. 1; 8. 21, 1 S. 11. 15; 18. 3; 27. 8, 1 K. 1. 34, 41.—Pl. Gen. 40. 1, Nu. 20. 10; 31. 13, Ex. 5. 1; 7. 20. Or it may be mas. sing. (§ 113 *b*), Joel 1. 13.

(c) When the subj. is a pron. and noun, the pron. must be expressed whether verb be sing. or plur. Gen. 7. 1 וְגַם־בָּיְתָךְ וְכָל־אֲתָתְךָ go *thou* and all thy house, Jud. 7. 10, 11. Jud. 11. 38 וְהַלְלָהּ הִיא וְרֵעוֹתֶיהָ *she* and her companions

<sup>1</sup> The *and* before "maids," Est. 4. 16, and before "brethren," Neh. 5. 14, recalls Ar. *waw* of concomitance.

went. 1 K. 1. 21 וְהִיְתִי אִנִּי וּבְנִי *I and my son shall be.* Gen. 14. 15; 20. 7; 24. 54 (pl.); 31. 21; 1 S. 20. 31; 28. 8, 2 S. 19. 15. In 1 S. 29. 10 אֲתָה is missed before *servants*.

Even when two nouns are subj. a pron. referring to the first must be expressed if any words separate it from the second, unless the words be a mere apposition. Gen. 13. 1; 35. 6; 38. 12; 50. 14, 22, Jud. 9. 48, Neh. 2. 12, cf. Jos. 22. 32. The pron. *may* be expressed in any case, 1 S. 29. 11; 30. 9.

When compound subj. is of different persons 1st pers. precedes 2nd and 2nd the 3rd. 1 K. 1. 21 above, *I and my son*. 1 S. 14. 40; 20. 23, Nu. 20. 8, Gen. 43. 8.

### 3. Agreement of Collectives

§ 115. With sing. nouns having a collective meaning the pred. is often construed in the plur. according to sense: particularly when the collective term refers to persons, but sometimes also when it refers to lower creatures, or even to things. Grammatical agreement in sing. is also common, and the two consns. often interchange. When the pred. is first it may be in sing. while following verbs are in plur. Hos. 4. 6 נָדְמוּ עַמִּי *my people are destroyed*, cf. Is. 5. 13 גָּלָה *is gone away*; Is. 9. 8 וְיָדְעוּ הָעָם כָּלֹּי the people *shall know* all of it. 1 K. 18. 39 וַיִּשְׁלֹי כָּל־הָעָם וַיִּפְּלוּ. Ex. 1. 20; 4. 31, Jud. 2. 10. Gen. 41. 57 וּכְל־הָאָרֶץ בָּאָי all the world *came*; 1 S. 14. 25; 17. 46, 2 S. 15. 23. Nu. 14. 35 הַקְּוֹעֲדִים הַזֶּה הִואַת הַקְּוֹעֲדִים this congregation *that are met together*. With creatures: Gen. 30. 38 תְּבִיאָנָה הַצֹּאֵן the flock *used to come*, Ps. 144. 13. So fem. pl. with בָּקָר Job 1. 14; mas. pl. 1 Chr. 27. 29, cf. 1 K. 8. 5. With things: Jer. 48. 36 יִתְרַת עֲשָׂה אֲבָדֹי the gain he has made *is lost*. Is. 15. 7, Hos. 9. 6, Hag. 2. 7, Ps. 119. 103. Comp. 1 S. 2. 33 *increase* in a personal ref.—Ex. 15. 4, Jud. 9. 36, 37 *people* sing. and pl., so 1 S. 13. 6, cf. *vv.* 15, 16. Jud. 1. 22; 9. 55,

2 K. 25. 5, Am. 1. 5, Hos. 10. 5; 11. 7, Is. 16. 4; 19. 13. Gen. 34. 24. Nu. 20. 11; 21. 7, Job 8. 19.

§ 116. On the other hand, plur. of inanimate objects that may be grouped under one conception, of the lower creatures, and abstract plurals are frequently construed with fem. sing. of pred. 1 S. 4. 15 וְעֵינָיו קָמָה *and his eyes were set*, Mic. 4. 11. Jo. 1. 20 בְּהֵמוֹת שָׂדֶה תַעֲרַג אֵלֶיךָ *the beasts of the field pant unto thee*. Ps. 103. 5 תִּתְחַדֵּשׁ נַעֲמָרְךָ *thy youth is renewed* like the eagle. Gen. 49. 22, Is. 34. 13; 59. 12, Jer. 4. 14; 12. 4, Mic. 1. 9, Ps. 18. 35; 37. 31, Neh. 13. 10, Job 12. 7; 14. 19; 20. 11. Cf. 2 S. 24. 13. 2 K. 3. 3 מִמִּצָּה (sins of Jeroboam); 13. 11, Is. 59. 8. There is no reason for K'ri Ps. 73. 2, שָׁפְכָה. Deu. 21. 7 is more unusual.—Sometimes when subj. precedes it is treated almost as *casus pendens*, and its general idea becomes subj.; Gen. 47. 24 *the four fifths* יְהִיָּה *it shall be*. Ex. 12. 49, Ecc. 2. 7. Cf. Is. 16. 8, Hab. 3. 17.

Rem. 1. General plurals are sometimes construed with sing. pred. from a tendency to individualise and distribute over every individual, or apply it to any individual supposed. Gen. 27. 29 אֲרִירָךְ אֲרִירָךְ *they that curse thee shall be cursed*. Nu. 24. 9, Jer. 22. 4. Ex. 31. 14, Lev. 17. 14; 19. 8, Zech. 11. 5, Ps. 64. 9, Pr. 3. 18, 35; 14. 9; 27. 16; 28. 1, 2 Chr. 10. 8 (*rd.* יַעֲצֹרוּ). In particular a sing. suff. frequently refers back to a plur. Is. 2. 20 אֲשֶׁר עָשָׂה לּוֹ which *they made each for himself*, Hos. 4. 8. Deu. 21. 10; 28. 48, Is. 1. 23; 2. 8; 5. 23; 8. 20, Jos. 2. 4, Ex. 28. 3, Zech. 14. 12, Or sing. and plur. interchange, Is. 30. 22; 56. 5, Ps. 62. 5; 141. 10. Cf. Deu. 4. 37; 7. 3, Jud. 1. 34, 2 K. 19. 14. Sometimes sing. pron. refers back to plur. as a collective unity, Is. 17. 13, Jer. 31. 15 אֵינֶנּוּ (of Rachel's children), 2 S. 24. 13, Jos. 13. 14, and perhaps some of the exx. above. Or the pron. expresses a generalised *it*, Jud. 11. 34 אֲדָלוּ כִפְנוֹ בֵּן אֲדָלוּ he had not *besides it* (her) son or daughter. Ex. 11. 6 *like it*.

Rem. 2. When the compound subj. is a noun with its

gen. agreement may be with gen. as expressing the main idea of the phrase; or pred. being next gen. may agree with it by a kind of attraction. 1 K. 17. 16 וַיִּפְתַּח שֶׁשֶׁן לֹא חָסַר the cruse of oil *did not fail*. Is. 2. 11, 1 S. 2. 4, Lev. 13. 9; Job 21. 21; 29. 10; 38. 21. Attraction of gend. Jer. 10. 3, Lev. 25. 33; in the case of verb *to be* attraction by pred. Gen. 31. 8, Pr. 14. 35. The pred. usually agrees with gen. after כל *all*, Hos. 9. 4, Gen. 5. 5, Ex. 15. 20, but not universally, Hos. 10. 14, Is. 64. 10.

Rem. 3. In nominal sent. the pred. adj. when first is sometimes uninflected, Ps. 119. 137 יָשָׁר כְּשֶׁפֶטִיךְ *upright* are thy judgments, cf. v. 155; but this is rare, except with the word טוב *good*; Jud. 8. 2, Gen. 49. 15, 1 S. 19. 4, 2 K. 5. 12, Ps. 73. 28; 119. 72; 147. 1, Pr. 17. 1; 20. 23.—Gen. 47. 3 רַעָה is collec., cf. Deu. 14. 7, Ezr. 3. 9, Neh. 2. 16.

Rem. 4. Plurals of Eminence such as אֱלֹהִים *God*, אֲדֹנָיִם *lord*, owner, when referring to a single person, are usually in concord with sing., Ex. 21. 29 בְּעָלָיו יָמָת *its owner shall be killed*, Is. 19. 4 אֲדֹנָיִם קָשָׁה *a cruel lord*. When אֱלֹהִים means *gods* it is construed with pl., and in a few cases even when it is God, Gen. 20. 13; 35. 7, Ex. 22. 8, Jos. 24. 19 (E.), and sometimes in the phrase *living God*, Deu. 5. 23, 1 S. 17. 26, Jer. 10. 10; 23. 36. Words only used in pl. are occasionally joined to sing., e.g. 2 S. 10. 9 פָּנִים as fem. sing., cf. Job 16. 16.

Rem. 5. Names of nations are construed in three ways: (a) with mas. sing., the name being that of the personal ancestor, Ex. 17. 11, Is. 19. 16, Am. 1. 11, 1 Chr. 18. 5; 19. 15, 16, 18, 19. (b) Or with plur., 2 S. 10. 17, 1 K. 20. 20, 2 K. 6. 9, 1 Chr. 18. 2, 13. (c) Or with fem. sing., when the ref. is to the country or when the population is treated as a collective, often personified; 2 S. 8. 2, 5, 6; 10. 11; 24. 9, Is. 7. 2, Jer. 13. 19, 1 Chr. 19. 12, Job 1. 15. The consns. a, b, c may interchange in the same passage. Jer. 48. 15, Am. 2. 2, 3, Hos. 14. 1, Mal. 2. 11. Peculiar, Is. 18. 1, 2.

Rem. 6. When there are several predicates one may be in agreement and the other left uninflected. Is. 33. 9, Mic. 1. 9, Zech. 5. 11; cf. on adj. § 32, R. 4. But irregularity

in gend. and numb. is common, e.g. Jer. 31. 9 **בְּיָמָיו** . . . **יִשְׂרָאֵל**, Zech. 6. 7. Sometimes text may be at fault, Jud. 4. 20 **עָסַד**, inf. abs. ? 1 S. 2. 20 **אֶל־זֶה**; 25. 27 **הַכִּיָּאָה**, cf. v. 35. In particular, vowel terminations of verbs were not always expressed in ancient texts, and are sometimes given or omitted wrongly by Mass. Ez. 18. 29 **יִתְכַנֵּן** as v. 25. With 20. 38 **יָבוֹא** cf. Is. 45. 24. In Lam. 5. 10 **נִכְמְרוּ** may be due to plur. suff. in *our skin*, cf. 1 Chr. 24. 19, 2 Chr. 17. 14, Jer. 2. 34.

Exx. of mas. for 2 fem. impf., Is. 57. 8, Jer. 3. 5, Ez. 22. 4; 23. 32; 26. 14.

## PARTICULAR KINDS OF SENTENCE

### INTERJECTIONAL SENTENCE

§ 117. Words in direct address (the voc.) are of the form of interj. as **הַמֶּלֶךְ** *O king!* **אֲדֹנִי הַמֶּלֶךְ** *my lord the king!* and such phrases of entreaty as **בִּי אֲדֹנִי**. But any words may be uttered as exclamations, 2 K. 4. 19 **רִאשִׁי רִאשִׁי** *my head!* 11. 14 **קֶשֶׁר קֶשֶׁר** *treason! treason!* Jer. 4. 19 **מִי־בִטְנִי** *my bowels!* 37. 14 **שֶׁקֶר** *it's a lie!* 2 K. 9. 12. Is. 29. 16 **הַפְּקָנְכֶם** *your perversity!* Jer. 49. 16. Hab. 2. 19 **יְהוָה הוּא יוֹרֶה** *it reveal!* Hos. 8. 1 **אֶל־אָזְנוֹ** *to thy mouth the trumpet!* 2 S. 13. 12 **אֶל־אָחִי** *don't! my brother!* Gen. 49. 4. So adverbs: **לֹא** *no!* **הֵן** *well, yes!* **טוֹב** *good! well!* Also the imper. of some verbs, as **הֵבָה** (יָהֵב) *go to!* Gen. 38. 16, Ex. 1. 10; **לָךְ** (לָקַח) *(even to a woman, Gen. 19. 32) come!*

More strict interjections are **הִם** *hush! silence!* Jud. 3. 19, Am. 6. 10, Zeph. 1. 7, Hab. 2. 20, Zech. 2. 17. A verb **הִסָּה** is denom. from **הִס** Neh. 8. 11, Nu. 13. 30.—**אֵיךְ** *how!* in the Elegy, 2 S. 1. 25, 27, Hos. 11. 8 (elegiac measure), more commonly **אֵיכָה** Is. 1. 21, Lam. 1. 1.—**אֵי** *woe!* with prep. **לִ**, Is. 6. 5 **אֵי־לִי**, 3. 9, 11, Jer. 4. 31; without prep. Ez. 24. 6.

In Ps. 120. 5 **אֲוִיָּה לִי**, so **אֲלֵלִי לִי** Mic. 7. 1, Job 10. 15.—**וְהוּא אָחִי** *woe! alas!* in lament for the dead, 1 K. 13. 30 **וְהוּא אָחִי**; fuller form for the king, Jer. 22. 18. In the form **הוּא** Am. 5. 16. In a more general sense, Jer. 48. 1; 50. 27. Also in threatening remonstrance, Is. 1. 4 **הוּא גֹי הָטָא** *Ha!* sinful nation, and often in Is.—Other forms, Jo. 1. 15 **אָחָה לַיּוֹם** *alas!* for the day. Ez. 30. 2 **וְהָיָה לַיּוֹם**, 6. 11 **אָחָה**.—An exclamation of *delight*, **הָאָחָה** Is. 44. 16; by the horse in battle, Job 39. 25; of malicious delight, Ps. 35. 21; 40. 16; 70. 4, Ez. 25. 3; 26. 2.

The pron. **כֹּה** *how! what!* is used in the expression of a variety of feelings, as wonder, awe, Gen. 28. 17; scorn, sarcasm, 2 S. 6. 20; dislike, Mal. 1. 13 **הֲיֵנָה מִתְלָאָה** *Oh what a bore!* And so **כִּי** *who!* Mic. 7. 18, &c.

The particle **הֵנָּה** also, as **הֵנָּנִי** *here I am!* Gen. 18. 9 **הֵנָּה בָּאָהָל** *there! in the tent* (is she). 16. 11 **הֵנָּה הָרָה** *see thou art with child!* Very passionately Job 9. 19, is it a question of strength? **הֲיֵנָּה!** perhaps, *of course!* (he is irresistible).

Rem. 1. The adj. **חֲלִילָה** *profane* (absit)! is construed with ל of person and כן of the act repudiated. The full phrase is found 1 S. 26. 11 **חֲלִילָה לִי מִיְהוָה מִשְׁלֵחַ**, 24. 7, 1 K. 21. 3 (so *rd.* 2 S. 23. 17), but oftener without מִי, Gen. 44. 7, 17. The phrase acquires the force of an oath, and may be followed by אִם (§ 120). 1 S. 24. 7, 2 S. 20. 20, Job 27. 5. Cf. Jos. 22. 29; 24. 16.

Rem. 2. In Gen. 16. 11, &c., the consn. is **הֵנָּה הִיא**. So in Ar. with def. pred., Kor. 2. 11, 12, 122.

Rem. 3. In exclamatory sentences there is omission of subj. as Gen. 18. 9, or of pred. as Hos. 8. 1, to the mouth the trumpet (set ye!), 1 K. 22. 36 *every man to his city* (get ye!), Hos. 5. 8 **אֲחֵרֶיךָ בְּנִימֶיךָ** perhaps, *thy rear!* Benj. (sc. guard!), or *behind thee* B. (is the danger). The word **קוֹל** *voice, sound of*, is nearly *hark!* Is. 13. 4; 66. 6.



not declarative but Assurance  
Emphatic.

## AFFIRMATIVE SENTENCE

§ 118. Affirmative force is given in various ways, *e.g.*—

(1) By *casus pendens*, Gen. 3. 12 the woman . . . *she gave me*, 42. 11 (§ 106). (2) By expression of pron. either alone or with *vav*, וַ, &c. Gen. 4. 4; 20. 5, Is. 14. 10. (3) By inf. abs. (§ 86). (4) By repetition of words, Is. 38. 19, *the living, the living*. Ecc. 7. 24 *deep, deep*, who shall find it? Is. 6. 3, Jer. 7. 4.

Affirmative particles are אָבֵל *truly*, Gen. 42. 21 אָבֵל אֲשָׁמִים אֲנַחְנוּ *verily* we are guilty; 2 S. 14. 5, 1 K. 1. 43; later a particle of contrast, Dan. 10. 7, 21.—אָדָּה *truly, surely*, Gen. 26. 9 אָדָּה אֲשֶׁתְּךָ הִוא *in truth* she is thy wife. 1 S. 16. 6, Hos. 12. 9. So אָכֵן, Ex. 2. 14 אָכֵן הַדָּבָר *verily* the thing is known. Gen. 28. 16, 1 S. 15. 32, Is. 53. 4.

Rem. 1. Also various derivatives of אָמֵן, *e.g.* אָמֵנָם *verily, in truth*, 2 K. 19. 17; ironically Job 9. 2; 12. 2 *verily* ye are the people. Also אָמֵנָם *id.* (always with interrog.), Nu. 22. 37, Gen. 18. 13, 1 K. 8. 27. So אָמֵנָה, Gen. 20. 12, Jos. 7. 20.

The word כִּי often strengthens. Gen. 18. 20 the cry of Sodom כִּי רָבָה (surely) *it is great*. Particularly in antithesis after neg.: Gen. 18. 15 כִּי צָחַקְתָּ לֹא נָא, thou *didst* laugh. 1 K. 3. 22 כִּי בָנִי הָחִי לֹא no! *my child is the live one*. And so usually, Jos. 5. 14; 24. 21, Jud. 15. 13, 1 S. 2. 16 (לֹא=לֹא), 2 S. 16. 18 (לֹא=לוֹ last cl.), 1 K. 2. 30, 2 K. 3. 13 אֵל; 20. 10, Is. 30. 16, Ps. 49. 11.

§ 119. The oath.—אֵל, אֱלֹהִים, יְהוָה, אֵל *as I live, as God, Je. liveth*; but תְּהִי נַפְשְׁךָ, פָּרְעָה *as thy soul, Phar., &c., liveth*. With pron. *I* and divine names the form is תְּהִי, otherwise תִּי, cf. the curious תְּהִי אֱלֹהֶיךָ דָּן Am. 8. 14 *as thy god*, O Dan, *liveth*.—Jud. 8. 19 תְּהִי יְהוָה. 2 S. 2. 27 תְּהִי יְהוָה, Jer. 44. 26 תְּהִי אֱלֹהֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל, Job 27. 2 תְּהִי יְהוָה, 1 K.

18. 10, 15.—Nu. 14. 21, 28 חַי אֲנִי; usually this shorter form (Deu. 32. 40 אֲנֹכִי) and invariably so pointed.—1 S. 20. 3 חַי יְהוֹי נִקְשָׁה, 25. 26; Gen. 42. 15, 2 S. 15. 21.

§ 120. The oath of *denial* is made by אִם *if* = *that not*; of affirmation by לֹא אִם *if not* = *that*, or כִּי *that*. 1 S. 19. 6 יִשָּׁבַע לִי חַי י' אִם יוּמָת he shall not be put to death, 1 K. 1. 51 חַי י' אִם יָמִית let him swear to me first *that he will not kill me*. Gen. 42. 15, 1 S. 24. 22; 30. 15.—1 K. 18. 15 חַי י' כִּי הַיּוֹם אֶרְאֶה אֵלָיו I will show myself to him to-day; Is. 45. 23 בִּי נִשְׁבַּעְתִּי כִּי לִי תִקְרַע כָּל-בֶּרֶךְ I have sworn by myself *that to me every knee shall bow*. 1 S. 14. 44; 20. 3; 29. 6. Job 1. 11 אִם לֹא יִבְרַכְךָ (I swear) *he will disavow thee*. Jos. 14. 9, 2 K. 9. 26.

Rem. 1. The word אִם has also restrictive force, *only*, Gen. 18. 32 *only* this once, 1 S. 18. 8 *only* the kingdom. So in sense of *utterly* with adj. Deu. 16. 15, Is. 16. 7. Similarly רַק, § 153.

Rem. 2. חַי אֲתָה is not said; חַיֶּךָ *by thy life*, 2 S. 11. 11, if text right. Cf. Dr. or Well. *in loc*.

Rem. 3. Exx. of אִם Gen. 21. 23, Nu. 14. 23, 1 S. 3. 14, 17; 14. 45; 17. 55; 28. 10, 2 S. 11. 11; 14. 11, 2 K. 2. 2; 3. 14; 6. 31, Is. 22. 14, Ps. 89, 36; 132. 3, 4. Of כִּי 1 S. 14. 39; 26. 16; 29. 6, 2 S. 3. 9, 1 K. 18. 15, 2 K. 5. 20, Jer. 22. 5. Of לֹא אִם Nu. 14. 28, 2 S. 19. 14, 1 K. 20. 23, Is. 5. 9; 14. 24, Jer. 15. 11.—In many cases there is no formal oath, and the particles merely express strong denial or affirmation. Ps. 131. 2.

Rem. 4. The full formula כֹּה יַעֲשֶׂה לִי אֱלֹהִים *God do so to me, &c.*, occurs only in 1, 2 S., 1, 2 K., and Ru., *e.g.* 1 S. 3. 17; 14. 44, 1 K. 2. 23, 2 K. 6. 31, Ru. 1. 17. The formula is followed by pos. or neg. statement. Usually לִי or the speaker's own name is used (1 S. 20. 13, 2 S. 3. 9); therefore in 1 S. 25. 22 לִי לָדָד with Sep., and possibly לִי has fallen out 1 S. 14. 44 (Sep.), but cf. 1 K. 19. 2. In 1 S. 3. 17 לִי of person adjured.

Rem. 5. When a clause intervenes before the thing

sworn **כִּי** is often repeated, 2 S. 2. 27; 3. 9; 15. 21, 1 K. 1. 30, Jer. 22. 24, Gen. 22. 16. In **אם כִּי** the **אם** is sometimes merely conditional, *that, if*, 1 S. 14. 39, Jer. 22. 24, cf. Deu. 32. 40. In other cases the use of **אם כִּי** is peculiar. (1) 2 S. 3. 35 with 2 K. 3. 14 seems to show that the use of **כִּי** in the oath was customary without ref. to the pos. or neg. nature of the thing sworn (apod.). The **כִּי**, which may be repeated, merely adds force to the whole statement. (2) On the other hand, in such passages as Jud. 15. 7, 1 K. 20. 6, 2 S. 15. 21, the **אם** seems pleonastic. Its idiomatic use may in some way add force to the **כִּי**, though the origin of the idiom is difficult to trace. It can scarcely be the same use of **אם** as occurs after a neg. or exception, *but* (= "yes, if").

#### INTERROGATIVE SENTENCE

§ 121. The interrog. sent. may be nominal or verbal. See exx. below.—The interrogation may be made without any particle, by the mere tone of voice. 2 S. 18. 29 **שָׁלוֹם לַצֶּנֶר** *is the child well?* 2 S. 11. 11 **וְאֵנִי אָבוֹא אֶל-בֵּיתִי** *and shall I go to my house?* 1 S. 21. 16 **חָסֵר מְשֻׁנָּעִים אֲנִי** *am I in want of madmen?* Gen. 18. 12; 27. 24, Jud. 14. 16, 1 S. 16. 4; 22. 7, 15; 25. 11, 2 S. 9. 6; 16. 17; 19. 23; 23. 5, 1 K. 1. 24; 21. 7, Jon. 4. 11, Song 3. 3. Less frequently in *neg.* sent., 1 S. 20. 9, 2 K. 5. 26, Job 2. 10. Omission of the particle is most common in animated speech, as when any idea is repudiated, and particularly when pron. is expressed; cf. Jud. 14. 16, 2 S. 11. 11, 2 K. 19. 11, Jer. 25. 29, Ez. 20. 31, Jon. 4. 11.

§ 122. When a particle is used it is generally put at the head of the clause, Gen. 3. 11. The simple question is oftenest made by **הֲ** (Gr. § 49). Gen. 4. 9 **הֲשֹׁמֵר אָחִי אֲנִכִּי** *am I my brother's keeper?* 24. 58 **הֲתֵלְכִי עִם הָאִישׁ הַזֶּה** *wilt thou go with this man?* Gen. 18. 17; 43. 27, 29; 45. 3, 2 S. 7. 5.—So before **יֵשׁ** and **אֵין**; Gen. 24. 23 **הֲיֵשׁ בֵּית אָבִיךָ** *is there room for us to lodge in the house of*

thy father? Jud. 14. 3 **הַיֵּין בְּבָנוֹת אֲחִידָה אִשָּׁה** *is there not a woman* among the daughters of thy brethren? Gen. 43. 7; 44. 19, Ex. 17. 7, Jud. 4. 20, 1 S. 9. 11, 2 K. 4. 13; 10. 15. — 1 K. 22. 7, 2 K. 3. 11, Jer. 7. 17:

Sometimes **אֵם** (= *num*) is used as a lively denial, or when the idea in the question is repudiated or disapproved, Jud. 5. 8, 1 K. 1. 27, Is. 29. 16, Lam. 2. 20, Job 6. 12, 28; 39. 13; though in some cases the first half of a disjunctive question may be unexpressed, Am. 3. 6.

§ 123. The *neg.* question is put by **הֲלֹא**, Gen. 13. 9 **הֲלֹא כָּל־הָאָרֶץ לְפָנֶיךָ** *is not all the land* before thee? 4. 7; 20. 5; 44. 5, Ex. 14. 12, Nu. 23. 26, Deu. 31. 17. Or by **הַיֵּין** when the existence of the subj. is questioned, or when the pred. is a ptcp. (§ 100 *d*). 1 K. 22. 7, Jud. 14. 3 (§ 122 above), Am. 2. 11, Jer. 7. 17. Occasionally the elements of **הֲלֹא** are separated for the sake of emphasis, Gen. 18. 25.

Rem. 1. The interrog. particle, pos. or neg., may be strengthened by other particles, as **אִם־אֵם** Gen. 18. 13, 24, Am. 2. 11, Job 40. 8, or **אִם־אֵם** Gen. 16. 13.

Rem. 2. The part. **הֲלֵא** implying an affirmative answer is often = **הֲיֵנָה**, Gen. 37. 13, Deu. 3. 11 and often. In Chr. **הֲנֵה** is sometimes used for **הֲלֵא** of earlier Books, comp. 2 Chr. 16. 11 with 1 K. 15. 23. See 1 Chr. 29. 29, 2 Chr. 27. 7; 32. 32, and Sep. *ἤτοι* for **הֲלֵא**, Deu. 3. 11, Jos. 1. 9, Jud. 6. 14, Est. 10. 2, cf. 2 K. 15. 21. So Ar. *'alā*, which may be used with imper. Jud. 14. 15 is hardly to be read **הֲלוֹם** *here* (Targ.).

§ 124. The disjunctive or alternative question is put by **הֲ** in first clause, and **אִם** or **וְאִם** in second. Jos. 5. 13 **הֲלֵנוּ אֲתָה אִם לְצָרֵינוּ** *art thou for us or for our enemies?* 1 K. 22. 15 **הֲנֵלֵךְ אִם נִחַלֵּךְ** *shall we go or forbear?* Or if neg. by **לֹא** in second clause (or **אִם־אֵין** if **יֵשׁ** be in the first), Gen. 27. 21 **הֲאֵתָה זֶה בְּנִי אִם־לֹא** *art thou my son or not?* (cf. § 7 *c*). Ex. 17. 7 **יְהִי־יָהּ בְּקִרְבֵּנוּ אִם־אֵין** *is Je.*

in our midst *or not*? Nu. 13. 20.—Gen. 17. 17, Jud. 9. 2; 20. 28, 1 K. 22. 6, 15, 2 K. 20. 9 (§ 41 c), Am. 6. 2, Is. 10. 9, Jer. 2. 14; 18. 14, Job 7. 12.—2 S. 24. 13, Jo. 1. 2, Job 11. 2; 21. 4; 22. 3, cf. Pr. 27. 24. The second half of the alternative is often merely the first in a varied form. Nu. 11. 12, Job 8. 3; 22. 3. Gen. 37. 8, Jud. 11. 25, 2 S. 19. 36.

§ 125. The indirect interrogation is made just as the direct, with no effect upon the tense. Gen. 8. 8 לראת הקלו לראת to see *whether the waters were abated*. 21. 26 לא ידעתי מי עשה I do not know *who did it*. Deu. 13. 4 לדעת הישכם אהבים to know *whether ye love*. Gen. 24. 21 לדעת ההצליח י' ברכו אם לא to know *whether Je. had prospered his way or not*. Gen. 42. 16; 43. 7, 22, Jud. 3. 4; 13. 6, 1 S. 14. 17, 1 K. 1. 20. Exx. of disjunctive sent., Gen. 37. 32, Ex. 16. 4, Nu. 11. 23, Deu. 8. 2, Jud. 2. 22.—In the simple indirect sent. אם occurs (after *to see, inquire, &c.*), 2 K. 1. 2, Jer. 5. 1; 30. 6, Mal. 3. 10, Lam. 1. 12, Ezr. 2. 59, Song 7. 13.

§ 126. The *answer* is usually made by repeating part of the question, or by the use of some word suggested by it. Gen. 29. 6 שלום לו... השלום לו is he well? ... well. 24. 58 אלה... החללי wilt thou go? ... I will go. 1 S. 26. 17 קולי... זה קולי is it thy voice, my son? it is my voice. Gen. 27. 24 אני... בןי art thou my son? I am! 2 S. 9. 2 עבדך... האתה ציבא art thou Ziba? thy servant! Jud. 13. 11, 1 S. 17. 58; 23. 11, 12, 2 S. 2. 20; 9. 6; 12. 19, 1 K. 21. 20.

To היש is there? &c., the pos. reply is יש, 2 K. 10. 15 (יש begins the next clause, § 132, R. 2), Jer. 37. 17; and the neg. אין, Jud. 4. 20. The neg. reply to העוד is there any more? is אפס no more, Am. 6. 10, cf. 2 S. 9. 3. The neg. reply to a simple question may be לא no, Jud. 12. 5, Hag. 2. 12, 13. In Jos. 2. 4 כן=yes, and Gen. 30. 34 הן=well, yes (cf. Ar. 'inna in the story Kos. *Aghani*, pp. 13, 14). In

the reply the word that takes up the point of the question usually stands first, being emphatic. Gen. 24. 23; 27. 19, 32; 29. 4, 1 S. 17. 58.

Interrog. sentences are made also by interr. pron. (§ 7, and the exx.), and by various particles. See Rem. 6.

Rem. 1. The disjunctive question very rarely has **וְ** in second clause, Nu. 13. 18; sometimes **אִם** Job 16. 3; 38. 28, 31, Mal. 1. 8, Ecc. 2. 19; and sometimes simple **וְ** Job 13. 7; 38. 32.

Rem. 2. In animated questions particles of interr. are sometimes accumulated, Gen. 17. 17 *or shall Sarah—shall one 90 years old bear?* Jud. 14. 15, Ps. 94. 9; or repeated 1 S. 14. 37; 23. 11; 30. 8, 2 S. 5. 19.

In Job 6. 13, Nu. 17. 28 the double הָמָּן seems = *nonne*? In Nu. הָמָּנוּ לָנוּעַ means *we are finished dying* = *are all dead* (Jos. 4. 11, 1 S. 16. 11, 2 S. 15. 24), therefore : *are we not dead to a man*? (cf. v. 27). If הָמָּן were a stronger form of הָ, the sense would be : *are we to die* (have died) *to a man*? but such a meaning of הָמָּן does not suit Job 6. 13.

Rem. 3. In the forms הֲהִי *is it that?* הֲלֹא *is it not that?* בִּי adds force to the question. 2 S. 9. 1; 13. 28, Job 6. 22, cf. Deu. 32. 30. Sometimes הֲהִי vividly posits a fact as ground for a real or supposed inference. Gen. 27. 36 *is it that* they called his name Jacob? = *well has he been called, &c.*; 29. 15, cf. 1 S. 2. 27, 1 K. 22. 3.

Rem. 4. The interrogation often co-ordinates clauses when other languages would subordinate; Is. 50. 2 *why am I come and there is no man?* = *why, when I am come, is there, &c.* 2 S. 12. 18, 2 K. 5. 12, Is. 5. 4, Am. 9. 7, Job 4. 2, 21; 38. 35.

Rem. 5. The form of question is much used as a strong expression of declinature, repudiation of an idea, or depreciation of a consequence. Gen. 27. 45, 1 S. 19. 17, 2 S. 2. 22; 20. 19, 1 K. 16. 31, 2 Chr. 25. 16, Ecc. 5. 5.

**Rem. 6. Some other interrog. particles :**

(a) *Why? wherefore?* לָמָּה, לָמָּה; וּמָדַע, מָדַע; *why*  
*not?* לָמָּה לֹא, מָדַע לֹא.—I S. 19. 17 רִמְיָתִי לָמָּה כָּבַח רִמְיָתִי *why hast*

*thou cheated me thus?* Gen. 12. 18 למה לא הודת לי *why didst thou not tell me?* 1 S. 26. 15, 2 S. 16. 17; 19. 26. Ex. of מודע Gen. 26. 27; 40. 7, Ex. 2. 18, 1 S. 20. 2; with neg. 2 S. 18. 11, Job 21. 4.—Ex. of למה *why?* Gen. 27. 45, Ex. 32. 11, Nu. 20. 4, Jud. 12. 3, 1 K. 2. 22. See Rem. 7.

Like the pronouns, למה is often strengthened by זה (but not מודע). Gen. 18. 13 למה זה צחקת ש' *wherefore did Sarah laugh?* Gen. 25. 22, 32, Ex. 5. 22, 2 S. 18. 22; 19. 43, Job 27. 12, cf. Jud. 18. 24, 1 K. 21. 5, 2 K. 1. 5. See Rem. 8.—The simple מה or על מה and the like are often used in the same sense, Nu. 22. 32, Is. 1. 5, Jer. 9. 11, Job 13. 14, and all these interr. particles are used as words of remonstrance, surprise, &c., and as interjections.

(b) *Where?* אי (cons. of אי), איפה, &c.; *whither?* אי הבל אחיר? *whence?* מאין, מן. Gen. 4. 9 אי הבל אחיר? *where is Abel?* Deu. 32. 37, 1 S. 26. 16. With suff. Ex. 2. 20 אי where is he? &c. Gen. 3. 9, Is. 19. 12, Mic. 7. 10, Nah. 3. 17.—Gen. 19. 5 אי האנשים *where are the men?* 18. 9; 22. 7; 38. 21, Jud. 9. 38, 2 S. 17. 20, 2 K. 2. 14.—Ex. of איפה *where?* Gen. 37. 16, 2 S. 9. 4, Is. 49. 21.—Ex. of מאין *whence?* Gen. 42. 7; 29. 4, Nu. 11. 13, Jos. 2. 4, Jud. 17. 9, Is. 39. 3, Job 1. 7, Ps. 121. 1.—Ex. of אי מן *whence?* Gen. 16. 8, Jud. 13. 6, 1 S. 25. 11, 2 S. 1. 3, 13.—Ex. of איפה *whither?* Gen. 16. 8; 37. 30, 2 S. 2. 1, Is. 10. 3; cf. 1 K. 22. 24.

(c) *How?* איך, איכה; כמה (by what? Gen. 15. 8); *how not?* לא איך, 2 S. 1. 5 איך ידעת פרימת ש' *how dost thou know that Saul is dead?* 2 S. 1. 14 *how not?* Deu. 18. 21, Jud. 20. 3, 1 K. 12. 6, 2 K. 17. 28, Ru. 3. 18. These particles are used in remonstrance, Gen. 26. 9, Jer. 2. 23; repudiation or refusal, Gen. 39. 9; 44. 8, 34, Jos. 9. 7; the expression of hopelessness, &c., Is. 20. 6. The form איכה *how!* usually raises the elegy, Is. 1. 21, Lam. 2. 1; 4. 1; but also איך, 2 S. 1. 19, 25, 27.

(d) *How many?* כמה. 2 S. 19. 35 ימי שני חיי *Gen. 47. 8, 1 K. 22. 16, Zech. 7. 3, Job 13. 23. Also how much?* Zech. 2. 6; *how long?* Job 7. 19, Ps. 35. 17; *how often?* Job 21. 17, Ps. 78. 40, 2 Chr. 18. 15.

Rem. 7. The form למה is generally used before words

beginning with any of the letters אהע, in order to avoid the hiatus, see the ex. Rem. 6*a*. There are some exceptions, e.g. 1 S. 28. 15, 2 S. 2. 22; 14. 31, Jer. 15. 18, Ps. 49. 6.

Rem. 8. The particle אִיפֹא is likewise used to strengthen the question *who?* or *where?* &c. Gen. 27. 33, Ex. 33. 16, Jud. 9. 38, Hos. 13. 10, Is. 19. 12; 22. 1, Job 17. 15; 19. 23.

## NEGATIVE SENTENCE

§ 127. The neg. particles are לֹא, אֵל, *not*, אֵין, *there is, was, not*, כֵּן, *lest, that not*, טַרְם, *not yet*, אַפֶּס, *no more*, לְבִלְתִּי, *not* (with infin.), and some others, chiefly poetical.

(*a*) The neg. לֹא is used in objective statements and in commands. Gen. 45. 1 וְלֹא יָכַל יוֹסֵף לְהִתְאַפֵּק and J. *was unable* to restrain himself. 3. 1 לֹא תֹאכְלוּ מִכָּל עֵץ הַגֵּן I *ye shall eat of no tree* of the garden. On neg. interrog. הֲלֹא cf. § 123.—The particle אֵל is the subjective neg., used sometimes in commands, oftener in dissuasion, deprecation, expression of a wish, &c. (see Juss. § 63). Gen. 19. 7 אַל־נָא אַחֵי תִרְעוּ *do not* my brethren *do wrong*, cf. v. 8. Gen. 43. 23, 1 S. 17. 32; 26. 20, 2 K. 18. 31, Jer. 7. 4; 9. 22, Ps. 51. 13.

The usual place of the neg. is before the verb, but it may be placed before the emphatic word in the neg. clause. Gen. 45. 8 לֹא אַתָּם שְׁלַחְתֶּם אֵתִי *it was not you* that sent me. Gen. 32. 29, Ex. 16. 8, 1 S. 2. 9; 8. 7, Nu. 16. 29, Neh. 6. 12, 1 Chr. 17. 4.

Both לֹא and אֵל are used only with perf. and impf., cf. e.g. Is. 5. 27. On imper. with neg. § 60; ptc. § 100*d*; infin. § 95.

On mode of expressing *no, none*, cf. § 11, R. 1 *b*.

(*b*) The particle אֵין is a noun which embraces the idea of *to be, being*, meaning therefore *not-being* (opposite of *יֵשׁ being*), i.e. *there is, was, not*. Its natural place is before the word (noun or pron.) which it denies, and in cons. state.



Gen. 20. 11 **אֵין יִרְאָת א' בְּמִקּוֹם הַזֶּה** *there is not the fear* of God, &c. Gen. 37. 29; 39. 11; 41. 8, Nu. 14. 42, Jud. 21. 25. The word denied may stand for emphasis before **אֵין**, in which case the neg. is properly in the abs. in apposition. Gen. 2. 5 **וְאָדָם אֵין לַעֲבֹד** and *man was not* to till. 2 K. 19. 3 **וְלֹכָה אֵין לְלָדָה** *there is not strength* to bring forth, Nu. 20. 5. But the cons. form, being now habitual, mostly remains in any place except at the end of a clause. Gen. 40. 8 **וּפֹתֵר אֵין אֵתוֹ** *there is no interpreter* of it; 37. 24; 47. 13, Jer. 30. 13, Pr. 30. 27.—Mic. 7. 2 **וְיֹשֵׁר בְּאָדָם אֵין** one upright among men *there is not*. Ex. 17. 7; 32. 32, Lev. 26. 37, Jud. 4. 20; 9. 15, 1 S. 10. 14, 1 K. 18. 10.

When pers. pron. is subj. it appears as suff. Ex. 5. 10 **אֵינֶנִּי נֹתֵן לָכֶם תֶּבֶן** *I will not give* you straw. 2 K. 17. 26 **אֵינָם יֹדְעִים** *they do not know*. Gen. 20. 7; 31. 2; 39. 9, Jud. 3. 25, Jer. 14. 12. So when existence is denied absolutely, Gen. 5. 24 **וְאֵינֶנּוּ** and *he was not*, Jer. 31. 15; but a subst. is put in *casus pendens*, and resumed by suff., Gen. 42. 36 **יֹסֵף אֵינֶנּוּ** *J. is not*; cf. v. 13; 37. 30. With a clause, Gen. 37. 29 **אֵין יֹסֵף בְּבֹר** *Jos. was not* in the pit. 44. 31, Nu. 14. 42.

(c) The telic neg. **פֶּן** *that not, lest*, is usually joined to impf. and prefixed immediately to the verb. It expresses the *motive* of action in previous clause, and hence is much used: 1. After imper. (juss., coh.) and neg. clause. Gen. 3. 3 **לֹא תִגְעוּ בּוֹ פֶּן תָּמּוּתוּן** ye shall not touch it *lest ye die*. 19. 17; 38. 23, Ex. 5. 3, Jud. 18. 25, 2 S. 1. 20, Is. 6. 10. 2. After words of *fearing*, expressed or understood. Gen. 32. 12 I fear him **וְהִכֵּנִי פֶּן יָבוֹא** *lest he come* and smite me, 26. 7, 9. Gen. 3. 22 **פֶּן יִשְׁלַח יְדָיו** 19. 19. Frequently in this sense after **אָמַר** *to say, think*. Gen. 38. 11 **כִּי אָמַר הוּא פֶּן יָמוּת גַּם הוּא** for he thought, *Lest he die too*, 31. 31; 42. 4, Nu. 16. 34, Deu. 32. 27.—Also after *beware*, Gen. 31. 24 **הִשָּׁמֶר לֹה פֶּן יִדְבַּר** *beware not to speak*; 24. 6, Deu. 4. 23,

and often in Deu.—Sometimes in the sense of Lat. *ne* in an independent sent., Ex. 34. 15 פְּנֵי־הַבְּרִית *ne in eas pactum*. Is. 36. 18, Jer. 51. 46, Job 32. 13 *say not!*

(d) The neg. טָרָם *not yet* is usually joined to impf. even when referring to the past. Gen. 19. 4 יִשְׁכְּבוּ טָרָם *they were not yet lain down*. Gen. 2. 5; 24. 45, Ex. 10. 7, Jos. 2. 8, 1 S. 3. 3 (in v. 7 *rd.* perhaps יָדַע).—The word אָפַס (אָפַס *to be done*) means *ceasing, being done, no more, nothing*. Is. 5. 8 אָפַס מְקוֹם עַד אָפַס till there be *no more place*. 2 S. 9. 3 אִישׁ הָאָפַס עוֹד אִישׁ *is there none still remaining?* Am. 6. 10 אָפַס . . . הָעוֹד עִמָּךְ *are there any still there? no more!* With prep. Is. 52. 4 לֵבָיִן *for nothing*, 40. 17 מִן *of nothing*. Cf. Is. 45. 14; 46. 9, Pr. 26. 20 (prep.). In Zeph. 2. 15, Is. 47. 8, 10 אָפַסִּי has junctive vowel (not suff.), I am, *and none besides (me)*.

§ 128. The double neg. adds force to the negation. Zeph. 2. 2 בְּטָרָם לֹא־יָבוֹא *before it does not come*. Ex. 14. 11 הֲיֵשׁ קְבָרִים הֵמָּלִי אֵין *is it because there are no graves (מֵן is causative)*, 2 K. 1. 3, 6, 16. The prep. מֵן *away from, so as not to be, &c.*, has neg. force, and is often joined with pleonastic אֵין. Is. 6. 11 מֵאֵין יוֹשֵׁב *so that there shall be no (= without) inhabitant*, Is. 5. 9; Jer. 4. 7. Cases like Is. 50. 2 מֵאֵין מַיִם, Jer. 7. 32 מֵאֵין מְקוֹם are different: *from there being* (because there is) *no water, &c.*, comp. Rem. 5. The text of 1 K. 10. 21 is not above suspicion, owing to use of לֹא with ptp. (2 Chr. 9. 20 omits לֹא).

Rem. 1. The neg. לֹא is used as privative in forming compounds: (a) with nouns, לֹא אֵל *a no-god*, Deu. 32. 21, cf. v. 17; לֹא אִישׁ (one) *not-man*, Is. 31. 8; לֹא עֵץ (what is) *not-wood*, Is. 10. 15; לֹא דָבָר *a no-thing*, Am. 6. 13, cf. Hos. 1. 9; 2. 25. (b) With adj., as לֹא חָכָם *unwise*, Hos. 13. 13, לֹא חָסִיד *impious*, Ps. 43. 1, cf. Pr. 30. 25 *not-strong*, 2 K. 7. 9.—With prep. לֹא בְּלֹא *without*, Nu. 35. 22, 23 (inf.), Ez. 22. 29, cf. Isa. 55. 1, 2, Lev. 15. 25.—Job 26. 2 לֹא בָהּ

the *not-strength*, *strengthless*, abstract noun for adj. (or to be resolved into לֹא־יָצָר לָהֶם), Is. 5. 14.

Rem. 2. The neg. אַל with juss. &c., sometimes expresses merely the subjective feeling and sympathy of the speaker with the act. Is. 2. 9 וְאַל־תִּשָּׂא לָהֶם and *thou canst not forgive* them. Jer. 46. 6, Ps. 41. 3; 50. 3; 121. 3; 141. 5, Job 5. 22; 20. 17, Pr. 3. 25, Song 7. 3, cf. the strong ex. Ps. 34. 6. In strong deprecation with אַל the verb is occasionally suppressed or deferred to a second clause, 2 S. 13. 12 אֲלֵאֱחָי don't! my brother, v. 25 אֲלֵבְנִי nay! my son. Gen. 19. 18, Jud. 19. 23, 2 S. 1. 21, 2 K. 4. 16, Ru. 1. 13, Is. 62. 6. In other cases the verb has to be supplied from the previous clause, Am. 5. 14 seek good וְאַל־רָע and *not evil*! Jo. 2. 13, Pr. 8. 10; 17. 12. The word is used absolutely, in deprecation of something said, 2 K. 3. 13, Gen. 33. 10. —2 K. 6. 27 אֲלֵי־יֹשֵׁעַי perhaps, *if Je. help thee not*! For אַל 1 S. 27. 10 rd. אֶל־מִי (Sep.) or אֵן *whither*? — In composition אַל is little used, Pr. 12. 28 אֶל־מוֹת *not-death*, immortality.

Rem. 3. The particle אֵין frequently forms abbreviated circums. clauses, as אֵין מִסְפָּר (there is) *no number*, *without* number, countless, § 140. In this sense לֹא in poetry, 2 S. 23. 4 בֹּקֶר לֹא עָבֹד a morning *without clouds*; Job 10. 22 *without order*, 12. 24; 38. 26, Ps. 59. 4; in prose, 1 Chr. 2. 30, 32 לֹא בָנִים *childless*. — Ps. 135. 17 the stronger אֵין יֵשׁ, 1 S. 21. 9, cf. Job 9. 33. — From the semiverbal force of אֵין a late writer can say אֵין אָחֶכֶם Hag. 2. 17. In two passages, Jer. 38. 5, Job 35. 15, אֵין seems used with finite verb. — A contracted form is אִי in composition, 1 S. 4. 21 אִי־קָבוֹד *not-glory*, inglorious, Job 22. 30 אִי־נָקִי *not innocent*. This is the usual form of neg. in Eth. On אֵין with inf. § 95.

Rem. 4. The form פָּרַשׁ occurs owing to the verbal force of פָּרַשׁ, Deu. 29. 17, 2 K. 10. 23. With *perf.* פָּרַשׁ expresses what is feared *may have* happened, 2 K. 2. 16; 10. 23, 2 S. 20. 6.

Rem. 5. In Poetry. בֹּל = לֹא *not*, Hos. 7. 2 וּבֹל יֹאמְרוּ and *they say not*. 9. 16, Is. 14. 21; 26. 10, 11, 14, 18. Often with niph. of מוֹט, Ps. 10. 6; 16. 8; 21. 8, &c. With inf.

Ps. 32. 9 בִּלְקֹרֹב (when) *there is not coming nigh* (they do not come)—בִּלְ = לֹא or אֵין. With finite vb. Is. 14. 6, Hos. 8. 7; 9. 16 (Cod. Petrop. בִּלְ), Job 41. 18 (once in prose, Gen. 31. 20). With adj. 2 S. 1. 21, בִּלְ מְשִׁיחַ *un-anointed*, Hos. 7. 8 ptc., Ps. 19. 4. With noun = *without*, Job 8. 11 בִּלְיָמִים *without water*, 24. 10; 30. 8; 31. 39, Ps. 59. 5; 63. 2, Is. 28. 8.

With a preceding prep. Deu. 4. 42 בִּבְלִי דַעַת *without knowledge* (unawares), cf. Is. 5. 14, Job 38. 41; 41. 25.—בִּבְלִי *from lack of*, Deu. 9. 28 יִבְלֶה מִבְּלִי *from not being able*. Is. 5. 13, Hos. 4. 6, Lam. 1. 4. With another neg., cf. § 129 above.—In the same sense as כִּי אֵין *so that there is not*, Jer. 2. 15; 9. 9, Zeph. 3. 6. In other cases = *without* Job 4. 20; 6. 6; 24. 8.—The form בִּלְיָ once with adj., 1 S. 20. 26 *not clean*. With noun, Is. 14. 6 *without cessation*; suff. 1 S. 2. 2, Hos. 13. 4 *except me, thee*.

Rem. 6. The neg. without being repeated often exerts its force over a succeeding clause, 1 S. 2. 3, Nu. 23. 19, Is. 23. 4; 28. 27; 38. 18, Mic. 7. 1, Ps. 9. 19; 44. 19, Pr. 30. 3.

## THE CONDITIONAL SENTENCE

§ 129. The conditional sent. is compound, consisting of two clauses, the former stating the supposition, and the second the result dependent upon it (the answer to the supposition). Conditional sentences may be nominal or verbal, or partly nominal and partly verbal. The apodosis, in particular, may assume many forms.

In conditional sentences the verbal form will be used which would have been used if the sentence had been direct. The verbal forms vary according as the mind presents to itself the condition as fulfilled and actual (perf.), or to be fulfilled, and merely possible (impf.). In ordinary speech the impf. is most common both in the protasis and apodosis, but the mind may present to itself the condition as realised, in which case the perf. is used. This happens particularly in animated speech, and in the higher style. And, naturally,

when the condition is conceived as realised and actual, the result depending on it may appear carried with it, so that two perfs. may be used.

The conditional particles are chiefly **אם** *if*, **כִּי** *when, if*, *supposing that*, **לִי** *if*; less common **אֲשֶׁר** *when, if*, and **הֵן** *if*; *neg.* **לֹא** *אם* **אֵין** *if not*, **לֹא־אִלֵּא** *if not, unless*. These may be strengthened by other particles, **אִם**, **כִּי**, **גַם** *if, when, if, and* (rare, Eccl. 8. 17).

§ 130. (a) When the supposition expresses a real contingency of any degree of possibility, the most common form is impf. in prot. and vav conv. perf. or simple impf. in apod., the impf. having any of the shades of sense proper to it (§ 43 *seq.*). The impf. must be used in apod. when the verbal form cannot stand first in the clause, as in a neg. sent., or when apod. precedes the protasis, cf. Am. 9. 2-4—Jud. 4. 8 **אִם תֵּלְכִי עִמִּי וְהִלַּכְתִּי וְאִם לֹא תֵלְכִי לֹא אֵלֶיךָ** *if thou wilt go with me I will go, but if thou wilt not go with me I will not go.* 2 K. 4. 29 **כִּי תִמְצָא־אִישׁ לֹא תִבְרַכְנּוּ** *if thou meetest anyone thou shalt not salute him.* Gen. 18. 28 **לֹא אֲשַׁחִית אִם־אֶמְצָא** *I will not destroy if I find.* 13. 16 **אִם יוּכַל אִישׁ לְמִנּוֹת . . . גַּם זֶרְעָה וּפְנֵה** *if one could count the dust, thy seed also might be counted.* Of course a ptc. may take the place of impf., Gen. 43. 4, 5 **אִם־יֵשֶׁה מְשִׁלָּח** *if thou wilt let go our brother we will go down, but if thou wilt not let him go, &c.* Gen. 24. 42, Ex. 8. 17, Jud. 6. 36, 37, 1 S. 19. 11. So without **יֵשׁ** Deu. 5. 22, Jud. 9. 15; 11. 9, 1 S. 6. 3; 7. 3, 1 K. 21. 6, 2 K. 10. 6. But the prot. may be a purely nominal sent., and the apod. may take almost any form; 1 K. 18. 21 **אִם יְהוָה הָאֱלֹהִים לָנוּ אַחֲרָיו** *if Jehovah be God, follow him*; Ex. 7. 27 **אִם מָאֵן אָמְרָה הִנֵּה אֲנִי נֹגֵה** *if thou refuse, behold, I will smite.* Gen. 42. 19; 44. 26, Ex. 1. 16; 21. 3, Jos. 17. 15, Jud. 6. 31, 2 K. 1. 10; 10. 6, Mal. 1. 6.

(b) Perf. in prot.—The mind may conceive or imagine the condition as realised and actual, in which case perf. stands in prot. with the same apod. as in (a): Jud. 16. 17 **אם גלחתיו וסר כחי** *if I be shaved my strength will depart*; 2 S. 15. 33 **אם עברת אתי והיית עלי למשא** *if thou go on with me thou shalt be a burden to me*. Comp. Gen. 43. 9 with 42. 37. Deu. 32. 41, 2 K. 7. 4, Is. 4. 4; 16. 12, Mic. 5. 7, Jer. 14. 18; 23. 22; 37. 10; 49. 9, Obad. 5, Job 7. 4; 10. 14; 11. 13; 21. 6, Ru. 1. 12. Comparison of cases like Lev. 13. 53, 56, 57 shows that the use of perf. or impf. is merely a matter of mental conception. Comp. Lev. 17. 4 with 9, Num. 30. 6 with 9. Job 17. 13, 14. Probably the difference of use had become a mere matter of style, although the perf. has in it something more forcible and lively. Cf. Job 31 throughout.

In many cases the supposition refers to an actual past *fact* anterior to the speaker's position, or to the main action spoken of; or refers to something which shall have come to light through inquiry or inspection. In all such cases the *perf.* will be used in the protasis. 1 S. 26. 19 **אם י' הקיתך ירח** *if Je. has set thee on, let him smell* an offering (=if it be Je. that has); Jud. 9. 19 **אם באמת עשיתם שקחי** *if ye have dealt justly, rejoice*. Ex. 22. 1, 2 **אם ימצא הגנב . . . אם ימצא איש אשר יעשה** *if the thief be found in the act . . . if the sun have risen, &c.* Deu. 17. 2, 3 . . . **אם ימצא איש אשר יעשה** *if a man be found who does evil . . . and has gone and served (having gone)*. With Ex. 22. 2 cf. 21. 36 (אז). Lev. 4. 23; 5. 1, Nu. 5. 19, 20, 27; 15. 24; 22. 20, Deu. 22. 20, 21, 1 S. 21. 5, Is. 28. 25, Am. 3. 3, 4; 7. 2, Ps. 41. 7; 44. 21; 50. 18, Job 8. 4; 9. 15, 16; 31. 5, 9, 21, 24, 33; 34. 32.

Narratives of past frequentative actions are also often introduced by **אם** with perf. (§ 54, R. 1). Gen. 38. 9, Nu. 21. 9, Jud. 2. 18; 6. 3. More rarely **אם** and impf., Gen. 31. 8, Ex. 40. 37.

(c) The protasis is often of considerable length, and has a tense-secution within itself which must be distinguished from the apod. of the whole sentence. This tense-secution is the usual one. Gen. 28. 20 **אִם יְהִיָּה א' עִמָּדִי וְשָׁמְרֵנִי** *if God will be with me, and keep me, and give me, and I return . . . then shall Je. be my God.* Deu. 13. 2 **כִּי יָקֻם נָבִיא וְנָתַן אוֹת וּבָא הָאוֹת . . . לֹא תִשְׁמָע** *if a prophet shall arise and give a sign, and the sign come true . . . thou shalt not listen.* Nu. 5. 27 **אִם נִטְמָאָה וְהִמָּעַל** *if she has been defiled and trespassed . . . then shall come, &c.* Gen. 43. 9 (secution of fut. perf. of imagination is that of impf., § 51, R. 2); 46. 33, 34, Jud. 4. 20, 1 S. 1. 11; 12. 14, 15; 17. 9, 2 S. 15. 34, 1 K. 9. 6; 11. 38; 12. 7.

Rem. 1. Additional exx.—**אִם** and impf. in prot., with vav perf. in apod.: Gen. 24. 8; 32. 9, Ex. 13. 13; 21. 5, 6; 21. 11, Nu. 21. 2, Jud. 14. 12, 13; 21. 21, 1 S. 12. 15; 20. 6, 1 K. 6. 12; coh. after **אִם** Job 16. 6. With impf. in apod.: Gen. 30. 31; 42. 37, Ex. 20. 25, 1 S. 12. 25, 1 K. 1. 52, Is. 1. 18–20; 7. 9; 10. 22, Am. 5. 22; 9. 2–4, Ps. 50. 12. With **כִּי** in prot.: Gen. 32. 18; 46. 33, Ex. 21. 2, 7, 20, 22, 26, 28; 22. 4, 6, 9, Deu. 13. 13; 15. 16; 19. 16 *seq.*, Josh. 8. 5, 1 S. 20. 13, 2 S. 7. 12, 1 K. 8. 46, 2 K. 18. 22, Jer. 23. 33, Hos. 9. 16, Ps. 23. 4; 37. 24; 75. 3, Job 7. 13. With **אֲשֶׁר**, Lev. 4. 22, Josh. 4. 21, 1 K. 8. 31.—Various forms of apod.: Gen. 4. 7; 24. 49; 27. 46; 30. 1; 31. 50, Ex. 8. 17; 10. 4; 33. 15, Jud. 9. 15, 1 S. 19. 11; 20. 7, 21; 21. 10, Is. 1. 15; 43. 2, Jer. 26. 15, Ps. 139. 8. Ex. 8. 22 (**וְהָיָה** in prot.).

Rem. 2. Impf. with simple vav in apod. is less common, Gen. 13. 9, Josh. 20. 5.

Rem. 3. The prot. is often strengthened by inf. abs., but only with **אִם** and impf., not with **כִּי** nor with perf. Ex. 21. 5; 22. 3, 11, 12, 16, Nu. 21. 2, Deu. 8. 19, Jud. 11. 30, 1 S. 1. 11; 20. 6, 7, 9, 21 (§ 86). So with **וְהָיָה** Is. 54. 15. The **אִם** may be strengthened by **כִּי**.—Inf. abs.

with perf. after **לֹא** 1 S. 14. 30.—The apod. is also many times strengthened by **כִּי**, Is. 7. 9, Jer. 22. 24.

Rem. 4. Instead of the natural calm apod. with **vav** perf. or impf. the more animated perf. (of certainty, § 41) may occur, expressing the immediateness or certainty of the result; 1 S. 2. 16 **וְאִם-לֹא לִקְחָתִי** and if not, *I will take it*. Nu. 32. 23, Jud. 15. 7, Job 20. 14, Ps. 127. 1. Comp. **vav** conv. impf., Ps. 59. 16, Job 19. 18. Two perfs. Pr. 9. 12; with **כִּי** Gen. 43. 14, Est. 4. 16; cf. Mic. 7. 8.—Cases like Nu. 16. 29, 1 S. 6. 9, 1 K. 22. 28 are different, being elliptical. 1 S. 6. 9 if it go up by Beth. **הוּא עָשָׂה** *he has done it* = ye shall know *that he*, &c.; cf. next clause.

Rem. 5. The conditional particle usually stands first, the order being, particle, verb, subj.; but words may come between part. and verb if emphatic, and oftener with **אִם** than **כִּי**. In the casuistry of the Law (P) the *subj.* curiously precedes the particle in the principal clause. Lev. 4. 2 **נֶפֶשׁ כִּי־תִחַטֵּא**, Lev. 5. 1, 4, 15; 7. 21; 12. 2; 13. 2 and often; Num. 9. 10; 27. 8; 30. 3, 4; cf. Ez. 14. 9, 13; 18. 5, 18; 33. 2, 6, 9. In subordinate clauses the usual order is found, Lev. 13. 42, &c. Comp. the older order Ex. 22. 4, 5, 6, 9, 13, and often; but cf. Is. 28. 15, 18, 1 K. 8. 37, Ps. 62. 11. In the group of Laws Ex. 21 *seq.* the principal supposition is made by **כִּי** and the subordinate details follow with **אִם** or **וְאִם**, Ex. 21. 2-5, 7-11, &c.

§ 131. Hypothetical sent.—Actions not realised in the past, or considered not realisable (or unlikely) in the pres. or fut. may be made the subject of supposition. In this case **לִי** (**לֹא**) *if*, and **לִי־לֹא** (**לֹא־לִי**) *if not, unless*, are used. (a) In the case of past actions the perf. stands both in prot. and apod. (§ 39 d). Jud. 13. 23 **לֹא לִקְחָנוּ** *if he had wished to kill us he would not have taken*, 8. 19; Gen. 31. 42 **לֹא־לִי אֶל־הִי אָבִי הָיָה לִי כִּי עָתָה שְׁלַחְתָּנִי** *unless the God of my father had been for me, surely thou hadst sent me away empty*, 43. 10.—Nu. 22. 33 (*rd.* **לִי־לֹא**), Jud. 14. 18, 1 S. 14. 30 (apod. interrog.); 25. 34, 2 S. 2. 27, Is. 1. 9, Ps.



94. 17; 119. 92 (both nominal prot.); 106. 23. Nu. 22. 29 may be opt., or, *if there had been . . . I would have slain*. See Opt. sent.

(b) When supposition refers to pres. or fut. the apod. is usually impf., 2 S. 18. 12 **לֹא אָנֹכִי שָׁקַל . . . לֹא אֲשַׁלַּח יָדִי** *if I weighed 1000 shekels on my palms I would not put forth my hand*, 2 K. 3. 14; Deu. 32. 29 **לֹא חָכְמוּ וְשִׁכִּילוּ** *if they were wise they would perceive* this, Job 16. 4; Mic. 2. 11, Ps. 81. 14. 2 S. 19. 7 (nominal prot. and apod.).

Rem. 1. Ez. 14. 15 **לֹא נָס**, just as **לֹא נָס** Ps. 73. 15.—Ps. 44. 21 perhaps, *if we forgot would he not search?* Job 10. 14. Gen. 50. 15 **לֹא** impf., of action feared but deprecated. Deu. 32. 27 **לֹאִי** impf. in prot. may be action generalised in past, or extending into pres. Ps. 124. 1, 2 seems to approach the Ar. *laula*, but for with a noun; at anyrate the rel. here is not a conj. as in Aram. *ellu lo d*, *unless that*.

Rem. 2. The **אָז**, **עַתָּה** in the apod., originally temporal, have become often merely logical. Both are good, Gen. 31. 42; 43. 10, 2 S. 2. 27, cf. Job 11. 15. 16, Pr. 2. 5. The **כִּי** strengthens, Job 8. 6; but in some cases this **כִּי** seems resumption of **כִּי** of oath, 1 S. 25. 34, 2 S. 2. 27. This kind of apod. occurs with no formal prot., the prot. having to be supplied from the connection; e.g. after neg., 1 S. 13. 13 *thou hast not kept*; (if thou hadst) *then he would have established*; or an interr., Job 3. 13 *why breasts that I should suck?* (if not) *then I should have lain down*; or a gerundive inf., 2 K. 13. 19 *percutiendum erat sexies, then thou wouldst have smitten* Aram. Ex. 9. 15, Job. 13. 19. This kind of apod. with **אָז**, **כִּי**, **עַתָּה** is common in Job.

§ 132. What is equivalent to a cond. sent. often occurs without any cond. particle. (a) An idiomatic sent. of this kind is made by **vav conv. perf.** both in prot. and apod. This is chiefly in subordinate clauses. Gen. 44. 22 **וְיָצַב אֶת־אָבִיו וְנָמַת** *if he leave his father he will die* (lit., and he

will leave, and he will die). Ex. 4. 14 וְרָאָה וְשִׂמְחָה בְּלִבּוֹ *when he sees thee he will be glad* in his heart. Gen. 33. 13; 42. 38; 44. 4, 29, Ex. 16. 21, Nu. 14. 15; 23. 20, 1 S. 16. 2; 19. 3; 25. 31, 2 S. 13. 5, 1 K. 8. 30; 18. 10 (if they said No, he took an oath of them), 2 K. 7. 9, Is. 21. 7, Jer. 18. 4, 8; 20. 9, Pr. 3. 24. This vav perf. may have any of the senses proper to it, e.g. frequentative, Ex. 16. 21; 33. 10, 1 S. 14. 52, 1 K. 18. 10, Jer. 20. 9.—Of course if vav cannot be joined to the verb, impf. will be used in either clause, Nu. 23. 20 וְיִבְרַךְ וְלֹא אֶשְׁיבְנָה *if he blesses I cannot reverse it*; 2 K. 18. 21 וְאֵשׁ יִסְמְךָ אִישׁ עָלָיו וּבָא on which *if one lean it goes* into his hand. Deu. 22. 3, 1 S. 20. 13, Jos. 22. 18, Is. 29. 11, 12, Prov. 6. 22 (no *and* in apod.). More vigorously an imper. for second perf., 1 S. 29. 10.

(b) Two corresponding imper. often form a virtual cond. sent., Gen. 42. 18 וְאֵת עֲשׂוּ וְחַיּוּ *this do and live* (if ye do, ye shall), Is. 8. 9 הִתְאַוְרוּ דָּחֲתוּ *though ye gird yourselves ye shall be broken*. Juss. or coh. may take place of imp., Gen. 30. 28, Is. 8. 10. Two juss. are less usual, Ps. 104. 20: 147. 18, Job 10. 16; 11. 17, cf. Is. 41. 28.

Rem. 1. In the case of two imper. of course both are expressions of the will of the speaker; he wills the first and he wills the second as the consequence of the first. Similarly in the case of two jussives (§ 64 *seq.*). It is only to our different manner of thought that a condition seems expressed.

Rem. 2. Such words as אֲשֶׁר *he-who, whoever*, מִי אֲשֶׁר *whoever*, and similar phrases form virtually conditional sentences, Jud. 1. 12; 6. 31, Mic. 3. 5. And the conj. *and* without any particle may introduce a cond. sent., e.g. with אִם, עַד, &c. Jud. 6. 13 וְאִם יִשְׁעֵנוּ *if then Je. be* with us. So 2 K. 10. 15 וְאִם יִשְׁעֵנוּ *if it be* (a larger accent should be on first יש). Similarly the neg. לֹא *if not*, 2 S. 13. 26, 2 K. 5. 17.—Is. 6. 13 וְעוֹד בָּהּ *if there be still in it* a tenth. 2 K. 7. 9 וְאִנְךָ יָצָא *if you be still*. Cf. 2 S. 19. 8 וְאִנְךָ יָצָא.

But in lively speech aided by intonation almost any direct

form of expression without particles may be equivalent to what in other languages would be a conditional. 1. Impf.—Hos. 8. 12 נִחְשְׁבוּ . . . אֲכָתֵב *though I wrote . . .* they would be considered; so Is. 26. 10. Ps. 139. 18 אֲסַפְּרָם *were I to count them*; 141. 5 *should the righteous smite*; 104. 22, 27–30, Jud. 13. 12, Pr. 26. 26; two impf. Song 8. 1. Coh., Ps. 40. 6 אֲנִידָה *if I would declare*, Ps. 139. 8, 9, Job 19. 18. With הִנֵּה, 1 S. 9. 7 *behold we will go* (= if we go), Ex. 8. 22. —Cf. Ps. 46. 4; 109. 25; 146. 4, Is. 40. 30.

2. Perf.—Am. 3. 8 אֲרִיָּה שָׁאֵן *if the lion roars*. Job 7. 20 הֲטִמַּאתִי *be it I have sinned*. Ps. 139. 18 *if I awake*. Pr. 26. 12 רְאִיתָ *seest thou*. Nu. 12. 14, Ps. 39. 12, Job 3. 25; 19. 4; 23. 10. With הִנֵּה, 2 S. 18. 11, Hos. 9. 6, Ez. 13. 12; 14. 22; 15. 4. And if perf. naturally also vav impf., Jer. 5. 22, Ps. 139. 11. Ex. 20. 25, Job 23. 13, Pr. 11. 2. Two perf., Pr. 18. 22, Mic. 7. 8.

3. The ptc.—Is. 48. 13 לִרְאֵי *if I call they stand up*. 2 S. 19. 8. Ptc. with *art.* (or in consn.) *whoever*, 2 S. 14. 10, Gen. 9. 6, Ex. 21. 12, 16 and often. Frequently in Prov., e.g. 17. 13; 18. 13; 27. 14; 29. 21, &c. Particularly ptc. with כָּל *all*; 1 S. 2. 13, Ex. 19. 12, Nu. 21. 8, Jud. 19. 30, 2 S. 2. 23, 2 K. 21. 12. With הִנֵּה 1 K. 20. 36, 2 K. 7. 2, Ex. 3. 13.

4. Inf. abs.—Pr. 25. 4, 5 הֲנוּ סִינִים *if dross be removed*, 12. 7. Inf. cons. with prep., Pr. 10. 25 (2 S. 7. 14, 1 K. 8. 33, 35). Ps. 62. 10 בָּמֵאֲזִינִים לָעֹלֹת *to go up* (or, *at going up* = if they are put) upon the balance.

#### THE OPTATIVE SENTENCE

§ 133. The *wish* may be expressed by impf. (juss., coh.), 2 S. 18. 32 יִהְיוּ כְנֻעֵר אֹיְבֵי אֶדְנִי *may the enemies of my lord be as that young man*. With or without נָא, 2 S. 24. 14 נִפְלְדֵנָה *let us fall*; 1 S. 1. 23 יִבְרֹךְ יְיָ *may Je. establish*. By imper., or part. (without cop.), Gen. 3. 14 אָרֹר אֹתָהּ *mayest thou be cursed*, Is. 12. 5 מִדַּעַת זֹאת *may this be known*. With omission of verb, Gen. 27. 13 *on me be thy curse!* 1 S. 25. 24, Ps. 3. 9.

§ 134. Opt. particles.—The common opt. part. is לו, less usually אם. The perf. or impf. will be used according to reference. Nu. 14. 2 לִרְמֹתֵנוּ בְּאֶרֶץ מִ' *would we had died* in the land of Egypt; Nu. 20. 3, Jos. 7. 7. Is. 63. 19 לִוּא קָרַעַתָּ שָׁמַיִם *would thou hadst rent (i.e. wouldst rend,—perf. caused by the importunity. So 48. 18—hardly a real past).*—With impf., Gen. 17. 18 יִחְיֶה לִּי יִשְׁ' *O that Ishmael might live*; Job 6. 2 לִּי שָׁקוֹל יִשְׁקָל בְּעָשִׂי *O that my trouble were weighed* (apod. כִּי עָתִיד). With imper., Gen. 23. 13; ptc., Ps. 81. 14.—Ps. 139. 19 אִם תִּקְטֹל רָשָׁע *O that thou wouldst kill the wicked.* Ps. 81. 9; 95. 7; Pr. 24. 11.

§ 135. An interrog. sent. with כִּי *who?* expresses a wish. 2 S. 23. 15 מִי יִשְׁקֵנִי מַיִם *O that I had water to drink!* (lit., who will let me drink!). Ps. 4. 7 מִי יֵרָאֵנוּ טוֹב *O that we saw some success!* Nu. 11. 4, 2 S. 15. 4, cf. Mal. 1. 10.—Particularly the phrase מִי יִתֵּן *who will give?* 2 S. 19. 1 מִי יִתֵּן מוֹתִי אֲנִי תְּהוֹתִיהָ *would that I had died for thee!* Ex. 16. 3. With impf., Job 6. 8 מִי יִתֵּן תְּבוּאָה שְׁאֵלָתִי *O that my request might come!* Job 13. 5; 14. 13.

Rem. 1. The opt. sense of לו, אם, has arisen out of the *conditional* use; cf. Gen. 24. 42, Ex. 32. 32, where the transition is seen.

Rem. 2. A rare opt. part. is אֲחֵלִי, אֲחֵלִי (out of אֶחָד and לִי=לו), 2 K. 5. 3, Ps. 119. 5 (אֶחָד in apod.).

Rem. 3. The consn. of מִי varies. (1) One acc., Jud. 9. 29, Deu. 28. 67, Ps. 14. 7; 55. 7, Job 14. 4; 29. 2 (suff.), 31. 31, 35 (ptcp.). (2) Two acc., Nu. 11. 29, Jer. 8. 23; 9. 1 (verbs of *granting*, 2 acc. § 78, R. 1; unless the consn. be *who will set me in the wild, (in) a lodge*, as Jos. 15. 19, Jud. 1. 15 where אֶרֶץ might be acc. of place). (3) inf. cons. 2 S. 19. 1, Ex. 16. 3; acc. and inf., Job 11. 5 מִי יִתֵּן אֱלֹהֵי דָבָר *that God would speak* (anomalous order perhaps due to emph. on God). (4) Simple impf., Job 6. 8; 13. 5; 14. 13; impf. with vav, Job 19. 23; vav conv. perf., Deu. 5. 26

*O that this mind of theirs might be to them* (always), to fear, &c. With perf. Job 23. 3 (stative v.).

### CONJUNCTIVE SENTENCE

§ 136. The uses of the conjunction *and* are various. On vav conv., § 46 *seq.* On vav of purpose after imper. &c., § 64 *seq.* On vav apod. in conditional sent., § 130 *seq.*; after *casus pendens*, &c., § 50, 56. On various senses of vav in circumstantial cl., § 137. On vav of equation, § 151.

The conjunc. vav, used to connect words, sometimes stands before each when there is a number of them: Gen. 20. 14; 24. 35, Deu. 12. 18; 14. 5, Jos. 7. 24, 1 S. 13. 20, Hos. 2. 20, 21, Jer. 42. 1; or only with the concluding words of a series, Gen. 13. 2, 2 K. 23. 5, *eg.* with the last of three; or only with second, Deu. 29. 22, Job 42. 9; or sometimes the words are disposed in pairs, Hos. 2. 7.

*Both . . . and* is expressed by **גַּם . . . גַּם** or **וְגַם . . . גַּם**. Gen. 24. 25 **גַּם־מִקְשׂוֹא גַּם־תֵּבֶן** *both* straw *and* provender. Or with several words, 43. 8 **גַּם־אֲנַחְנוּ גַּם־אַתָּה גַּם־טַפֵּנוּ** *both* we *and* thou *and* our children. Jud. 8. 22.—1 S. 2. 26 **גַּם־עִמִּי** *both* with Je. *and* with men.—Gen. 44. 16; 47. 3, 19, Nu. 18. 3, Zeph. 2. 14.—Gen. 24. 44, 1 S. 12. 14; 26. 25. When influenced by a *neg.* this *both . . . and* becomes *neither . . . nor*, Nu. 23. 25, 1 S. 20. 27; 21. 9, 1 K. 3. 26, cf. 1 S. 16. 8 *neither* this one, &c. Less commonly and mainly later **וְ . . . וְ** is *both . . . and*. Ps. 76. 7 **וְרָכֵב וְסוּסִים** *both* chariot *and* horse are sunk into sleep. Nu. 9. 14, Jer. 32. 20 *both* in Isr. *and*, &c., Dan. 8. 13, Job 34. 29.

Rem. 1. For the various uses of *and* the Lexicon must be consulted. (a) It occasionally has the sense of *also*, Hos. 8. 6 **וְיָמוּת**, 2 S. 1. 23 *also* in their death.

(b) There is a dislike to begin a sentence without *and*, hence even Books are commenced with it, Ex. 1. 1, Ru. 1. 1. Hence also speeches begin with it, Jos. 22. 28

וַיֹּאמֶר וְהָיָה and we said, *It shall happen*. Jer. 9. 21, so probably Is. 2. 2.

(c) The *and* has a sort of exegetical force, with a certain emphasis on the word that explains, Ps. 74. 11 thy hand *and* (even) thy right hand. Ps. 85. 9 to his people *and* to his saints. Zech. 9. 9 *and* on a colt. Ps. 72. 12 the poor *and he that* (*i.e.* who) has no helper. Often with the sense *and that*, Am. 3. 11 a foe וְסָבִיב *and that* round about the land; 4. 10 *and that* into your nostrils. Jud. 7. 22, Is. 57. 11, Jer. 15. 13, Zech. 7. 5, Neh. 8. 13, 1 Chr. 9. 27, 2 Chr. 29. 27, Ecc. 8. 2. Comp. 2 S. 13. 20 וְשִׁמְכָהּ, Ps. 68. 10 וְהָיָה, Lam. 3. 26 וְדִמָּם *and that* in silence. Somewhat different 2 S. 3. 39 וְיִשְׁחָט מֶלֶךְ though anointed king.

(d) The vav is common to introduce what is consequential or follows from what precedes, *so, then, e.g.* with imper. Jud. 8. 24 I will make a request וְתֵנֵנִי *Give me*, &c. 2 K. 4. 41; 7. 13, Nu. 9. 2, Ez. 18. 32, Ps. 45. 12 *worship him*. Cf. Salkinson Matt. 8. 3 I will, וְתָהָר *be thou clean*, which is better than the bare תָּהָר of Del.—Particularly in dialogue the vav attaches to something said (or understood) with various shades of sense, often introducing an interrogation. Jud. 6. 13 the Lord is with thee; וְיֵשׁ אִי עִמָּנִי וְלָמָּה *If Je. be with us, Why . . . ?* Ex. 2. 20 וַיֹּאמֶר *Where is he ?* Nu. 12. 14; 20. 3, 1 S. 10. 12; 15. 14, 2 S. 18. 11, 12, 23; 24. 3, 1 K. 2. 22, 2 K. 1. 10; 2. 9; 7. 19. Peculiar 2 S. 15. 34 עָבַד וְאֵבֶן אָבִיךָ thy father's servant—*that was I* formerly, &c. In the specimens of letters preserved, the salutation and compliments appear omitted, and the letter begins וְעַתָּה *and now*, 2 K. 5. 6; 10. 2, as Ar. 'amma ba'du.

## CIRCUMSTANTIAL CLAUSE

§ 137. The cir. cl. expresses some circumstance or concomitant of the principal action or statement. Such a circumstance will generally be concerning the chief subject (whether gramm. subj. or obj.) of the main action, but the subj. of cir. cl. may be different, provided what is said of it be circumstantial of the main action—whether modal of it or contemporaneous with it.



18. 1, 8, 10; 19. 1; 25. 26; 28. 12; 32. 32; 44. 14, Jud. 3. 20; 4. 1; 6. 11; 13. 9, 20, 1 S. 10. 5; 22. 6, 1 K. 1. 48; 22. 10, Is. 49. 21; 60. 11, Nah. 2. 8.

(c) The cir. cl. may be verbal with subj. first. Gen. 24. 56 **אֲלֵתְּאָחֳרָי אֲתִי גִידֶהָ הַצָּלִיחַ דִּרְכִּי** delay me not *when Je. has prospered* my journey. 1 K. 1. 41 the guests heard **וְהֵם כָּלּוּ לֶאֱכֹל** *as they had just finished* dinner. Gen. 26. 27 why are ye come to me **וְאַתֶּם שִׂנְאֶתֶם אֹתִי** *when ye hate me?* Ru. 1. 21. Jud. 16. 31 *he having judged*.—Gen. 18. 13; 24. 31, Ex. 33. 12, Jud. 4. 21; 8. 11, Jer. 14. 15. Gen. 34. 5, Am. 3. 4-6.

§ 139. Small emphatic words like negatives may precede the subj., e.g. in the frequent **וְלֹא יָדְעוּ** *unawares* (lit. and they, &c., do not know), Is. 47. 11, Job 9. 5, cf. 24. 22, Ps. 35. 8, Pr. 5. 6. So frequently with **וְאִין**, Is. 17. 2 **מִחֲרִיד וְאִין** they shall lie down, *none making them afraid*, Lev. 26. 6. Is. 13. 14 **מִקִּבֵּץ וְאִין**, Jer. 9. 21 **מֵאִסָּף וְאִין**, 4. 4, 2 K. 9. 10, Pr. 28. 1, Is. 45. 4, 5, cf. Pr. 3. 28. In particular, it is characteristic to place the pred., when a prep. with suff., or a prep. with its complement, before the subj. Jud. 3. 16 **וַיַּעַשׂ חֶרֶב וְלָהּ שְׁנֵי פִיּוֹת** he made a dagger *having two edges*. 2 S. 16. 1 a pair of saddled asses **וַעֲלִיָּהֶם מֵאֲתִים** *with 200 loaves upon them*. Is. 6. 6 **וַיָּעֵף אֶחָד מִן הַשָּׁרִפִּים** there flew one of the S. *with a hot stone in his hand*. 2 S. 20. 8, Ez. 40. 2, Am. 7. 7, Zech. 2. 5. But also in other cases, Ps. 60. 13 **וְשֹׁנָא תְּשׁוּעַת אָדָם** *for vain is the help of man*. But cf. Ps. 149. 6.

Rem. 1. The nominal sent. seems in certain cases inverted, pred. standing first, particularly in statements of weight, measure, &c. Gen. 24. 22 he took a nose ring **וַתֵּקַח מִשְׁקָלָהּ בָּקָע מִשְׁקָלָהּ** *its weight a beka*. Jud. 3. 16 he made a dagger **וַתַּעַשׂ אֶרְבֶּה נֶמֶד אֶרְבֶּה** *its length a cubit*. The general rule in the nominal sent. is that the determined word is subj.; if both be determined the more fully determined is subj. Cf. § 103.



The view of pred. and subj. was perhaps not always the same as ours, cf. Amr, Mu'all. 1. 31.

§ 140. The cir. cl., however, is frequently introduced without *and*. Ex. 12. 11 **וְתֹאכְלוּ אֹתוֹ מֵתְּנִיכֶם חֲגָרִים** ye shall eat it *with your loins girt*. Jer. 30. 6 **מִדּוּעַ רָאִיתִי כָל־גִּבֹּר יָדָיו עַל־חֲלָצָיו** why see I every man *with his hands upon his loins*? Gen. 12. 8 **וַיִּטֵּן אֹהֶלָה בֵּית־אֵל מִזֵּם** he pitched his tent, *Bethel being on the west*. 32. 12 **פָּנָיו בָּנִים וְהִכְנִי אִם עַל־בָּנִים** lest he come and smite me, *mother with children*. Deu. 5. 4 **פָּנִים בְּפָנִים דָּבַר** *face to face* he spoke. Gen. 32. 31, Jud. 6. 22, Nu. 12. 8 *mouth to mouth*, Jer. 32. 4, 1 S. 26. 13, Jud. 15. 8, Is. 30. 33; 59. 19.

Especially with shortened expressions. 2 S. 18. 14 **בָּלֵב עֲדָנּוּ חֵי** into the heart of Absalom *when still alive*. Ex. 22. 9, 13 **וַיָּמָת . . . אֵין רֹאֶה** and it die, *none seeing it*, Am. 5. 2, and often, as Ex. 21. 11 **אֵין כֶּסֶף** *without money*. Is. 47. 1 *throneless*, Jer. 2. 32 *numberless*. Hos. 3. 4; 7. 11. Ps. 88. 5. Gen. 43. 3, 5.

Rem. 1. It is possible that such phrases as *face to face*, **אִפִּים אֶרְצָה** *with face to the ground* Gen. 19 1, *mouth to mouth* and the like, may now be adverbial acc. Originally at any rate they were real propositions, *face was to face, faces were groundwards*, &c. So Ar. says, I spoke to him *fūhu* (nom.) 'ila fiyya, *his mouth (was) to my mouth*; but also *fūhu* (acc.) 'ila fiyya, *with his mouth to my mouth*. Similarly in Gen. 43. 3 **בְּלִחֵי אֶחָיְכֶם אֶחָכֶם** is a conj., not a prep., *except your brother be*, &c.

§ 141. The subordinate character of the cir. cl. is generally shown by its place *after* the principal sent. In some cases, however, the concomitant event is placed first, with the effect of greater vividness. Gen. 42. 35 **וַיְהִי הֵם מְרִיקִים . . . וַהֲדִיָּה** and it was, *they were emptying* their sacks, *and behold*, &c., *i.e.* as they were emptying, behold. 15. 17 **וַיְהִי הַשָּׁמֶשׁ בָּאָה**

וַהֲיָה and it was, *the sun had gone down, and behold, i.e. the sun having gone down.* 2 K. 2. 11; 8. 5; 13. 21; 19. 37; 20. 4, 1 S. 23. 26; 25. 20 (וַהֲיָה = וַיְהִי, so 2 S. 6. 16), 1 K. 18. 7; 20. 39, 40. In ref. to fut. 1 K. 18. 12.

The relation of the two events (concomitant and principal) to one another is still more vividly expressed when the clauses containing them are placed parallel to one another, with no introductory formula like *and it was*. Gen. 44. 3 וַתִּבְרַח הַבֹּקֶר אֲחֵרֵי שֶׁלְחֵהּ *the morning broke, and the men were let go, i.e. when the morning broke (had broken) the men, &c.* 1 S. 9. 27 וַיָּרִידוּ וַשְׁמוּאֵל אָמַר *as they were coming down S. said.* Gen. 29. 9 עֹדֵנּוּ מְדַבֵּר וַיָּבֹא בָאָה *as he was still speaking R. came.* Particularly when the subj. of both clauses is the same. Jud. 18. 3 הָיָה עַם-בֵּית מִיכָה *as they were at the house of Mic. they recognised.* Gen. 38. 25, 1 S. 9. 11.

Rem. 1. In some cases the accentuation wrongly makes the following noun or pron. subj. to the introductory וַיְהִי, *e.g.* 2 K. 20. 4, 1 K. 20. 40, Gen. 24. 15, 1 S. 7. 10, 1 K. 18. 7; other passages show that וַיְהִי is impersonal, 1 S. 25. 20, 2 K. 13. 20, 21, cf. 19. 37; 2 S. 13. 30.

Rem. 2. The construction is the same with or without the introductory formula. The second clause in the balanced sent. always begins with *vav*, the first most commonly without. It is the first cl. that to our modes of thought appears circumstantial. 1. When the first cl. has a perf. the two events were contemporaneous or the *circumstance* had *just* occurred when the main event happened. 2. When the first has a ptcip. or a nominal sent. equivalent, the main event occurred during the action expressed by the ptcip. 3. When both clauses have ptcip. the two actions, main and subordinate, were going on simultaneously. Some ex. of perf. in first cl.: Gen. 19. 23, cf. 27. 30 for a more precise way of stating that the circumstance had *jusi* happened (cf. Jud. 7. 19). Gen. 24. 15; 44. 3, 4, Ex. 10. 13, Jos.

2. 8 (טַרַם with impf. = perf., Gen. 24. 15), Jud. 3. 24; 15. 14; 18. 22, 1 S. 9. 5; 20. 36, 41, 2 S. 2. 24; 6. 16; 17. 24, 2 K. 20. 4. Some ex. of ptc. in first cl.: Jud. 19. 22 (11), 1 S. 7. 10; 9. 14, 27; 17. 23; 23. 26; 25. 20, 2 S. 13. 30; 20. 8, 1 K. 1. 14, 22; 14. 17 (? or, ptc. = perf.); 18. 7; 20. 39, 40, 2 K. 2. 11, 23; 4. 5; 8. 5; 9. 25; 13. 21; 19. 37. With עֹד Gen. 29. 9, 1 K. 1. 14, 22, 42, 2 K. 6. 33, cf. Job 1. 16-18.—In 1 K. 13. 20 the consn. is unusual וַיְהִי הֵם יֹשְׁבִים וַיְהִי דָבָר י', cf. the usual one 2 K. 20. 4.

Rem. 3. On the use of perf. in attributive and circ. clauses where other languages would use ptc. cf. § 41, R. 3; on similar use of impf. § 44, R. 3. The impf. is much used in circ. cl., cf. Nu. 14. 3, 1 S. 18. 5 went out *prospering*, Is. 3. 26 *sitting* on the ground, 5. 11 wine *inflaming* them, Jer. 4. 30 *beautifying* thyself, Ps. 50. 20 satest *speaking*, Job 16. 8 *answering* to my face. The finite tense must be used with *neg.*, Lev. 1. 17 *not dividing*, Job 29. 24; 31. 34 *not going out*. In Ar. the circumstantial impf. may express an accompanying action of the subj. or one purposed by him, and Job 24. 14 יִקְטֹל עֵינִי seems = *to kill*, lit. he will kill. Perhaps 30. 28 is rather, I stand up *crying out*, cf. Ps. 88. 11; 102. 14. See § 82.

Obs.—The use of this *and* of circumstance is common in language.

And shall the figure of God's majesty  
Be judged, and he himself not present!  
How can ye chaunt, ye little birds,  
An' I sae weary, fu' o' care!  
Played me sic a trick,  
An' me the El'r's dochter!

#### RELATIVE SENTENCE

§ 142. The rel. sent. may be nominal or verbal, *e.g.* Deu. 1. 4 the Amorite אֲשֶׁר יָשָׁב בְּחֶשְׁבֹן *who dwelt*. The Engl. relative sentence embraces various kinds of sentences, as—  
(a) the proper rel. sent., Gen. 18. 8 he took בְּדֹהֶבֶר אֲשֶׁר עָשָׂה *the calf which he had made ready*, in which the ante-

cedent is determined; and (b) the attributive or descriptive sent., as Gen. 49. 27 Benj. is **וְאֵב יִטְרֶה** *a wolf which ravins* (a ravining w.), in which the antecedent is indefinite. In the former class of sentences the word **אֲשֶׁר** is expressed, in the descriptive and circumstantial sentences it is omitted. But the language does not strictly adhere to either side of the rule, e.g. Jer. 13. 20 **אֵיזָה הָעֵדֶר בְּתֶן־לָךְ** where is *the* flock *that* was committed to thee? Ex. 18. 20. The omission of **אֲשֶׁר** where it should stand occurs mostly in poetry and elevated style. On omission of retrospective pron. cf. § 9 *seq.* In the following cases of omission of **אֲשֶׁר** it can be noted whether the omission be according to the rule *a*, *b*, above, or not.

§ 143. When the antecedent is expressed.—The **אֲשֶׁר** may be omitted—(a) When the retrospective pron. is subj., and whether this pron. be expressed (implied in the verb) or not. Deu. 32. 15 **וַיַּשׁ אֱלֹהִים עֲשָׂדּוֹ** he forsook God *who made him*; v. 17 new gods *which* had lately come. Jer. 13. 20; 20. 11; 31. 25, Is. 10. 3, 24; 30. 5, 6; 40. 20; 55. 13; 56. 2, and often in second half of Is., Mic. 2. 10, Song 1. 3, Zeph. 3. 17, Job 31. 12. Particularly in comparisons, Jer. 14. 8, 9; 23. 29; 31. 18, Hos. 6. 3; 11. 10, Ps. 38. 14; 42. 2; 49. 13; 83. 15; 125. 1, Job 7. 2; 11. 16, Lam. 3. 1, Hab. 2. 14.—So in nominal sent., Jer. 5. 15 **גֹּוֹי אֲנִתָן הוּא** *a nation which is ancient*. Gen. 15. 13 **בְּאֶרֶץ לֹא לָהֶם** in a land *which is not theirs*. Gen. 39. 4, cf. v. 5, Hab. 1. 6, Ps. 58. 5, Pr. 26. 17.

(b) When the retrospect. pron. is obj., whether it be expressed or not. Deu. 32. 17 **לֹא יָדְעוּ אֱלֹהִים** gods *whom* they knew not, cf. Jer. 44. 3. Is. 42. 16 **בְּדַרְךָ לֹא יָדְעוּ** in a way *which* they know not. Mic. 7. 1, Is. 6. 6; 15. 7; 55. 5, Ps. 9. 16; 18. 44; 118. 22, Job 21. 27. And in comparisons; Nu. 24. 6 **כְּאֶהָלִים נִטַּע יְהוָה** like aloes *which* Je. has planted. Jer. 23. 9, Ps. 109. 19, Job 13. 28.

(c) When the retrospect. pron. is gen. by noun or prep.; Jer. 5. 15 גוי לא־תֵדַע לְשׁוֹנוֹ a people *whose speech* thou shalt not understand. 2. 6 אִישׁ בְּאֶרֶץ לֹא עָבַר בָּהּ אִישׁ *through which* no one passed. Ps. 49. 14 הַזֶּה דִּרְכָם כָּסֵל לָמוֹ this is their fate *who are confident*. Deu. 32. 37, Ex. 18. 20, Ps. 32. 2 with Jer. 17. 7, Job 3. 15. With omission of retrospect. pron., Is. 51. 1 הַצּוּר הַזֶּה הָעֵצוּר הַזֶּה the rock *out of which* ye were hewn, cf. Job 38. 26.

§ 144. When אֲשֶׁר means *he-who*, &c., § 10.—In this case אֲשֶׁר may also be omitted. Is. 41. 24 תִּבְחָרָהּ יִבְחָר בָּכֶם an abomination is *he-who* chooses you. Nu. 23. 8 מָה אֶקְבֹּל לֹא קָבַח אֱלֹהִים אֲשֶׁר יִבְחָרָהּ I will set in safety *him-whom* they snort at, Is. 41. 2, 25.—Jer. 2. 8 אַחֲרֵי לֹא־יִזְעִילוּ הֵלְכֵנוּ after *those-which* profit not they have gone, cf. v. 11. Ex. 4. 13 שְׁלַח בְּיַד אֲשֶׁר תִּשְׁלַח send *through* (by the hand of) *him-whom* thou wilt send. Is. 65. 1 נִדְרַשְׁתִּי לָלוֹא שְׁאֵלוּ I was to be inquired of *by them-that* asked not, Jer. 2. 11.—Ps. 35. 15; 65. 5; 81. 6, Job 24. 19; 34. 32, 1 Chr. 15. 12, 2 Chr. 1. 4, Jer. 8. 13, 2 Chr. 16. 9, Ps. 144. 2, Song 8. 5 *she that bore*. Lam. 1. 14 בְּיָדֵי לֹא אוּכָל קִיָּם the hands of *those-whom* I cannot withstand.

Rem. 1. Such cases as 1 S. 10. 11 מַה־זֶּה הָיָה, 1 K. 13. 12 אֵיזָה הַדָּרָךְ הַלֵּךְ are probably to be construed: what is this *which* has happened? which is the way *that* he went? but in usage אֲשֶׁר is omitted; cf. Jud. 8. 1, Gen. 3. 13, 2 K. 3. 8. So usually Ar. *ma dha* what? The same consn. also in אֵי הוּא, &c., with omission of אֲשֶׁר, cf. 1 S. 26. 14, Job 4. 7; 13. 19, Is. 50. 9.

Rem. 2. Words of *time*, *place*, and occasionally of *manner*, are apt to be put in cons. state before a clause, which takes the place of a *gen.*, אֲשֶׁר being frequently omitted. See the exx. § 25.

Rem. 3. Phrases like: a man, *whose name* was Job, are

usually made thus : **אִישׁ וְשָׂמוֹ אֵיבֹב** 1 S. 1. 1; 9. 1. 2; 17. 12, 2 S. 3. 7, &c.; but occasionally **אֵיבֹב שָׂמוֹ**, a transposed descriptive sentence; Job 1. 1, 1 S. 17. 4, 23, 2 S. 20, 21. 1 K. 13. 2, Zech. 6. 12. The antecedent is indefinite (1 S. 17. 4, 23 is doubtful owing to the obscurity of **אִישׁ הַבְּנִים**), and **אֲשֶׁר** seems nowhere expressed, though after a def. antecedent it might be, cf. Dan. 10. 1, and in Aram. 2. 26; 4. 5.—In cases of identification, as Gen. 14. 2, 8 Bela, *which* is Zoar, the usage is **בְּלָעַ הַיֶּזְעֵר**, cf. *vv.* 3, 17, and often. Similarly with persons, Jud. 7. 1, &c.—On the other hand, in giving the geographical position of a place **אֲשֶׁר** is used. Gen. 33. 18; 50. 10, 11, Jud. 18. 28, 1 S. 17. 1, 1 K. 15. 27, 1 Chr. 13. 6.

Rem. 4. The **אֲשֶׁר** is sometimes omitted with *and* and a verb. Mal. 2. 16 **וְכָפַח** *and* (I hate) *him-who* covers. Is. 57. 3 **וְתוֹנָה** (seed of an adulterer) *and of her-who* committed whoredom. Am. 6. 1 **וּבָאוּ** *and they-to-whom* the house of Is. comes (freq.).

Rem. 5. Some instances of omission of **אֲשֶׁר** in later prose are, Ezr. 1. 5, Neh. 8. 10, 1 Chr. 15. 12; 29. 3, 2 Chr. 1. 4; 16. 9; 20. 22; 30. 19.—In 2 K. 25. 10 *rd.* **אֶת** before **וְכ** with Jer. 52. 14; and 2 Chr. 34. 22 *rd.* **אֲמַר** after **rel.**

Rem. 6. The text Zeph. 3. 18 reads: those sorrowing far away from the assembly will I gather, which (they) are of thee, (thou) on whom reproach lay heavy (lit. was a burden). Well. suggests **כְּשֶׁאֵת . . . חִרְפָּה** *so that no reproach be taken up against her.*

## TEMPORAL SENTENCE

§ 145. 1. The prep. (many of which are nouns in cons. state), *e.g.* **ב**, **כ**, **ל**, **מִן**, **לְפָנַי**, **אַחֲרַי**, **עַד**, &c., are joined with the *nominal* form of the verb, the inf. cons. 2. These prep. become conjunctions when the rel. **אֲשֶׁר**, **כִּי**, is added to them, and are then joined with the *finite* forms of the verb. 3. The rel. element **אֲשֶׁר**, however, is often omitted, though not usually after strict cons. forms like **לְפָנַי**, &c.

(a) *When* may be expressed by **כ**, **ב**, with inf., or by **כִּי**, **כַּאֲשֶׁר** with finite. Gen. 39. 18 **כִּהְרִימִי קוֹלִי** *when* I lifted up, 24. 30.—4. 8 **בְּהִיוֹתָם בַּשָּׂדֶה** *when* they were in the field, 45. 1.—Hos. 11. 1 **כִּי נַעַר יִשְׂרָאֵל** *when* Isr. was a child, Gen. 44. 24, Jos. 17. 13.—Gen. 24. 22 **כַּאֲשֶׁר כָּלוּ לְשָׁתֶּת** *when* they had done drinking, Jud. 8. 33; 11. 5. The form **כִּמוֹ** is more poetical, Gen. 19. 15. After designations of time the simple **אֲשֶׁר** may be *when*, Hos. 2. 15, Ps. 95. 9, cf. § 9 c. Also **אִם** *if, when*, with freq. actions, Gen. 38. 9.

(b) *After*, by **אַחֲרֵי** with inf., or **אַחֲרֵי אֲשֶׁר** with finite. Gen. 14. 17 **אַחֲרֵי שׁוּבוֹ מִהַכּוֹת** *after his returning*, 13. 14; 24. 36.—Deu. 24. 4 **אַחֲרֵי אֲשֶׁר הִטְמָאָהּ** *after she has been defiled*. Jos. 9. 16, Jud. 11. 36; 19. 23, 2 S. 19. 31.

(c) *Before*, by **לִפְנֵי** with inf., Gen. 13. 10 **לִפְנֵי שִׁחַת יְיָ** *before* Je. destroyed Sodom, 36. 31, 1 S. 9. 15, 2 S. 3. 35.—Very often by **בְּמָרָם**, usually with impf. even when referring to past; Gen. 27. 33 **בְּמָרָם תָּבוֹא** *before* thou camest, 37. 18; 41. 50. Of fut., Gen. 27. 4; 45. 28. Occasionally with *perf.*, Ps. 90. 2, Pr. 8. 25 (*inf.* Zeph. 2. 2, text dubious). The simple **מָרָם** properly *not yet* (usually with impf., Gen. 2. 5, Ex. 9. 30; 10. 7), has also sense of *before*, with *impf.*, Ex. 12. 34, Jos. 3. 1, Is. 65. 24.

(d) *Since*, **מֵאָז**, with *perf.*, Ex. 9. 24 **מֵאָז הָיְתָה לְגוֹי** *since it became* a nation. Gen. 39. 5, Ex. 5. 23, Jos. 14. 10, Is. 14. 8, Jer. 44. 18. Once with inf., Ex. 4. 10. As prep. with noun, Ru. 2. 7, Ps. 76. 8.—As adv. *formerly, long ago, &c.* Is. 16. 13; 44. 8; 45. 21; 48. 3, 5, 2 S. 15. 34, Ps. 93. 2, Pr. 8. 22.

(e) *Then*, **אָז**, with *perf.* 1 K. 8. 12 **אָז אָמַר שְׁלֹמֹה** *then* said Sol., Gen. 49. 4, Jud. 5. 11, 2 S. 21. 17. Not uncommonly with impf., Deu. 4. 41, 1 K. 8. 1; 9. 11; 11. 7, cf. § 45. On **אָז** in apod., cf. § 131, R. 2. Jos. 22. 31, 2 K. 5. 3, 1 Chr. 14. 15.

(*f*) *Until*, עַד, with infin., or עַד אֲשֶׁר, עַד כִּי, עַד אִם, עַד אֲשֶׁר אִם with finite, with ref. to past or fut. Gen. 27. 45 עַד שֶׁיִּשְׁבֹּר אֶת-אַחִיקָה till thy brother's anger turn away. 27. 44 עַד אֲשֶׁר-תִּשְׁבֹּר חֲמַת אַחִיךָ till thy brother's rage shall turn away. Gen. 29. 8, Ex. 23. 30, Deu. 3. 20, Jud. 4. 24, 1 S. 22. 3; 30. 4, 1 K. 17. 17.—Ex. of עַד כִּי Gen. 26. 13; 41. 49; 49. 10, 2 S. 23. 10. Of עַד אִם Gen. 24. 19, 33, Is. 30. 17. Of עַד אֲשֶׁר אִם Gen. 28. 15, Nu. 32. 17, Is. 6. 11. By falling away of rel. the simple עַד often stands with finite, Gen. 38. 11, Jos. 2. 22, 1 S. 1. 22, 2 K. 7. 3, Ps. 110. 1, Pr. 7. 23.

(*g*) *As often as*, כִּדְרִי (דִּרִי) with inf., 1 S. 1. 7; 18. 30, 1 K. 14. 28, 2 K. 4. 8, Is. 28. 19; once impf. Jer. 20. 8.

Rem. 1. The word *after* in some cases = *seeing that* Gen. 41. 39, Jos. 7. 8, Jud. 11. 36, 2 S. 19. 31, cf. Ezr. 9. 13 (common in post-biblical Heb.). *After* has also a pregnant sense = *after the death of*, or *departure of* (Ar. *ba'd*). Gen. 24. 67 אַחֲרֵי אִמּוֹ after his mother. Job 21. 21, Pr. 20. 7. Frequent in Ecc., אַחֲרֵי when I am gone. Cf. לְפָנַי before I came, Gen. 30. 30. In Lev. 25. 48, 1 S. 5. 9 אַחֲרֵי with finite tense. Jos. 2. 7 בְּאִשֶּׁר after when, pleonastic, if text right.

Rem. 2. Is. 17. 14 בְּמָרָם construed with noun. Ps. 129. 6 לְפָנַי before is unique.

Rem. 3. Some adverbs of time are: *when?* מִתִּי, Gen. 30. 30; *how long, till when?* עַד מִתִּי; with neg., *how long . . . not?* 2 S. 2. 26, Hos. 8. 5, Zech. 1. 12.—*still, yet*, עוֹד. The noun may be in *casus pend.*, resumed by suff., Gen. 18. 22 עוֹדֵנִי עֹמֵד and Abr. was still standing, 1 S. 13. 7, cf. Gen. 45. 26, 28; 25. 6. With ptc. § 100.

Rem. 4. On the expression of *when, while* by the circums. clause, cf. § 137. On the expression of sentences like *and when thou overtakest them thou shalt say* (Gen. 44. 4) by two *vav perf.* cf. § 132; and such sentences as *and when he overtook them he said* (44. 6) by two *vav impfs.* § 51, R. 1. In general cf. the circums. cl., the conditional sent., and sections on *vav perf.* and *vav impf.*



from clauses

## SUBJECT AND OBJECT SENTENCE

§ 146. It is usually only clauses containing an infin. that are subject, and mostly to a nominal pred. (§ 90, R. 1). In a few cases a clause introduced by **כִּי** **אֲשֶׁר** *that*, is the subj. to a nominal sent., 2 S. 18. 3, Lam. 3. 27, Ecc. 5. 4 (all with pred. *good, better*).

The object sent. is mostly introduced by **כִּי** *that*, and may be nominal or verbal. 1 S. 3. 8 **וַיֵּבֶן עָלָיו כִּי י' קָרָא לְנֶעֱר** and E. perceived *that Je. was calling* the child, Gen. 3. 11; 6. 5.—Gen. 8. 11 **וַיָּדַע כִּי קָלָו הַמַּיִם** knew *that the waters were abated*; 15. 8; 16. 4; 29. 12; in a long sent. **כִּי** repeated, 1 K. 20. 31.—Not so commonly in earlier books, but often in later, **אֲשֶׁר** *that*. 1 S. 18. 15 **וַיֵּרָא שָׂאוּל אֲשֶׁר הוּא מְשָׁכִיל** and S. saw *that he prospered* greatly. Ex. 11. 7, Deu. 1. 31, 1 K. 22. 16, Is. 38. 7, Jer. 28. 9, Ez. 20. 26, Neh. 8. 14, 15, Est. 3. 4; 4. 11; 6. 2, Ecc. 6. 10; 7. 29; 9. 1, Dan. 1. 8. Also **אֲשֶׁר** *the fact, circumstance that, how that*. 2 K. 20. 3 **וְזָכַרְנָה אֵת אֲשֶׁר הִתְהַלַּכְתִּי** remember *how that I have walked*. 2 S. 11. 20 **וְיָדְעוּם אֵת אֲשֶׁר יִרְוּ** *that they would shoot?* Deu. 9. 7, Jos. 2. 10, 1 S. 2. 22; 24. 19. So **אֲשֶׁר** *how all* he had slain. 1 K. 19. 1 **וְאֵת כָּל-אֲשֶׁר הָרַג** *how all* he had slain.

It is common for the logical subj. of the object sent. to be attracted as obj. into the governing clause. Gen. 49. 15 **וַיֵּרָא מְנוּחָה כִּי טוֹב** he saw *rest that it was good* (that rest was). 1 K. 5. 17 **וְיָדַעַת אֶת-דָּוִד אָבִי כִּי לֹא יָכַל** *that my father D. was unable*. Gen. 31. 5, Ex. 2. 2, 2 S. 17. 8. Gen. 1. 4, 31, Nu. 32. 23.

Rem. 1. After the verb *say*, &c., the words of the speaker are often quoted directly. Gen. 12. 12 **וַאֲמָרוּ אֵשֶׁתוֹ זֹאת** they shall say, "this is his wife," v. 19; 20. 2, 13; 26. 7; 43. 7, Jud. 9. 48, 1 S. 10. 19, 2 S. 3. 13, 1 K. 2. 8, Ps. 10. 11. Or with some equivalent for *say*, Ps. 10. 4 "there is no

God" are all their thoughts. But there is a tendency to pass into the semi-oblique form, as Gen. 12. 13 אֲמַרְיָנָה say, *thou art my sister*. Gen. 41. 15, 2 S. 21. 4, Hos. 7. 2, Ps. 10. 13; 50. 21; 64. 6; Job 19, 28; 22. 17; 35. 3, 14. This is usual in language—

Die Welt ist dumm, die Welt ist blind,  
Wird täglich abgeschmackter!  
Sie spricht von dir, mein schönes Kind:  
Du hast keinen guten Charakter.

Rem. 2. Even when words are given directly they are often introduced by כִּי (כי recitativum). 1 K. 1. 30 I swear saying כִּי שׁ בְּנִיךָ יִמְלֹךְ אַחֲרַי "Sol. thy son shall reign after me." Jud. 6. 16 כִּי אֶהְיֶה עִמָּךְ Je. said, "I will be with thee." Gen. 29. 33, Jos. 2. 24, Jud. 11. 13, 1 S. 13. 11, 1 K. 11. 22; 21. 6, 2 K. 8. 13, 1 Chr. 4. 9; 21. 18; 29. 14. Cf. Gen. 45. 26. Jud. 10. 10, where כִּי only in second clause. —Rarer אֲשֶׁר recit.; 1 S. 15. 20, 2 S. 1. 4, Neh. 4. 6, Ps. 10. 6 (last words, though the sense, *one-who* shall not have misfortune, is good). Ps. 118. 10—12, 128. 2 are hardly ex. (Hitz.), cf. Is. 7. 9, Job 28. 1. The clause with כִּי as well as the direct quotation in R. 1 occupies the place of obj. in the sentence.

Rem. 3. The כִּי of obj. sent. is sometimes omitted, Ps. 9. 21 may know אֲנָשׁ הֵמָּה *that they are men*. Am. 5. 12, Is. 48. 8, Zech. 8. 23, Job 19. 25, cf. 2 K. 9. 25.

Rem. 4. A clause with *and* occasionally takes the place of an obj. sent. Gen. 30. 27 נִחַשְׁתִּי וַיְבָרֵכֵנִי י' I have divined *and* = *that* Je. has blessed. 47. 6 אִם יִדְעָתָּ וְשָׁרָם if thou knowest *and there be* = *that there are* among them. Dan. 2. 13 the law went out *and* = *that* the wise men were to be slain (ptcp.). Nu. 14. 21, Is. 43. 12.—A usual brachylogy occurs with *command*, Gen. 42. 25 וַיְצִו י' וַיִּמְלֵאוּ Jos. commanded (to fill) *and they filled*, Jon. 2. 11, cf. Am. 6. 11; 9. 9. In. Ar., God decreed *that* the Christians *were defeated*, for, should be defeated and they were defeated.

## THE CAUSAL SENTENCE

§ 147. A lighter way of suggesting causality is afforded by *and*, especially in circums. clauses. Ex. 23. 9, ye shall not oppress a stranger **וְיָדַעְתֶּם נַפְשׁ הַגֵּר** *because yourselves know* the feelings of a stranger; cf. Neh. 2. 3. Cf. § 137.

Commonly used is **כִּי** *because*, Gen. 8. 9. Similarly, **אֲשֶׁר** Gen. 30. 18, 1 S. 26. 16, 1 K. 3. 19, 2 K. 17. 4, (both, Zech. 11. 2), Jer. 20. 17.—Also the prep. **יַעַן** coupled with rel. **אֲשֶׁר** or **כִּי**. Is. 7. 5 **יַעַן כִּרְעִיעַן רָעָה** *because he has purposed* evil. The phrase is affected by Is., 3. 16; 8. 6; 29. 13; elsewhere, Nu. 11. 20, 1 K. 13. 21; 21. 29 (always with perf.). Very common **יַעַן אֲשֶׁר** *because they went not* with me. Gen. 22. 16, Deu. 1. 36, Jud. 2. 20, 1 K. 3. 11; 14. 7, 15 (always with perf.—except Ez. 12. 12?). Also **יַעַן** simply as conj., Nu. 20. 12 **יַעַן לֹא הֵאֱמִינְתֶּם** *because ye believed not*, 1 K. 14. 13, 2 K. 22. 19. As a prep. with inf., Is. 30. 12 **יַעַן מִאֲסָקְכֶם** *because of your rejecting*, 37. 29, Jer. 5. 14; 7. 13; 23. 38, Am. 5. 11, &c.—only in the prophets and 1 K. 21. 20.

Rem. 1. Several prep. have causal force, as **עַל**, **מִן**, **בְּ**, mostly in composition with **אֲשֶׁר** or **כִּי**. Gen. 39. 9 **תַּחַת בְּאִשְׁרֵי אֵת אִשְׁתּוֹ** *because thou art* his wife; v. 23. Is. 43. 4 **עַל אֲשֶׁר הִמִּית מֶלֶךְ יִקְרָא** *because thou art dear*. 2 S. 3. 30 **עַל אֲשֶׁר הִמִּית** *because he slew*. Deu. 29. 24, 1 K. 9. 9; neg., **לֹא** *because* 2 K. 18. 12; 22. 13. So **עַל כֵּי** Jud. 3. 12, Deu. 31. 17 (nominal sent.), Ps. 139. 14. With rel. omitted in neg. sent., Gen. 31. 20, Ps. 119. 136. Often **עַל** with inf., Am. 1. 3, 6, 9, 11, &c.—So **תַּחַת אֲשֶׁר לֹא** Deu. 28. 47 **תַּחַת אֲשֶׁר לֹא עֲבַדְתָּ** *because thou hast not served*. 1 S. 26. 21, 2 K. 22. 17, Is. 53. 12. So **תַּחַת כֵּי**, Deu. 4. 37.—Of the same meaning is **עַקֵּב אֲשֶׁר** Gen. 22. 18; 26. 5, 2 S. 12. 6 (**עַל אֲשֶׁר** in next clause). So **עַקֵּב כֵּי**, Am. 4. 12, 2 S. 12. 10. Without rel., Nu. 14. 24. For other forms cf. Deu. 23. 5, Jer. 3. 8.

Rem. 2. Repetition of **יַעַן** for emphasis, Lev. 26. 43, Ez. 13. 10, cf. 36. 3.

√  
§ 128

## FINAL OR PURPOSE SENTENCE

§ 148. Lighter ways of expressing purpose are—(a) The use of ו (simple *vav*) with juss., coh., *e.g.* after an imper., or anything with the meaning of imper., as juss., cohort. Gen. 24. 14 וְאַשְׁתָּה בְּדֶד הַשִּׁירָנָה let down thy pitcher *that I may drink*. Cf. Is. 5. 19 after לִמְעַן in first clause. Similarly after optative, neg., and interrog. sentences. See §§ 62, 63. In this case the *neg.* purpose is expressed by וְלֹא with impf., or sometimes לֹא simply (בִּלְ in poetry, Is. 14. 21).

(b) The inf. cons. with ל. Jud. 3. 1 וְנִסּוּת בָּם אֶת־יִשְׂרָאֵל *in order to prove* Israel by them. The *neg.* purpose in this case is expressed by לִבְלֹתִי הַכּוֹת־אֹתוֹ Gen. 4. 15 לִבְלֹתִי הַכּוֹת־אֹתוֹ *that* whoever found him *might not kill him*. Gen. 38. 9. Cf. § 95.

§ 149. More formal telic particles are—לִמְעַן אֲשֶׁר with impf., Jer. 42. 6 לִמְעַן אֲשֶׁר יֵיטֵב לָנוּ *that it may be well with us*; oftener לִמְעַן simply, with impf. or inf. cons., Gen. 27. 25 לִמְעַן תְּבָרְכֶה נַפְשִׁי *in order that* my soul may bless thee. Jud. 2. 22 וְנִסּוּת בָּם לִמְעַן *in order to prove* by them, cf. simple ל inf., Jud. 3. 1 (in *b* above). Jud. 3. 2, Jos. 11. 20.—Gen. 18. 19, Lev. 17. 5, 2 S. 13. 5.—Gen. 12. 13, Ex. 4. 5, Deu. 4. 1, Hos. 8. 4, Is. 41. 20.—Gen. 37. 22, 1 K. 11. 36, Am. 2. 7, &c. The simple אֲשֶׁר is also common, Deu. 4. 10 אֲשֶׁר יִלְמְדוּן לִירָאָה אֹתִי *that they may learn to fear me*. Nu. 23. 13, Deu. 4. 40; 6. 3 (cf. *v.* 2); 32. 46. The *neg.* clause is best made by וְלֹא אֲשֶׁר, Gen. 11. 7, Ex. 20. 26; but also by לֹא לִמְעַן אֲשֶׁר, Deu. 20. 18, Nu. 17. 5, and by לֹא לִמְעַן, Ez. 19. 9; 26. 20, Ps. 119. 11, 80; 125. 3, Zech. 12. 7.

In the same sense וְעַבְדִּי אֲשֶׁר with impf., Gen. 27. 10; more usually וְעַבְדִּי simply with impf., Gen. 27. 4, or inf.

אלו  
§ 64, 5.

§ 59

§ 128

cons., 2 S. 10. 3.—Gen. 21. 30; 46. 34, Ex. 9. 14; 19. 9.—  
Ex. 9. 16, 1 S. 1. 6, 2 S. 18. 18.

On *לֵּאמֹר* *lest, that not*, cf. § 127 c.

Rem. 1. The form *לֵּאמֹר* Ez. 21. 20; so *לֵּאמֹר* 1 Chr. 19. 3. On the other hand *לֵּבַעְבוֹר* 2 S. 14. 20; 17. 14.—Jos. 4. 24 *rd.* *יִרְאֶתֶם* inf.

Rem. 2. In Ez. 13. 3 *וּלְבַלְתִּי רְאוּ* is not telic, but probably means, and after that which *they have not seen*; possibly *וּלְבַלְתִּי* should be *rd.* = *רְאוּ* (1 S. 20. 26). In Ez. 20. 9, 14, 22 *הִחַל* is inf. niph.—Jer. 27. 18 *בְּאוּ* seems euphonic contraction for impf., cf. 42. 10; 23. 14 should perhaps be pointed in the same way *שָׁבוּ* = impf. Ex. 20. 20, 2 S. 14. 14.

Rem. 3. The particles *לֵּאמֹר*, &c. are always telic, and do not express merely result. But sometimes the purpose seems to animate the action rather than the agent, Am. 2. 7, Hos. 8. 4, Mic. 6. 16, Ps. 30. 13; 51. 6.

Rem. 4. Peculiar, Deu. 33. 11 *כִּי יִרְיָמוּ* *that they rise not up* (= *מֵאֲשֶׁר*). Ps. 59. 14 *וְאֵינָם יִכְלֹהוּ* consume . . . *that they be no more*, cf. Job 3. 9 *וְאֵין*.

### CONSEQUENTIAL SENTENCE

§ 150. Lighter ways of expressing consequence are the use of *vav impf.* and *vav perf.* Also use of simple *vav* with impf. (juss.) after neg. sent., as Nu. 23. 19 *לֹא אִישׁ אֵל* God is not a man *so that* he should lie. So interrog. sent., Hos. 14. 10.

More formal particles of consequence are *כִּי* *that*, *אֲשֶׁר* *that, so that*. 2 K. 5. 7 *אֵלֵי אֱלֹהִים אֲנִי בֹרֵךְ שְׁלִיחַ אֱלֹהִים* am I God, *that this person sends* to me? And often in questions, Gen. 20. 10, Ex. 3. 11, Nu. 16. 11, Job 6. 11; 7. 12, Ps. 8. 5.—Gen. 40. 15 I have done nothing *בְּבוֹר אֲתִי* *that they should have put*. With *אֲשֶׁר*, 2 K. 9. 37 *לֹא יֵאמְרוּ זֹאת* *that they shall not say*, This is Jez. Gen. 22. 14, Deu. 28. 27, 51, Mal. 3. 19, Ps. 95. 11, 1 K. 3. 12, 13.—Ez.

36. 27 וְעָשִׂיתִי אֶת אֲשֶׁר תֵּלְכוּ I will cause *that ye shall walk* (sent. of consequence construed as object sent.).

## COMPARATIVE SENTENCE

§ 151. This form of sent. has usually כִּי־אֲשֶׁר in prot. and כֵּן in apod. Gen. 41. 13 הָיָה כֵּן הָיָה *as* he interpreted to us, *so* it was. Ex. 1. 12, Jud. 1. 7, Is. 31. 4; 52. 14, 15; 65. 8, Ps. 48. 9; cf. transposed order, Gen. 18. 5, Ex. 10. 10, 2 S. 5. 25.—Or כִּי with inf. or noun in prot., Hos. 4. 7 כָּרְבָם כֵּן חָטְאוּ־לִי *as* they multiplied, *so* they sinned. Ps. 48. 11; 123. 2, Pr. 26. 1, 8, 18, 19, 1 S. 9. 13 (temporal).

In the prot. כִּי־אֲשֶׁר may be omitted. Hos. 11. 2 קָרְאוּ לָהֶם כֵּן הָלְכוּ *as* (the more) they called them, *so* they went away. Jud. 5. 15, Jer. 3. 20, Is. 55. 9, Ps. 48. 6. In vigorous style the compar. particle may be omitted both in prot. and apod., Is. 62. 5. The two clauses are then often equated by *vav*, especially in proverbial comparisons. Prov. 26. 14 the door turns on its hinges וְעָצֵל עַל־מִשְׁתּוֹ *and* (so) a sluggard on his bed. Pr. 11. 16; 17. 3; 25. 3, 20, 25; 26. 7, 9, 21, Job 5. 7; 12. 11; 14. 11, 12. And sometimes without *and*, Pr. 25. 26, 28, Job 24. 19.

Rem. 1. In some passages כֵּן *so* expresses the corresponding immediateness of the result or consequence of the prot. Ps. 48. 6 they saw *so* they feared (as soon as they saw, &c.), cf. Nah. 1. 12, 1 K. 20. 40.

Rem. 2. With כִּי . . . וְכִי or וְכִי . . . כִּי the first word is usually compared to the second, *so* . . . *as*. Gen. 44. 18 כָּמוֹךָ כִּי־אַתָּה thou art *as* Ph. (*so* thou *as* Ph.), 18. 25 כְּצִדִּיק כִּי־רָשָׁע the righteous *like* the wicked, Hos. 4. 9, 2 Chr. 18. 3. But sometimes the reverse, *as* . . . *so*, 1 S. 30. 24, Jud. 8. 18, Is. 24. 2, Jos. 14. 11.

## DISJUNCTIVE SENTENCE

§ 152. The conj. *and* often expresses our *or*, *nor*, *e.g.* after a *neg.*, the neg. denying the whole combination of words.

Gen. 45. 6 אין חריש וקציר *neither earing nor harvest*. 1 K. 17. 1 ומטר טל יהיה אם *there shall not be dew or rain*. Gen. 19. 35, Nu. 23. 19, Deu. 5. 14, Jud. 6. 4, Is. 10. 14, 2 K. 5. 25, Ps. 37. 25; 129. 7. Or more strongly וגם Jud. 2. 10 לא ידעו אתי וגם אתהמעשה *nor yet the work*, 1 S. 16. 8, cf. 28. 6. The conjunctive *both . . . and* becomes disjunctive *neither . . . nor* when preceded by *neg.*, § 136.

The disjunctive *or* is expressed by או, Gen. 24. 49 על־זמין או על־שמאל *to the right or to the left*. 44. 8 איד נגב כסף או זהב *how should we steal silver or gold?* Gen. 24. 50; 44. 19, Ex. 5. 3; 21. 18, 28, 32, 33, 37, Deu. 13. 2, Jud. 21. 22, 1 S. 2. 14.

When repeated, או . . . או is *whether . . . or* (sive . . . sive). Ex. 21. 31 יגח ארבת יגח ארבה *whether it gore a boy or a girl*, Lev. 5. 2. In the same sense אם . . . אם, Ex. 19. 13 לא יהיה אם בהמה אם איש *whether beast or man, it shall not live*. Deu. 18. 3, 2 S. 15. 21. So ואם . . . אם, Gen. 31. 52, Jer. 42. 6, Pr. 20. 11. Less commonly ו . . . ו, Ex. 21. 16.

#### RESTRICTIVE, EXCEPTIVE, ADVERSATIVE SENTENCES

§ 153. Restrictive particles are אך, רק *only, howbeit*. Gen. 18. 32 אך הפעם *only this time*. Ex. 10. 17, Jud. 6. 39; 16. 28. Gen. 27. 13 אך שמע בקולי *only, however, listen to my voice*. Gen. 20. 12 *only not*. Ex. 12. 16, Nu. 22. 20, 1 S. 8. 9 (אך כי); 12. 20; 18. 8; 20. 39, 1 K. 17. 13. The use of רק is similar. Gen. 6. 5; 14. 24; 24. 8, Deu. 2. 28, Jud. 14. 16, 1 S. 1. 13, 1 K. 14. 8, Am. 3. 2. Both combined, Nu. 12. 2 והרק אך במשה דבר י' אפס, Nu. 22. 35, cf. v. 20; 23. 13. On the affirmative force of אך &c., cf. § 118.

§ 154. Particles modifying in the way of exception something preceding are, כי בלתי אם אפס *saving that*, alone, אם כי *except*. Am. 9. 8 לא אשמד כי לא אפס *saving*

*that* I will not destroy. Nu. 13. 28, Deu. 15. 4, Jud. 4. 9. And אפס simply, 2 S. 12. 14.<sup>1</sup>—Am. 3. 3 shall two walk together נועדו אם בלתי *except* they have met? Gen. 43. 3 בלתי אחיכם אתכם *except* your brother be with you, Is. 10. 4. There is often ellipse of the verb or its equivalent, Gen. 47. 18 *except our* bodies, Jud. 7. 14.—Am. 3. 7 Je. doeth nothing אסגלה סודו כי *except* he have revealed his counsel. Gen. 32. 27 אסברכתני כי *except* thou bless me. Ru. 3. 18, Is. 55. 10, Lev. 22. 6. And with ellipse or continuation of the verb, Gen. 28. 17; 39. 6, 9 *except* the bread, *except* thee, 1 S. 30. 17, 2 K. 4. 2. Naturally *except* chiefly follows a neg. or interrog. with neg. force, Mic. 6. 8, Is. 42. 19.

§ 155. The simple *vav* is often used where we employ adversative particles. Ps. 2. 6 ואני נסבתי *but* I have set. Gen. 17. 5 ויהיה שמך *but* thy name shall be. Gen. 2. 17, 20; 3. 3; 37. 30; 42. 10, Ecc. 11. 9 *but* know. A more pronounced adversative is ואולם, ואולם *but, howbeit*. Gen. 28. 19, Ex. 9. 16, Nu. 14. 21, 1 K. 20. 23, Mic. 3. 8, Job 2. 5; 5. 8; 11. 5; 13. 3, 4; 14. 18. So גם is a correlative adversative, Am. 4. 6, 7 אנכי נתתי וגם *and I on my part*. Gen. 20. 6, Jud. 2. 21, Ps. 52. 7, Job 7. 11, Pr. 1. 26.

After a neg. *but* is expressed by כי אם, Gen. 32. 29 לא יעקב לא יעקב... כי אם ישראל. 1 S. 21. 5, 2 K. 23. 9, Jer. 16. 14, 15. Or simply by כי, Gen. 45. 8 לא אתם שלחתם כי א' *it is not you who sent but* God. 1 K. 21. 15, 2 Chr. 20. 15.

<sup>1</sup> When כי belongs to a phrase it may be omitted before another כי with a different sense, or the one כי serves both uses, e.g. כי אף *how much more*, &c. may be כי כי אף *how much more, when*, 2 S. 4. 11, 1 S. 21. 6; 23. 3, 2 K. 5. 13, Pr. 21. 27.





# INDEX OF PASSAGES REFERRED TO

GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§
1 5 . . . . . 47		4 5 . . . . . 48 a, 109		9 11 . . . . . 81, 101 R c	
14 . . . . . 55 a, 113		6 . . . . . 39 b		13 . . . . . 51 R 2	
20 . . . . . 101 R d		8 . 29 a, 51, 92, 101 R b		18 . . . . . 106 d	
21 . . . . . 32 R 2, 99 R 1		9 . . . . . 100 b, 122		19 . . . . . 36 R 4	
24 . . . . . 22 R 3		10 . . . . . 7 b, 39 b, 100 c		20 . . . 20 R 2, 83 R 2	
31 . . . . . 32 R 2		12 . . . . . 63 R 3		23 . . . . . 21 e	
2 4 . . . 22 R 3, 90, 91 a		13 . . . 34 R 2, 96 R 5,		24 . . . . . 10, 34	
5 . . . 45, 96 <i>Obs.</i> , 127		14 . . . . . 104 a		25 . . . . . 34 R 4	
6 . . . 44 b, 54 b, 105		14 . . . . . 57		10 8 . . . . . 83 R 2	
7 . . . . . 76		15 . . . 38 R 5, 95, 148		9 . . . . . 34 R 6, 44 a	
8 . . . . . 39 c		18 . . . . . 79, 81 R 3		19, 30 . . . . . 108 R 3	
9 . . . . . 19		19 . . . . . 38 R 1		21 . . . . . 1, 27, 34	
10 . . . 54 b, 97 R 1, 100 b		26 . 1, 39 a, 73 R 6, 105,		11 1 . . . . . 29 e, 35	
11 . 19 R 3, 22 d, 38 R 1		109		3 . . . 11 R c, 22 d, 62	
12 . . . . . 102, 103		5 . . . . . 37 c		4 . . . . . 138 a	
14 . . . . . 106 d		5 . . . . . 116 R 2		6 . . . . . 4 R 1, 35	
15 . . . 24 a, 72, 96 <i>Obs.</i>		15 . . . . . 37 c		7 . . . . . 149	
17 . . . . . 90, 106 b, 155		24 . . . . . 127 b		8 . . . . . 82	
19 . . . 43 b, 44 b, 73 R 5		6 2 . . . . . 101 R c		9 . . . . . 108	
22 . . . . . 78 R 5		4 . . . 9 c, 44 R 1, 54 b		11-25 . . . . . 37 c	
23 . . . 21 R 1, 38 R 5,		6 . . . . . 39 c		12 1 . . . . . 101, 101 R b	
81 R 2		7 . . . . . 9 b, 43 a		2 . . . . . 62, 78 R 5	
25 . . . . . 44 b		14 . . . . . 55 a		7 . . . . . 99	
3 1 . 11 R b, 19, 33, 127 a		17 . . . . . 29 b		8 . . . . . 140	
2 . . . . . 43 b		21 . . . . . 44 a		9 . . . . . 86 R 4	
3 . . . . . 9 R 2, 43 b, 43 c		7 1 . . . . . 72 R 1, 76, 114		12 . . . . . 57, 146 R 1	
4 . . . . . 43 a, 86 b		2 . . . 9 R 2, 29 R 8, 38 R 4		14 . . . . . 34, 51	
5 . . . 39 c, 56, 98 b, 100 b,		3, 9, 15 . . . . . 29 R 8		17 . . . . . 67 b, 67 R 2	
104 b		4 . . . . . 68		19 . . . . . 48 a, 73 R 5	
8 . . . . . 70 a, 114		7 . . . . . 114		13 2 . . . . . 22 d	
10 . . . . . 11 a, 104 b		10 . . . . . 51 R 1		3 . . . . . 101 R b	
11 . . . . . 95, 146		11 . . . . . 28 R 5		5 . . . . . 99	
12 . . . . . 106		13 . . . . . 11 c, 36 R 3		7 . . . . . 22, 103	
13 . . . . . 7 c, 48 a, 105,		20 . . . . . 69 c		9 . . . . . 123, 130 R 2	
144 R 1		22 . . . . . 101 R c		10 . . . 29 e, 108 R 3, 145	
14 . . . 68, 100 R 1, 110		23 . . . . . 10		11 . . . . . 11 R c	
15 . . . . . 71, 71 R 3		8 3 . . . . . 86 R 4		13 . . . . . 103	
17 . . . . . 48 b		7 . . . . . 22 c, 86 c		16 . . . . . 11 R b, 130 a	
19 . . . . . 91 a, 92		8 . . . . . 125		14 2 . . . . . 144 R 3	
22 . 35 R 2, 39 b, 56, 93,		11 . . . . . 146		3 . . . . . 101	
127 c		21 . . . . . 11 c		4 . . . . . 39 a, 68	
23 . . . . . 9 d, 39 c		9 3 . . . . . 9 a, 9 R 2		6 . . . . . 29 a	
24 . . . . . 20, 23		5 . . . . . 11 R d		9 . . . . . 37 R 5	
4 2 . . . . . 29 a, 105		6 . 81, 101 R a, 132 R 2		10 . . . . . 28 R 6, 29 R 8	
3 . . . . . 51		10 . . . 32 R 2, 98 R 1,		13 . . . 24 R 3, 28 R 4,	
4 5 . . . . . 47		101 R e		138 b	

GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§
14 17 .	. 90, 91 R 3, 145	19 15 .	. 83 R 4, 145	24 14 .	. 1 R 2, 57, 72 R 1, 148
19 .	. 22 R 3, 81	16 .	. 91 a, 91 b	15 .	. 138 a, 141 R 1
23 .	. 101 R 3, 81	19 .	. 53 c, 93	16 .	. 24 d, 69 b
15 1 .	. 4 R 1, 104 b	20 .	. 96 <i>Obs.</i>	18 .	. 83
2 .	. 70 a, 138 b	21 .	. 95	19 .	. 41 c, 51 R 1, 145
3 .	. 100 R 1	22 .	. 83	21 .	. 100 b, 125
4 .	. 106	27 .	. 101	22 .	. 24 b, 36 R 3, 37 R 4, 139 R 1, 145
6 .	. 58 R 1, 80, 109 R 2	29 .	. 91 R 1	23 .	. 7 a, 20, 60, 69 a, 122, 126
7 .	. 9 a	32 .	. 83 R 4, 117	25 .	. 136
8 .	. 7 b	33 .	. 6, 32 R 3	27 .	. 83, 106 c, 104 b
10 .	. 11 R d, 110	35 .	. 83 R 4, 152	30 .	. 91 c, 91 R 1, 100 a, 98 b, 105
12 .	. 51 R 1, 94, 113	20 2 .	. 101 R b, 146 R 1	31 .	. 104 b
16 .	. 71 R 1	3 .	. 98 b, 138 a	34 .	. 53 a
17 .	. 113, 141	4 .	. 39 c, 110	38, 40 .	. 130 a, 135 R 1
18 .	. 24 a, 41 a	5 .	. 123	45 .	. 45, 127 d
10 1 .	. 105 R 1, 113	6 .	. 65 d, 107	49 .	. 152
3 .	. 28 R 5, 29 a, 91 R 2	7 .	. 100 d, 104 b, 127 b	56 .	. 138 c
5 .	. 2, 23, 101 R d	9 .	. 30, 44 a	57 .	. 62
6 .	. 103	10 .	. 150	58 .	. 122, 126
7 .	. 101 R d	11 .	. 57 R 1, 127 b	60 .	. 107
8 .	. 45 R 1, 100 R 1	13 .	. 9 d, 31, 116 R 4	62 .	. 105 R 1
10 .	. 101 R c	15 .	. 103	63 .	. 12
11 .	. 117 R 2	16 .	. 37 R 4	64, 65 .	. 21 d
12 .	. 24 a	17 .	. 113	65 .	. 6, 104 c
17 5 .	. 81 R 3, 155	21 2 .	. 9 b, 83 R 4	67 .	. 20 R 4, 145 R 1
10, 12, 13 .	. 88 R 5	3 .	. 22 R 4	25 1 .	. 83
11, 14, 25 .	. 72 R 3, 80	5 .	. 81 R 3	7 .	. 37 c
12 .	. 9 R 2, 101 R c	7 .	. 17 R 3, 41 R 2, 111	8 .	. 70 a
17 .	. 24 R 3, 126 R 2	8 .	. 30, 81 R 3	16 .	. 106 R 2
18 .	. 134	9 .	. 70 a	21 .	. 81
18 1 .	. 69 a, 138 b	10 .	. 29 a, 29 b	26 .	. 91 R 3
2 .	. 101 R d	12 .	. 109	28 .	. 98 a
3, 4 .	. 60	14 .	. 24 b, 41 R 3	32 .	. 100 f
5 .	. 151	16 .	. 87, 101 R b	26 2 .	. 60
6 .	. 29 d, 29 R 4	17 .	. 8 R 3, 10 R 3	7 .	. 24 d, 146 R 1
7 .	. 21, 21 d, 73 R 5	24 .	. 107 R 1	9 .	. 118
8 .	. 142	25 .	. 58 b	10 .	. 39 d, 51 R 2, 57 R 1
8, 10 .	. 138 b	26 .	. 8, 125	12 .	. 38 R 5
9 .	. 117, 117 R 3	30 .	. 72 R 4	13 .	. 86 R 4, 145
12 .	. 11 c, 41 R 2, 92, 121, 138 a	31 .	. 108	15 .	. 1 R 3, 75
13 .	. 123 R 1, 138 c	34 .	. 68	16 .	. 34 R 2
14 .	. 11 R b, 34 R 2	22 2 .	. 35 R 2	18 .	. 48 c
15, 20 .	. 118	4 .	. 50 b	20 .	. 104 c
17 .	. 100 b, 104 c, 122	5 .	. 62, 101 R b	22 .	. 57 R 1
18 .	. 53 a, 67 a	6 .	. 21 d	24 .	. 104 b
21 .	. 2, 22 R 4, 62	12 .	. 11 R b, 63, 65 R 3, 98 b, 104 b	27 .	. 138 c
22 .	. 100 f, 145 R 3	14 .	. 150	27 2 .	. 40 a
24 .	. 37 b, 73 R 5	16 .	. 40 b, 120 R 5, 147	3 .	. 69 b
25 .	. 93, 123, 151 R 2	20, 21 .	. 29 a	4 .	. 65 a, 145, 149
26 .	. 37 b	23 .	. 36 R 4	6 .	. 70 a, 78
28 .	. 37 f, 130 a	24 .	. 50 b, 106 a	8 .	. 98 a
29 .	. 37 R 5, 90	23 1 .	. 37 c	9 .	. 76
30 .	. 63	10 .	. 98 R 1	10 .	. 149
32 .	. 153	13 .	. 124	12 .	. 53 b
33 .	. 105	24 3 .	. 9 c, 28 R 4	13 .	. 133, 153
19 1 .	. 140 R 1	4 .	. 29 a	13, 14 .	. 73 R 5
2 .	. 55 a	5 .	. 9 d, 43 b, 86 a	15 .	. 27
4 .	. 45, 127 d	6 .	. 127 c	19 .	. 60 R 4, 126
7 .	. 63, 127 a	7 .	. 53 a, 106	21 .	. 6 R 2, 124
9 .	. 33, 86 R 1	8 .	. 32 R 3, 63 R 2	24 .	. 121, 126
10 .	. 17 R 4	9 .	. 4 R 1		
11 .	. 22 R 1, 101 R 2	10 .	. 24 R 6, 36 a, 138 a		
13 .	. 100 b, 100 c	11 .	. 22 R 3, 91 a		
14 .	. 98 b	12 .	. 29 R 2		

GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§
27 25 . . . . .	149	31 27 . . . . .	82	37 22 . . . . .	60, 91 R 4, 149
26 . . . . .	60	29 . . . . .	96 R 1	23 . . . . .	75, 92
29 . . . . .	98 c, 116 R 1	30 . . . . .	86 a	24 . . . . .	78, 127 b
30 . . . . .	86 a, 141 R 2	32 . . . . .	10 R 1	26 . . . . .	8 R 3, 53 b
33 . . . . .	34, 45, 50 a, 99, 100 e, 100 R 4	33 . . . . .	48 a	27 . . . . .	105
34 . . . . .	1, 51 R 1, 67 b	34 . . . . .	31, 39 c, 48 c	29, 30 . . . . .	127 b
36 . . . . .	6 R 2, 38 R 5, 126 R 3	40 . . . . .	83	33 . . . . .	105
41 . . . . .	23	42 . . . . .	131, 131 R 2	35 . . . . .	70 a
42 . . . . .	79, 83, 103	44 . . . . .	55 a	38 5 . . . . .	58 c, 72 R 1
44 . . . . .	68, 145	52 . . . . .	152	9 . . . . .	54 b, 95, 110, 130 b
45 . . . . .	43 b, 55 b, 68, 96, 145	32 5 . . . . .	48 b	11 . . . . .	70 a, 107, 127 c, 145
28 3 . . . . .	55 a	6 . . . . .	51 R 7	12 . . . . .	69 a
5 . . . . .	28 R 4	7 . . . . .	100 a	15 . . . . .	78 R 5
11 . . . . .	21 R 2, 69 a, 101 R c	8 . . . . .	109	17 . . . . .	107 R 1
13 . . . . .	9 c, 104 b	9 . . . . .	35	18 . . . . .	2
15 . . . . .	41 c, 145	12 . . . . .	53 c, 98 a, 127 c, 140	19 . . . . .	73
16 . . . . .	40 a, 118	15, 16 . . . . .	36 c, 37 b	25 . . . . .	9 c, 100 a, 141
17 . . . . .	7 b, 154	16 . . . . .	1 R 3, 12	28 . . . . .	21 d, 108
18 . . . . .	76	17 . . . . .	29 R 8	29 . . . . .	100 R 6
20 . . . . .	100 b, 130 c	18 . . . . .	7 a	39 1, 12 . . . . .	69 b
29 2 . . . . .	101 R d, 108	23 . . . . .	6, 37 a	4, 5 . . . . .	143
2, 3 . . . . .	54 b	26 . . . . .	51 R 1	6 . . . . .	154
4 . . . . .	104 c, 126	27 . . . . .	154	9 . . . . .	53 b, 102
6 . . . . .	126	28 . . . . .	8 R 1	13 . . . . .	48 c
8 . . . . .	53 b	29 . . . . .	155	18 . . . . .	50 a, 91 c, 92, 96
9 . . . . .	104 b, 141	30 . . . . .	45 R 1	20 . . . . .	25
14 . . . . .	29 d	31 . . . . .	22 R 3, 48 R 1, 140	21 . . . . .	3 R 2
15 . . . . .	126 R 3	33 3 . . . . .	107	22 . . . . .	100 R 2, 108
16 . . . . .	104 c	5 . . . . .	78 R 1	23 . . . . .	100 d
17 . . . . .	31, 103	8 . . . . .	8 R 1	40 1 . . . . .	27, 51 R 1, 114
19 . . . . .	33, 90, 104 a	9 . . . . .	63	3 . . . . .	25
20 . . . . .	11 R a, 72 R 1	10 . . . . .	91 R 1, 128 R 2	5 . . . . .	27
26 . . . . .	44 a, 93	12 . . . . .	62	7 . . . . .	68
27 . . . . .	4, 20	13 . . . . .	1 R 1, 132 a	8 . . . . .	67 b, 127 b
30 . . . . .	33	14 . . . . .	62, 101 R b	13 . . . . .	9 c, 53 a
33 . . . . .	4, 146 R 2	17 . . . . .	105	15 . . . . .	39 c, 150
34 . . . . .	36 a	18 . . . . .	144 R 3	20 . . . . .	79
30 1 . . . . .	51 R 1, 100 b, 104 b	34 5 . . . . .	58 b	23 . . . . .	47
8 . . . . .	34 R 6, 67 R 2	7 . . . . .	44 a, 51 R 1, 93	41 1 . . . . .	29 a, 100 a, 101 R d
16 . . . . .	6, 32 R 3, 101 R a	21 . . . . .	104 b, 106 d	2-6 . . . . .	24 d
18 . . . . .	3 R 2	24 . . . . .	98 R 1	5 . . . . .	38 R 5
20 . . . . .	1	31 . . . . .	101 R d	6 . . . . .	98 b
27 . . . . .	146 R 4	35 3 . . . . .	50 a, 99, 100 e	8 . . . . .	27, 100 d
28 . . . . .	132 b	4 . . . . .	101 R d	9 . . . . .	111 R 1
30 . . . . .	145 R 1, 145 R 3	5 . . . . .	113	10 . . . . .	1
32 . . . . .	87	7 . . . . .	116 R 4	11 . . . . .	51 R 7
34 . . . . .	63, 126	10 . . . . .	81 R 3	12 . . . . .	11 R d, 27, 28 R 5
35, 37 . . . . .	32 R 5	13 . . . . .	9 d	13 . . . . .	151
37 . . . . .	87	17 . . . . .	21 d	15 . . . . .	100 d, 146 R 1
38 . . . . .	115	18 . . . . .	105	25 . . . . .	106 d
39 . . . . .	113	26 . . . . .	81 R 3	25-27 . . . . .	104 b
41 . . . . .	57, 90	37 2 . . . . .	32 R 2, 83 R 2, 100 R 2, 138 a	33, 34 . . . . .	63
31 1 . . . . .	10	3 . . . . .	54 R 1	35 . . . . .	32
4 . . . . .	69 b, 69 R 2	4 . . . . .	91 R 4	39 . . . . .	91 c, 145 R 1
5 . . . . .	146	7 . . . . .	45 R 1, 98 a, 100 f	40 . . . . .	33, 71
7 . . . . .	38 R 5, 58 a	8 . . . . .	43 a, 86 a, 124	42 . . . . .	20 R 2, 75
8 . . . . .	54 b, 130 b	9 . . . . .	37 a	43 . . . . .	14, 28 R 5, 72 R 1
13 . . . . .	9 d, 20 R 4	13 . . . . .	123 R 2	49 . . . . .	145
14 . . . . .	11 R a, 114	14 . . . . .	75	51, 52 . . . . .	75
15 . . . . .	80, 81, 86 c	15 . . . . .	45 R 1, 100 a	57 . . . . .	115
19 . . . . .	28 R 5, 39 c, 105 R 1	16 . . . . .	111 R 1	42 4 . . . . .	111, 127 c
21 . . . . .	69 R 2, 114	18 . . . . .	50 a, 73 R 4, 145	6 . . . . .	99 R 3, 106 d
24 . . . . .	101 R b, 127 c	19 . . . . .	24 R 3	7 . . . . .	14
26 . . . . .	47	21 . . . . .	51 R 1, 71, 78	8 . . . . .	107
				11 . . . . .	104 b, 106 a

GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§	EXODUS	§§
42 14, 15 . . . . .	4 R 1	47 26 . . . . .	1 R 2, 38 R 6	5 16 . . . . .	100 d
15 . . . . .	119, 120	30 . . . . .	107 R 1	6 3 . . . . .	101 R a
16 . . . . .	125	31 . . . . .	21 d	6 . . . . .	57 R 1
18 . . . . .	64, 132 b	48 1 . . . . .	108	9 . . . . .	101 R c
19 . . . . .	23, 32 R 2	4 . . . . .	100 e	12 . . . . .	24 d
21 . . . . .	118	7 . . . . .	p. 143 n., 106 b	28 . . . . .	25
25 . . . . .	11 R d, 75, 146 R 4	10 . . . . .	101 R c, 113	7 9 . . . . .	65 R 4
28 . . . . .	101	13 . . . . .	29 a	11 . . . . .	29 R 7
30 . . . . .	26, 78 R 8	14 . . . . .	41 R 3	17 . . . . .	55 c
35 . . . . .	11 R d, 141	15 . . . . .	3 R 1	20 . . . . .	73 R 6, 114
36 . . . . .	1 R 2, 127 b	19 . . . . .	107	27 . . . . .	130 a
38 . . . . .	132 a	22 . . . . .	35 R 2, 101 R d	8 10 . . . . .	29 R 8
43 3 . . . . .	86 R 1, 140 R 1, 154	49 1 . . . . .	17 R 2, 117, 145	11 . . . . .	88 R 1
3 5 . . . . .	140	7 . . . . .	59	12 . . . . .	65 R 2
3 7 . . . . .	86 a	8 . . . . .	106 c	17 . . . . .	55 c, 130 a
4 . . . . .	130 a	12 . . . . .	101 R c	20 . . . . .	44 R 2
5 . . . . .	100 d	15 . . . . .	116 R 3, 146	22 . . . . .	132 R 2
7 . . . . .	43 b, 86 a, 122	17 . . . . .	49 a, 65 R 6	24 . . . . .	82, 86 b
9 . . . . .	41 c, 51 R 2, 130 b	22 . . . . .	116	9 2 . . . . .	100 f
10 . . . . .	38 R 5, 131, 132 R 2	25 . . . . .	78 R 1	7 . . . . .	101 R b
12, 15 . . . . .	38 R 5	27 . . . . .	44 R 3, 142	15 . . . . .	131 R 2
14 . . . . .	32 R 2, 130 R 4	31 . . . . .	108	18 . . . . .	96 R 3
16 . . . . .	10	50 3 . . . . .	44 a	24 . . . . .	145
22 . . . . .	8	5 . . . . .	62	32 . . . . .	17 R 1
25 . . . . .	43 a	10 . . . . .	67 b, 144 R 3	10 1 . . . . .	6, 32
28 . . . . .	29 a	15 . . . . .	131 R 1	3 . . . . .	41 R 2
33 . . . . .	101	20 . . . . .	101 R d	5 . . . . .	108
44 1 . . . . .	10			7 . . . . .	146
2 . . . . .	23	EXODUS		8 . . . . .	74, 79
3 . . . . .	141	1 1 . . . . .	136 R 1	10 . . . . .	151
4 . . . . .	41 R 3, 132 a	5 . . . . .	98 R 1	11 . . . . .	1 R 2
5 . . . . .	44 a	8 . . . . .	80	11 5 . . . . .	99
7 . . . . .	45 R 1, 117 R 1	10 . . . . .	53 c, 57	6 . . . . .	116 R 1
8 . . . . .	43 b, 152	12 . . . . .	151	8 . . . . .	32 R 3
11 . . . . .	83	16 . . . . .	1 R 1, 55 b, 130 a	12 3 . . . . .	38 R 2
12 . . . . .	41 R 3	18 . . . . .	47	8 . . . . .	101 R d
16 . . . . .	136	19 . . . . .	53 b, 54 a	11 . . . . .	98 R 1, 140
18 . . . . .	151 R 2	20 . . . . .	115	15 . . . . .	32 R 2
21 . . . . .	17 R 4	21 . . . . .	1 R 3	16 . . . . .	81, 106 a
22 . . . . .	132 a	2 2 . . . . .	146	18 . . . . .	38 R 3
27 . . . . .	107 R 1	6 . . . . .	29 R 7	29 . . . . .	51 R 1
33 . . . . .	60, 70 a	7 . . . . .	53 a, 65 d	34 . . . . .	44 R 3, 145
34 . . . . .	43 b	9 . . . . .	3 R 2	48 . . . . .	11 R b, 88 R 2
45 1 . . . . .	11 R b, 127 a	13 . . . . .	45 R 1	49 . . . . .	113, 116
4 . . . . .	9 b	14 . . . . .	118	13 3 . . . . .	88 R 2
6 . . . . .	6 R 2, 9 c, 152	15 . . . . .	21 d	7 . . . . .	72 R 3, 80
8 . . . . .	127 a, 155	20 . . . . .	136 R 1	15 . . . . .	44 a, 97 R 1
11 . . . . .	29 d	3 1 . . . . .	100 R 2	14 2 . . . . .	101 R d
16 . . . . .	69 a	3 . . . . .	45 R 1, 62	11 . . . . .	91 R 4, 128
18 . . . . .	34 R 5, 65 d	7 . . . . .	111 R 3	12 . . . . .	65 a, 90, 123
22 . . . . .	37 R 4	10 . . . . .	65 d	20 . . . . .	5, 50 b
25 . . . . .	60 b	11 . . . . .	43 b, 150	15 . . . . .	72
26 . . . . .	146 R 2	4 5 . . . . .	43 c	1 . . . . .	45
46 4 . . . . .	86 c	8, 9 . . . . .	57	4 . . . . .	34 R 5, 115
20 . . . . .	81 R 3	9 . . . . .	101 R c	5 . . . . .	45 R 2
26 . . . . .	98 R 1	10 . . . . .	24 d, 24 R 3, 145	9 . . . . .	59, 73
27 . . . . .	22 R 4, 36 R 3	13 . . . . .	25, 144	12, 14 . . . . .	45 R 2
33, 34 . . . . .	130 c	14 . . . . .	44 a, 132 a	13 . . . . .	6 R 3
47 3 . . . . .	17, 116 R 3, 136	17 . . . . .	9 c	14 . . . . .	98 b
6 . . . . .	106 d, 146 R 4	28 . . . . .	75, 80	16 . . . . .	32 R 5
9 . . . . .	26	5 1 . . . . .	114	19 . . . . .	48 c
12 . . . . .	75	3 . . . . .	22 R 1, 152	20 . . . . .	116 R 2
18 . . . . .	154	7 . . . . .	11 b, 55 a	16 1 . . . . .	38
21 . . . . .	106 e	10 . . . . .	100 d, 127 b	3 . . . . .	135, 135 R 3
24 . . . . .	38 R 6, 116	11 . . . . .	10 R 3, 11 b	6 . . . . .	57 R 1

EXODUS		88	EXODUS		88	LEVITICUS		88
16	7, 8	104c	26	16	38 R 6	9	10	83 R 1
8		127a	19		37c, 37f	10	10, 11	96 R 4
16		69 R 3	26		36 R 3	14		26
21		132a	33		34 R 4	11	26, 39	9 R 2
22	36 R 3, 38 R 4	27 7	81 R 3, 91 R 1		47	45 R 1	97 R 1	
28		41 R 2	15		37a	13		35 R 2
17	4	56	16		29d	3, 4, 10		71 R 4
7		11 R a	21		22 R 3			116 R 2
11		122, 124	28	3	116 R 1	12		22 R 1
18	4	54b, 116 R 5	10		37 R 5	42		130 R 5
15		101 R a	17		29c	45		100 R 2
18		44a	29	9	78 R 2	46		25
19		34 R 2	29		24c	49		81 R 1
19		107	40		29d	53, 56		130b
19-22		55a	30	12	91 R 1	57	29 R 7	130b
20		142, 143	21		109 R 2	14		25
19	4	47	31	14	116 R 1	15	24	65 R 6
12		132 R a	32	1	6 R 1	16	27	81 R 3
13		96 R 5, 152	4		76	17	4, 9	130b
19		86 R 4	9		24d	5		149
20	5, 6	98c	10		65a	11		101 R 4
10		32 R 2	12		138c	14		116 R 1
12		60	13		11b	18	18	101 R 1
20		43c, 149 R 2	26, 33		8	19	6	32 R 2
24		24b, 53b	28		37d	8		116 R 1
25		48d, 76, 132 R 2	29		48 R 2, 96 R 4	16		71 R 2
26		149	30		65b	36		24c
21	8	130a	32		127b, 135 R 1	20	14	72 R 4
5		86a, 130 R 3	34		10 R 3	22	6	154
11		36 R 4, 140	33	7-9	54b	15		9 R 3
12		55c, 86 R 2, 99	7-II		57	27		32 R 2
13		9d	11		44a	23	2	106 R 2
18		152	12		105	32		38
22		17 R 3	14		11c	24	22	35 R 2
28		72 R 4, 79, 86a	16		126 R 8	23		77
29		116 R 4	20		65 R 2	25	10	38 R 3
31		152	34	5	73 R 6	22		72 R 3
36		44b, 130b	7		86b	33		116 R 2
37		36 R 3	15		127c	48		145 R 1
22	2	130b	15		69 R 1	26	6	139
2-5		130 R 5	33		51 R 1	21, 23, 24		71 R 2
3		86a, 101 R 8	35	5	29 R 7	36		67b
3, 11, 12		130 R 3	36	24	37c, 37f	37		127b
4		65 R 6	30		38 R 4	42		29 R 4
5		67b	38	3	76	43		65 R 6, 147 R 2
7-II		130 R 5	24		37c	27	24	10, 10 R 2
8		116 R 4	39	10, 17	29c			
9, 13		140	40	37	130b			
23	4	86a						
8		44a						
9		105, 147	1	17	141 R 3	3	1	25
12		53 R 1	4	2	35 R 2, 101 R 1	20		106 R 2
14, 17		38 R 5	5	1	130 R 5	29, 43		72 R 4
27		78 R 7	23		130b	36		37c
30		29 R 8, 145	5	1	130b, 130 R 5	47		37 R 5
31		98b	2		152	4	19	28 R 6
24	4	37c	9		101 R 1	36		72 R 3
5		29b	11		38 R 6	5	7	10 R 1
10		11c	13		35 R 2	10		72 R 4
25	11	78 R 2	24		10 R 2	18		32 R 5
18, 28		76	6	3	29c, 29 R 4	19		130b
28		81 R 3	4		73	27	48d, 57 R 3	130c
31		80	7		88 R 5	6	9	108 R 1
26	2	37 R 4	13		29d	13		26
3	5	11 R c	7	21	130 R 5	23		87
						7	10	81 R 3

NUMBERS	§§	NUMBERS	§§	NUMBERS	§§
7 88 . . . . .	37 c	17 28 . . . . .	126 R 2	34 18 . . . . .	38 R 4
8 4 . . . . .	101 R b	18 3 . . . . .	136	35 6 . . . . .	37 c
9 6 . . . . .	113	19 7 . . . . .	111	23 . . . . .	100 R 3
10 . . . . .	130 R 5	20 3 . . . . .	134, 136 R 1		
11 . . . . .	101 R d	5 . . . . .	127 b	DEUTERONOMY	
13 . . . . .	9 R 2	8 . . . . .	114	1 3 . . . . .	37 R 2, 38
14 . . . . .	136	11 . . . . .	115	4 . . . . .	99 R 2, 142
15 . . . . .	91 R 1	12 . . . . .	147	7 . . . . .	101 R b
18 . . . . .	25	26, 28 . . . . .	75	1 15 . . . . .	76
20 . . . . .	29 d	21 2 . . . . .	130 R 3	16 . . . . .	55 a, 88 R 2
10 2 . . . . .	91 R 3	8 . . . . .	55 c, 99	19 . . . . .	32, 73 R 1
4 . . . . .	38 R 5	8, 9 . . . . .	54 b	27 . . . . .	91 R 4
7 . . . . .	91 R 1	9 . . . . .	57, 72 R 4, 130 b	31 . . . . .	44 a, 146
25 . . . . .	100 R 5	26 . . . . .	48 c	44 . . . . .	22 c, 44 a
11 4 . . . . .	135	22 6 . . . . .	53 R 1, 83 R 1	2 7 . . . . .	11 R b, 73, 73 R 1
8 . . . . .	54 R 1	11 . . . . .	50 b, 53 b, 91 b	11, 20 . . . . .	44 a
12 . . . . .	22 c, 124	13 . . . . .	91 R 4	24 . . . . .	83
13 . . . . .	p. 143 n.	18 . . . . .	29 d	27 . . . . .	29 R 8, 62
15 . . . . .	65 R 3, 86 c	19 . . . . .	63 R 3	30 . . . . .	58 a
17 . . . . .	101 R a	21, 22 . . . . .	50 b	34 . . . . .	72 R 4
20 . . . . .	29 d, 147	23, 25 . . . . .	91 R 4	3 5 . . . . .	28 R 4
22 . . . . .	81 R 3	28, 32, 33 . . . . .	28 R 5	11 . . . . .	123 R 2
25 . . . . .	32 R 2	29 . . . . .	131	18 . . . . .	70 a
26 . . . . .	38 R 1	33 . . . . .	39 d, 131	21, 22 . . . . .	99 R 3
29 . . . . .	100 b, 135 R 3	34 . . . . .	109	24 . . . . .	8 R 2
32 . . . . .	86 c	35 . . . . .	106 c, 153	26 . . . . .	63
33 . . . . .	44 R 3	30, 37, 38 . . . . .	86 a	29 . . . . .	75
12 1 . . . . .	114	37 . . . . .	118	4 5 . . . . .	75
2 . . . . .	153	23 3 . . . . .	7 b, 8	6 . . . . .	1 R 2
4 . . . . .	36 R 4	7 . . . . .	45 R 2, 60	7 . . . . .	8 R 2
6 . . . . .	3 R 2	8 . . . . .	144	10 . . . . .	9 c, 149
8 . . . . .	22 R 3, 140	10 . . . . .	91 R 3	16, 19 . . . . .	53 c
12 . . . . .	51 R 4	10, 23 . . . . .	41 R 2	17 . . . . .	22 R 3
14 . . . . .	132 R 2, 136 R 1	11 . . . . .	86 c	21 . . . . .	91 R 1, 95, 96 R 1
13 2 . . . . .	38 R 4	19 . . . . .	58 a, 65 c, 128 R 6,	22 . . . . .	55 c, 100 d, 100 e
13 . . . . .	117	20 . . . . .	150, 152	23 . . . . .	127 c
18 . . . . .	126 R 1	25 . . . . .	132 a	24, 34 . . . . .	99
20 . . . . .	124	25 . . . . .	86 R 3	26 . . . . .	40 b
28 . . . . .	154	24 1 . . . . .	29 R 8	27 . . . . .	71 R 1
14 2 . . . . .	39 d, 134	4, 16 . . . . .	97 R 1	33 . . . . .	48 b
3 . . . . .	141 R 3	6 . . . . .	143	37 . . . . .	11 c, 116 R 1
7 . . . . .	34	7, 19 . . . . .	65 R 6	40 . . . . .	43 c
8, 27 . . . . .	9 R 2	9 . . . . .	116 R 1	41 . . . . .	45, 145
15 . . . . .	132 a	17 . . . . .	51 R 2	42 . . . . .	100 R 5
16 . . . . .	96 R 1	23 . . . . .	91 a	47 . . . . .	32 R 3
21 . . . . .	81 R 2, 119, 146 R 4	25 14 . . . . .	28 R 5	5 4 . . . . .	140
24, 31, 40 . . . . .	56	26 10 . . . . .	51 R 5	19 . . . . .	28 R 4, 67 R 3
32 . . . . .	1	55 . . . . .	81 R 3	21 . . . . .	54 a
35 . . . . .	115	59 . . . . .	108 R 1	23 . . . . .	31, 116 R 4
37 . . . . .	32 R 2	27 7 . . . . .	1 R 3	26 . . . . .	32 R 3, 135 R 3
41 . . . . .	1 R 2	24 . . . . .	10 R 2	6 5 . . . . .	57 R 1
15 4 . . . . .	29 d, 38 R 6	16 . . . . .	28 R 5	11 . . . . .	98 a
35 . . . . .	88 R 5	29 6 . . . . .	24 R 4	15, 18 . . . . .	53 c
40 . . . . .	53 c	30 2 . . . . .	28 R 5	7 5 . . . . .	45 R 4
16 5 . . . . .	57 R 1	3 . . . . .	88 R 1	7 . . . . .	28 R 1, 33, 101 R 5
9 . . . . .	34 R 2	6, 9 . . . . .	130 b	14 . . . . .	17 R 5
11 . . . . .	150	12 . . . . .	41 R 3	23 . . . . .	67 b
13 . . . . .	86 c	31 13 . . . . .	114	25, 26 . . . . .	65 R 2
15 . . . . .	72 R 4	15 . . . . .	73 R 7	8 2 . . . . .	6 R 2
29 . . . . .	81 R 2, 109, 127 a,	28 . . . . .	35 R 1	3 . . . . .	75
32 . . . . .	130 R 4	32 5 . . . . .	81 R 3	5, 16 . . . . .	28 R 4
35 . . . . .	51 R 5	17 . . . . .	145	9 . . . . .	9 R 1
35 . . . . .	37 R 5	23 . . . . .	130 R 4	13 . . . . .	114
17 5 . . . . .	9 R 2, 149	33 38 . . . . .	38 R 3	18 . . . . .	19 R 3
27, 28 . . . . .	41 a	34 2 . . . . .	29 a	9 3 . . . . .	19 R 3

DEUTERONOMY	§§	DEUTERONOMY	§§	JOSHUA	§§
9 6, 13	24 d	25 13, 14	29 R 8	6 3	38 R 5, 87
7	60, 100 R 2, 146	15	24 c	9, 13	86 R 4
21	87	26 3, 17	40 b	7 1	67 b
25	37 f, 72 R 3	5	24 R 4	6	17 R 4
10 4	36 b	19	91 R 4	7	48 d, 83, 134
15	91 b	27 6	76	8	145 R 1
17	34 R 4, 44 a, 106 d	25	32 R 5	15	81 R 3
11 10	54 a	28 8, 21, 36	65 R 6	21	20 R 2, 20 R 4
12	22 R 3	21, 22	22 R 1	25	77
18	32 R 3	25	76	8 6	100 R 6
18-22	56	27, 51	150	11	20 R 4, 29 R 5
23	33	43	29 R 8	19	22 b, 73 R 1
24	44 R 2	48	32 R 5, 116 R 1	22	5
12 2	86 a	61	100 R 3	29	21 e
11	34 R 5	67	135 R 3	30, 31	51 R 2
20	62	29 17	128 R 4	33	20 R 4
22	79	22	91 R 3	9 2	71 R 2
13 1	63 R 2, 106 c	30 18, 19	40 b	9	67 b
2	130 c, 152	31 7	72 R 1, 75	12, 13	6 R 1
4	125	11	36 a	24	79
5	45 R 4	26	55 a	27	78 R 3
7	9 b, 62	32	72	10 1	48 c
11	77	8, 18	65 R 6	12	51 R 2
14 7	116 R 3	10	45 R 2	13	1 R 2
21	88 R 1	11	44 R 3	16	36 b
22	29 R 8	15	41 R 4, 143	24	22 R 4
15 2	88, 88 R 5, 108	17	128 R 1, 143	11 11	113
4	154	19	28 R 4	20	109 R 2
6	51 R 2	21	128 R 1	12 1	69 a
7	35 R 2, 101 R c	24	98 b	13 1	58 a
9	38 R 3	27	127 c, 131 R 1	4	69 R 2
16 4, 8, 13	36 a	29	131	5	29 R 5
18	67 b	35	25, 45 R 2, 113	9	20 R 4
19	44 a	36	17 R 5	14	116 R 1
21	11 R b, 29 c	37	143	14 9	120
17 2, 3	130 b	40	119, 120 R 5	11	151 R 2
8	34 R 2	41	130 b	14	73 R 5
14	62	33 6	65 R 3	15 3	44 R 2
15	9 R 2	11	71, 98 R 1, 149 R 4	19	135 R 3
17, 20	65 R 2	16	63 R 1	21	69 R 2
18	57	19	28 R 6	16 8	44 R 2
18 2	106 d			17 11	72 R 4
3	152	JOSHUA		14	138 a
16	63 R 3	1 9	123 R 2	16	81
19 2	36 a	2 4	116 R 1, 126	18 5	73 R 4
6	71	5	94	19 51	28 R 5
9	36 R 4, 37 R 5	7	145 R 1	20 5	130 R 2
10	53 c, 65 R 2	8	127 d	22 17	72 R 4
13	32 R 5	14, 20	32 R 3	20, 31	67 b
20 15, 20	9 R 2	17	32 R 3, 55 c	26	93
18	149	20	55 c	28	57 R 1, 136 R 1
21 1	41 R 3	3 4	32 R 5	29	117 R 1
3, 4	109	11	20 R 4	32	114
7	116	12	29 R 8, 38 R 4	24 10	86 R 1
10	116 R 1	14	29 R 5	14	32 R 5
11	28 R 6	16, 17	87		
14	86 b	4 3	86 R 3	JUDGES	
22 3	132 a	4	37 R 5	1 3	107
5	73	5	26	7	28 R 4, 98 R 1,
8	108 R 1	8	37 a		100 R 2
20	130 b	9	48 b	9	28 R 4
23 5	91 R 4	24	149 R 1	12	53 b, 132 R 2
15	53 c	5 2	83	14	8 R 3, 51
24 4	145	8	101 R d	15	57 R 1, 135 R 3
25 2	90 R 2	13	124	16	105 R 1



JUDGES	§§	JUDGES	§§	JUDGES	§§
1 19 . . .	94, 95, 98 <i>b</i>	8 1 . . .	95, 144 R 1	15 2 . . .	63, 86 <i>a</i>
22 . . .	107, 115	2 . . .	116 R 3	7 . . .	120 R 5, 130 R 4
24 . . .	99	7 . . .	55 <i>b</i>	13 . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 118
29, 30 . . .	105	11. 28 R 1, 71 R 2, 138 <i>c</i>	27	16 2 . . .	53 <i>b</i> , 57 R 1
34 . . .	116 R 1	14 . . .	27	10 . . .	47
2 1 . . .	45 R 2	18 . . .	11 R 4, 151 R 2	15 . . .	6 R 2
8 . . .	24 R 3	19 . . .	39 <i>d</i> , 119, 131	17 . . .	130 <i>b</i>
10 . . .	152	23 . . .	107	20 . . .	29 R 8
15 . . .	109	24 . . .	136 R 1	21 . . .	100 R 2
18 . . .	54 R 1	28 . . .	17 R 4, 47	27 . . .	99 R 1
18, 19 . . .	54 <i>b</i> , 130 <i>b</i>	30 . . .	98 R 1	31 . . .	138 <i>c</i>
21 . . .	47	32 . . .	29 R 5	17 3 . . .	37 <i>f</i>
22 . . .	149	9 2 . . .	90, 91 <i>a</i> , 124	5 . . .	106 <i>b</i>
3 1 . . .	148	4, 5 . . .	77	6 . . .	111
3 . . .	36 <i>b</i> , 101 R <i>b</i>	6 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	8, 9 . . .	43 <i>b</i> , 45 R 1
10 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	8, 14 . . .	60 R 1, 86 <i>a</i>	10 . . .	36 R 3
16 . . .	139, 139 R 1	9 . . .	41 R 2, 51 R 2	18 R . . .	73 R 5
23 . . .	58 R 1	15 . . .	127 <i>b</i> , 130 <i>a</i>	2 . . .	91 R 4
24 . . .	100 <i>b</i>	16 . . .	32 R 5, 47	3 . . .	141
30 . . .	47	17 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	11 . . .	98 R 1, 100 R 7
4 4 . . .	19 R 1	19 . . .	130 <i>b</i>	16 . . .	37 R 1
6 . . .	60 R 4	27 . . .	135 R 3	18 . . .	8 R 1
8 . . .	130 <i>a</i>	28 . . .	43 <i>b</i> , 102	25 . . .	22 R 3
9 . . .	3 R 2, 154	29 . . .	65 <i>b</i>	28 . . .	144 R 3
11 . . .	48 <i>c</i> , 105 R 1	36 . . .	100 R 1, 111 R 1	19 4 . . .	36 <i>a</i>
14 . . .	4, 9 <i>c</i>	36, 37 . . .	115	11 . . .	86 R 2
19 . . .	75	48, 1 R 1, 41 R 3, 146 R 1	115	12 . . .	9 R 2
20 . . .	116 R 6, 126	53 . . .	19 R 1	17 . . .	45 R 1
22 . . .	75, 97 R 1	55 . . .	11 R <i>d</i> , 115	18 . . .	72 R 3
24 . . .	86 R 4	10 2, 3 . . .	37 <i>c</i>	20 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>
5 . . .	72	7 . . .	37 <i>b</i>	22 . . .	28 R 6, 73 R 4
1 . . .	114	9 . . .	109	30 . . .	101 R <i>b</i> , 132 R 2
3 . . .	107 R 1	10 . . .	146 R 2	20 4 . . .	99
4 . . .	73 R 2	11 1 . . .	24 <i>c</i>	8 . . .	29 R 6
5 . . .	6 R 1	12 . . .	8 R 3	16 . . .	14, 45 R 1
8 . . .	44 R 1, 122	13 . . .	146 R 2	31 . . .	41 R 3, 114
10 . . .	28 R 1	25 . . .	86 <i>c</i> , 124	44 . . .	72 R 2
15 . . .	151	29 . . .	24 R 6	21 8 . . .	8 R 2
21 . . .	71 R 2	34 . . .	116 R 1	19 . . .	32 R 2
22 . . .	28 R 6, 29 R 8	35 . . .	101 R <i>a</i>		
27 10 R 3, 32 R 5, 41 R 4		36 . . .	92, 145 R 1	I SAMUEL	
6 2-6 . . .	54 <i>b</i>	38 . . .	114	I 1 . . .	19 R 1, 144 R 3
3 . . .	57, 130 <i>b</i>	39 . . .	1 R 2, 109	2 . . .	104 <i>c</i> , 113
4 . . .	29 R 5, 44 R 1, 54 R 1, 152	12 3 . . .	126 R 6 <i>a</i>	4-7 . . .	54 <i>b</i>
5 . . .	44 R 1	5 . . .	126	6 . . .	67 <i>b</i>
8 . . .	19 R 1	5, 6 . . .	54 R 1	7 . . .	29 R 8, 44 R 1, 145
13 . . .	132 R 2, 136 R 1	7 . . .	17 R 3	8 . . .	45 R 1
14 . . .	32 R 3, 123 R 2	14 . . .	37 <i>b</i>	9 . . .	84 R 1
16 . . .	53 <i>a</i> , 146 R 2	13 2 . . .	19 R 1	11 . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 130 <i>c</i> , 130 R 3
18 . . .	96 R 2, 107 R 1	3 . . .	57 R 1	12 . . .	58 <i>c</i> , 82, 100 <i>c</i>
19 . . .	24 <i>b</i> , 41 R 3	8 . . .	22 R 4	13 . . .	44 <i>b</i> , 113
25 . . .	28 R 5, 111 R 2	12 . . .	132 R 2	16 . . .	24 R 3, 101 R <i>c</i>
28 . . .	81 R 3, 99	14 . . .	65 R 3	20 . . .	83 R 4, 127 <i>c</i>
30 . . .	65 <i>a</i>	17 . . .	8 R 1	22 . . .	69 R 1, 105, 145
7 2 . . .	24 R 2	19 . . .	108 R 2	23 . . .	63, 72 R 1, 133
3 . . .	8, 37 <i>c</i>	23 . . .	39 <i>d</i> , 131	24 . . .	36 <i>c</i> , 69 <i>b</i>
4 . . .	4	14 3 . . .	122	26 . . .	99
5 . . .	44 <i>a</i>	4 . . .	1 R 2, 81, 11 R 1	27 . . .	101 R <i>b</i>
7 . . .	11 R <i>d</i> , 37 <i>f</i>	6 . . .	91 R 3	2 . . .	72
13 . . .	58 R 1	8 . . .	91 R 4	3 . . .	17 R 1, 29 R 8, 83, 128 R 6
16, 19, 25 . . .	17 R 4	9 . . .	86 <i>c</i>	4 . . .	73 R 3, 116 R 2
19 . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 88, 141 R 2	12 . . .	47	5 . . .	101 R <i>b</i>
21 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	14 . . .	32 R 5	10 . . .	65 R 6
22 . . .	37 <i>d</i> , 37 <i>f</i> , 136 R 1	15 . . .	123 R 2, 126 R 2	11 . . .	69 R 1, 100 R 2
		16 . . .	40 <i>a</i> , p. 143 <i>n</i> , 131		

I SAMUEL	§§	I SAMUEL	§§	I SAMUEL	§§
2 13.	132 R 2	12 2.	58 a	19 1.	91 b
13, 14.	55 c	3.	7 a	3.	8, 132 a
13-16.	54 b	4.	11 R b	4.	116 R 3
15.	45, 53 b	11.	70 b	6.	120
16 50 b, 54 R 1,	86 R 2,	19.	65 R 3	10.	32 R 3
	118, 130 R 4	22.	30	11.	91 R 4
18.	98 R 1, 100 R 7	23.	32 R 2	13.	31, 73 R 5
19.	44 b, 111	13 1.	11 R d	17.	126 R 5
19, 20.	54 b	7.	101, 145 R 3	22.	32 R 2
20.	116 R 6	11.	146 R 2	23.	86 R 4
23.	32 R 2, 32 R 3	15.	31	24.	73
25.	91 R 4	19.	44 b	20 2, 5	43 b
26.	86 R 4, 136	14 9.	86 R 4, 101 R d	3.	119
27.	88 R 1, 126 R 3	12.	75	8.	110
28.	72 R 1	15.	34 R 6	9.	121
30.	86 a, 98 c	21.	94	13.	72 R 4, 120 R 4
33.	71 R 1, 115	24.	48 R 2	16.	73 R 5
3 2.	83 R 2	30.	130 R 3, 131	17.	67 b
3.	127 d	33.	93	19.	83
5.	83	34.	101 R b	29.	106 R 2
8.	38 R 5, 146	36.	63 R 1, 63 R 2	40.	28 R 5
12.	87	37.	126 R 2	42.	36 R 4
17.	120 R 4	39.	120 R 5	21 3.	9 b, 11 R e, 75
4 10.	29 R 6	42.	73 R 5	9.	128 R 3
12.	138 b	44.	120 R 4	15.	45 R 1
15.	24 R 3, 116	45.	101 R c	16.	4, 121
16.	29 R 3	15 9.	32 R 2, 32 R 4,	22 13.	88 R 1
19.	96 R 2		34 R 5	15.	83 R 2
21.	128 R 3	17.	101 R d	23 2.	53 a
5 9.	145 R 1	19.	48 b	10.	73 R 7
11.	65 a	20.	146 R 2	11.	126 R 2
6 3.	100 a	23.	50 b, 101	22, 23.	60 R 4
7, 10.	1 R 3	25.	65 R 2	26.	141
9.	130 R 4	32.	70 b	24 6.	72 R 4
12.	86 c	33.	111	7.	117 R 1
18.	32 R 2	16 10.	36 b	11.	73 R 5
7 8.	101	12.	101 R d	14.	44 a
9, 12.	19 R 1	18.	27, 28 R 5	16.	65 R 2, 101
10.	141 R 1	23.	32 R 2, 54 R 1	18.	104 a
16.	54 R 1	17 1, 4	144 R 3	21.	43 a
8 7.	72 R 1, 101 R c	8.	28 R 5, 45 R 1	25 2.	36 a
12.	96 R 4	14.	34, 36 b, 106 d	3.	24 d
22.	55 a	17.	32 R 4, 36 R 3,	15.	25, 28 R 1
9 1.	144 R 3		37 R 4	17.	101 R c
2.	33	26.	39 c, 116 R 4	19.	29 R 2
3.	35 R 2, 72 R 4	31.	73 R 5	20.	58 c, 141 R 1
6.	44 a	32.	53 b	22.	120 R 4
7.	132 R 2	34.	72 R 4	24.	1, 133
8.	38 R 6	34-36.	54 b	26.	88 R 5, 119
11.	100 a	38.	75	27.	116 R 6
23.	60 R 1	39.	82	34.	48 d, 131
24.	22 R 4	42.	101 R d	42.	101 R b
27.	141	43.	17 R 3, 104 c	26 7.	69 a
10 2.	58 b, 101 R d	46.	17 R 4	9.	41 R 2, 51 R 2
3.	37 R 4	18 1, 3	11 b	11.	117 R 1
4.	36 R 3, 37 R 4	2.	82	12.	34 R 6
5.	65 R 6, 138 b	4.	75	16.	24 R 3, 72 R 4
7.	60 R 2	5.	141 R 3	17.	126
8.	63, 63 R 2	15.	146	19.	130 b
11.	7 c, 144 R 1	17.	34	20.	72 R 4
12.	109 R 2, 136 R 1	18.	8 R 1, 43 b	27 9.	54 R 1
16.	86 a	19.	91 R 1, 91 R 3,	10.	128 R 2
19.	9 R 2, 146 R 1		96 R 5	28 1.	43 b
11 2.	1 R 2, 109 R 2	21.	38 R 5	7.	28 R 6
11.	51	23.	90 R 1, 138 a	9.	107 R 1

1 SAMUEL	§§	2 SAMUEL	§§	2 SAMUEL	§§
28 14.	73	11 11.	120 R 2, 121	19 2.	51 R 4
16.	45 R 1	12.	50 b	7.	131
29 3.	6 R 2	17.	29 a, 102	8.	40 b, 109, 132 R 2
10.	132 a	20.	146	20.	91 R 2
30 2.	41 R 3, 48 c	25.	44 a, 72 R 4	21.	71 R 1
6.	109	12 4.	32 R 2	25.	9 c, 96 R 3
17.	3 R 3	14.	154	44.	34 R 2
21.	37 f	16.	54 R 1	20 6.	128 R 4
22.	24 c, 147	18.	53 b, 126 R 4	8.	139
24.	151 R 2	21.	70 a	10.	71 R 3, 114
		22.	43 R 1	12.	100 R 4
2 SAMUEL		13 12.	117	19.	28 R 6, 126 R 5
1 4.	146 R 2	15.	67 b	20.	117 R 1
6.	24 R 3, 86 a	17.	4	21 3.	65 d
9.	22 R 1, 28 R 3	18.	58 R 1	4.	1 R 1, 41 R 3
21.	100 R 3, 128 R 5	20.	136 R 1	6.	65 R 2, 79
22.	44 R 1	25.	65 a	9.	36 R 4, 68
23.	33, 136 R 1	26.	132 R 2	22 14.	65 R 6
24.	98 a, 99	30.	141 R 1	24.	51 R 7
25.	117	32.	98 R 1	33.	29 R 4
2 9.	29 R 6	39.	29 R 1	36.	90 R 1
23.	71 R 3, 101 R d	14 5.	47, 118	23 3.	71 R 2
27.	119, 120 R 5, 131 R 2	10.	55 c, 56, 99	4.	128 R 3
32.	69 a	11.	101 R c	5.	2
3 1.	86 R 4	14.	43 c, 149 R 2	6.	22 R 2
9.	120 R 4, 120 R 5	19.	94	11.	28 R 5
13.	107 R 1, 146 R 1	20.	149 R 1	15.	135
16.	86 R 4	25.	93	17.	117 R 1
24.	86 c	32.	90 R 1	24 3.	38 R 5, 113, 136 R 1
33.	43 b	15 4.	135	13.	29 d, 90 R 1, 116 R 1
34.	91 R 1, 100 R 3	10.	51 R 1	14.	62
35.	120 R 5	12.	86 R 4	24.	29 d, 86 a
39.	136 R 1	21.	25, 120 R 5, 152		
4 1.	113	23.	67 R 3, 115	1 KINGS	
8.	17 R 2	30.	100 f	1 1, 2	109
10.	94	31.	78 R 8	2.	55 a, 63, 65 R 2, 108
11.	72 R 4, 154 π.	32.	98 R 1	4.	34
5 2.	19 R 3	33.	130 b	5.	37 R 1
8.	98 b	34.	130 c, 136 R 1	6.	1 R 1, 101 R c,
10.	24 R 6, 86 R 4	37.	45 R 2		108 R 1
19.	86 a, 126 R 2	16 1.	139	12.	65 d, 67 b
24.	41 c, 72 R 4	4.	40 b	13.	83 R 4
25.	151	5.	58 R 1, 86 R 4	20.	106 b, 125
6 1.	63 R 3, 72 R 4	10.	8 R 3	21, 34.	114
6.	73 R 5	13.	57 R 1, 86 R 4	26.	1
16.	58 c, 141	18.	118	27.	122
20.	86 c	17 3.	29 e	30.	120 R 5, 146 R 2
23.	106 b	5.	1	33.	28 R 5, 38
7 3, 5	60 R 4	8.	107 R 1, 146	40.	98 a
7, 8	29 a	11.	11 c, 40 b	41.	138 c
9.	10 R 3, 57 R 1	12.	63 R 1, 63 R 2	51.	120
23.	8 R 2	15.	11 R e	2 2.	55 c
28.	106 R 2	16.	109	5.	26, 47, 107 R 1
29.	83, 91 R 1	17.	55 c	6.	63 R 2
8 2.	87, 116 R 5	18 3.	86 a, 146	8.	78, 146 R 1
8.	29 d	11.	101 R d, 132 R 2,	15, 18.	107 R 1
10.	23		136 R 1	21.	79
9 1.	126 R 3	12.	8, 131	22.	60, 126 R 6 a,
2.	126	14.	63 R 2, 140		136 R 1
3.	126, 127 d	18.	72 R 4	26.	24 R 3, 110
4.	69 a	23.	8, 60	28.	105
10.	101 d	25.	86 R 4	31.	24 R 4, 55 a
13.	24 d	29.	91 a, 121	39.	27, 28 R 5
10 9.	116 R 4	32.	133	42.	40 b, 55 b
11, 17.	116 R 5	19 1.	1, 135	44.	57 R 1

1 KINGS	§§	1 KINGS	§§	1 KINGS	§§
3 4.	37 <i>d</i> , 44 R 2	10 21.	100 R 3, 128	18 26.	21 <i>f</i>
6.	32, 107 R 1	22.	38 R 4, 38 R 5	28.	91 R 3
7.	90	29.	101 R 2	29.	101 R 3
11.	58 <i>b</i> , 147	31.	113	30.	99
16.	36 <i>a</i> , 51 R 2	5.	12	39.	106 <i>d</i> , 115
18.	28 R 5, 36 R 4	7.	51 R 2	46.	108 R 3
22.	118	9.	22 R 4	19 1.	146
23.	5	10.	58 R 1, 95	2.	35 R 2, 120 R 4
25.	11 R 2	14.	29 <i>a</i>	4.	69 <i>c</i>
26.	86 <i>b</i> , 136	16.	36 R 1	5.	6 R 2
4 1.	29 <i>a</i>	22.	146 R 2	6.	83
7.	54 R 1	30.	78 R 3	10.	111
13.	28 R 4	38.	130 <i>c</i>	11.	32 R 2, 32 R 4
5 2.	38 R 4	12 6.	65 R 2, 75, 100 <i>f</i>	13.	69 <i>a</i>
6.	14	8.	99 R 2	19.	38 R 3
6-8.	54 <i>b</i>	12.	8 R 4	21.	29 R 7, 71
12.	14, 17, 37 <i>e</i>	13.	75	20 1.	17, 37 <i>e</i>
17.	78 R 2, 107 R 1	16.	8 R 2, 8 R 3	6.	120 R 5
	146	17.	50 <i>b</i> , 106 <i>b</i>	7.	60 R 4
20, 22.	107 R 1	19.	65 <i>d</i>	8.	63
23.	93	31.	15, 72 R 4	12.	91 R 1
29.	17	13 2.	144 R 3	14.	28 R 6
30.	36 <i>a</i>	2, 3.	55 <i>c</i> , 100 R 4	16.	37 R 1
6 1.	91 R 2	12.	48 R 2, 144 R 1	18.	70 <i>a</i> , 111 R 3
7.	29 <i>e</i> , 80	13, 27.	21 <i>d</i>	20.	58 R 1, 116 R 5
9.	78 R 2	18.	41 R 3	28.	56
18.	100 <i>d</i>	20.	141 R 2	31.	24 <i>e</i> , 106 <i>d</i> , 146
20.	78 R 2	21.	147	33.	50 <i>a</i>
32, 35.	58 R 1	30.	117	35.	91 R 4
38.	38 R 3	31.	56, 57 R 1	37.	86 <i>c</i>
7 7.	43 <i>a</i>	14 4.	101 R 6	39.	141
8.	45 R 2	5.	11 R 2, 65 R 6	40.	4, 5, 141 R 1
10.	29 R 3	6.	75, 80	21 2.	4
12.	32 R 2	7.	76, 78 R 3, 147	3.	117 R 1
14.	29 <i>b</i> , 80	8.	93	6.	45 R 2, 130 <i>a</i>
15, 23, 26.	44 R 2	10.	17 R 5		146 R 2
24.	17 R 6	11.	111	7.	45 R 1, 121
31.	38 R 6	13.	28 R 5, 147	10, 13.	22 R 3
44.	37 <i>f</i>	14.	6 R 1	11.	99 R 2
8 1.	65 R 6, 145	24.	20 R 4	12.	58 <i>b</i>
5.	115	25.	28 R 5, 51 R 1	14.	39 R 1
8.	44 <i>b</i>	28.	145	15.	155
12.	145	15 13.	50 <i>b</i> , 101	19.	1, 155
27.	34 R 4, 44 <i>b</i> , 118	23.	28 R 5, 71, 71 R 3,	20.	126, 147
32.	93		72 R 3, 123 R 2	29.	147
41.	9 R 2	25, 28.	38	22 3.	126 R 3
43.	69 R 1	16 8, 10, 15.	38	6, 14.	124
46.	44 <i>a</i>	11.	17	7.	65 R 2, 122, 123
47.	58 <i>a</i>	16.	22 R 3	8.	44 <i>a</i>
55.	67 R 3, 78	18.	22 R 3, 72 R 4	9.	19 R 1
59.	32 R 3	22.	73 R 4	10.	70 <i>a</i> , 80, 100 <i>f</i>
63.	111	24.	20 R 4, 29 <i>a</i> , 29 <i>d</i>	13.	29 R 7, 35 R 2
64.	34 R 2	31.	90 R 1, 126 R 5		63, 71 R 2
9 6.	130 <i>e</i>	17 1.	152	16.	146
14.	37 <i>e</i>	14.	22 R 4	20.	5, 65 <i>d</i>
25.	54 R 1, 88	16.	116 R 2	22.	53 <i>a</i> , 60 R 4
26.	14	21.	63	24.	8 R 4
10 5.	44 R 2	24.	6 R 2	25.	9 <i>c</i>
6.	29 <i>e</i>	18 4.	37 <i>d</i>	27.	4, 29 <i>e</i>
7.	101 R 3	7.	141, 141 R 1	28.	29 R 6, 130 R 4
8.	32 R 3	10.	54 <i>b</i> , 132	30.	73, 88
9.	50 <i>b</i> , 91 <i>a</i>	12.	141	35.	100 R 2
14.	37 R 3	13.	38 R 4, 47, 75	36.	117 R 3
16.	37 <i>e</i> , 37 R 4,	15.	120	41.	38
	44 R 2	21.	75, 130 <i>a</i>	47.	17

2 KINGS	§§	2 KINGS	§§	2 KINGS	§§
1 2.	32 R 3, 125	7 8.	19 R 1	16 14.	29 c, 50 b
3.	128	9.	78 R 8, 128 R 1,	15.	29 R 7
4.	106 b		132 a, 132 R 2	17.	29 c
8.	24 R 3	13.	20 R 4, 136 R 1	17 4.	29 R 8
11, 13	83	16, 18	29 d	6.	38 R 2
13, 14	37 R 5	19.	136 R 1	13.	28 R 6
2 9.	136 R 1	8 5.	141	21.	78
10.	82	8, 9	32 R 3	26.	127 b
11.	86 R 4, 100 f, 141	10.	58 b	28-41	100 R 2
16.	128 R 4	13.	22 c, 43 b, 72 R 1,	29.	29 R 8
17.	36 a, 37 e		75, 146 R 2	18 4.	58 b
3 1.	38	17.	36 R 3	9, 10.	38
3.	116	22.	45 R 2	17.	32 R 5
4.	29 d, 37 d, 54 R 1	25.	38	21.	132 a
8.	8 R 4, 144 R 1	29.	29 R 1, 44 R 2	23.	20 R 4, 37 d
11.	65 c, 65 d, 122	9 1.	35 R 2	26-32	60
13.	118, 128 R 2	3.	40 b	31.	64
14.	120 R 5, 131	4.	29 b	32.	55 b, 65 d, 96
16.	29 R 8, 88 R 2	5.	21 f	36.	58 b
24.	86 R 3	8.	17 R 5	37.	70 a
26.	113	10.	139	19 1.	78 R 5
27.	43 a	12.	11 R e, 117	3.	127 b
4 1.	19 R 1, 107 R 1	15.	29 R 1	4.	9 b, 31, 53 b
8, 11, 18	21 R 2, 145	18.	1 R 1, 7 b, 8 R 3	11.	107 R 1, 121
9.	30	20.	44 a	14.	116 R 1
13.	67 b, 94, 122	25.	28 R 5, 146 R 3	17.	118
19.	117	26.	57 R 1, 120	22.	7 a, 58 a
29.	130 a	32.	36 R 5	25.	65 R 1, 109 R 2
41.	136 R 1	33.	102	27.	90
43.	4 R 1, 7 b, 88	35.	91 R 4	28.	56
5 2.	71 R 1	10 2.	136 R 1	32.	77
3.	135 R 2	2, 3	55 b	37.	141 R 1
4.	11 R e	4.	107	20 3.	146
5.	29 R 3	6.	28 R 6, 34	4.	32 R 2, 73 R 1,
6.	136 R 1	10.	102		141 R 1
10.	60 R 4, 65 d	13.	73 R 5, 104 c	9.	41 R 2, 124
11.	21 R 2, 86 c	14.	37 c	12.	16
12.	116 R 3, 126 R 4	15.	32 R 5, 126	13.	32 R 2
13.	64, 111 R 1		132 R 2	14.	45 R 1
17.	79, 132 R 2	23.	128 R 4	21 6.	82
20.	51 R 2, 120 R 3	25.	11 R b	12.	113, 132 R 2
21.	21 d	11 4.	28 R 5, 75	13.	86 c
22.	6 R 2, 36 a	10.	17	22 1.	36 R 3
23.	29 d, 83	12.	17 R 4	8.	111
25.	152	14.	117	13.	9 a
26.	121	12 10.	35 R 2, 108 R 1	18.	99
6 3.	83, 107 R 1	12-17	44 R 2	20.	17 R 3, 113
5.	72 R 4	16.	71 R 2	23 3.	22 R 3
6.	75	18.	51 R 2	8.	108 R 1
8.	11 R e	21.	67 b	9.	44 b, 155
9.	96 R 1	13 11.	116	10.	96 R 1
10.	38 R 5	14.	43 a, 67 b	17.	20 R 4, 29 c
12.	35 R 2, 44 a	19.	39 d, 94, 131 R 2	24 3.	101 R d, 109
16.	10	20, 21	141 R 1		R 2
19.	97 R 1	14 7.	58 c	12.	38
20.	4	10.	53 b	14.	17, 37 e
22.	111 R 1	12.	29 R 6	25 1.	17, 38 R 2
25.	38 R 6	23.	38	5.	115
31.	120 R 4	26.	17 R 5, 76	8, 27	38
32.	45	15 1.	39 R 1	9.	32 R 5
33.	6 R 1, 100 f	13.	29 d, 38	10.	144 R 5
7 1.	29 d	16.	20 R 4	15.	29 R 8
3.	41 c, 145	17, 23, 27	38	16.	32 R 2
4.	130 b	21.	123 R 2	17.	36 R 3
7.	1 R 1	30, 32	38	19.	9 R 2

ISAIAH	§§	ISAIAH	§§	ISAIAH	§§
1 2. . . . . 58 <i>a</i> , 105		5 28. . . . . 100 <i>f</i>		11 14. . . . . 29 R 5	
3. . . . . 105		29. . . . . 59		12 1. . . . . 65 R 5	
4. . . . . 24 <i>a</i> , 39 <i>b</i> , 117		6 1. . . . . 50 <i>b</i> , 138 <i>b</i>		5. . . . . 133	
5, 6 . . . . . 22 R 3, 101 R <i>b</i>		2. . . . . 11 R <i>d</i> , 29 R 8,		6. . . . . 14	
7. . . . . 98 <i>b</i> , 106 <i>c</i>		38 R 4, 100 <i>f</i> , 101 R <i>d</i>		13 2. . . . . 60 R 3	
8. . . . . 58 <i>b</i>		3. . . . . 5, 29 R 8, 54 R 1,		3. . . . . 3, 24 <i>c</i>	
9. . . . . 39 <i>d</i> , 131		102		4. . . . . 117 R 3	
11. . . . . 28 R 4, 40 <i>b</i> , 73		4. . . . . 80		8. . . . . 24 <i>c</i> , 29 R 6, 101	
13. . . . . 96 <i>Obs.</i> , 106 <i>a</i>		5. . . . . 24 <i>d</i> , 41 <i>a</i> , 110, 117		9. . . . . 41 R 1, 96	
14. . . . . 90, 101 R <i>d</i>		6. . . . . 139, 143		14. . . . . 22 R 2, 139	
15. . . . . 73, 111, 113		7. . . . . 56, 105 R 2		17, 18. . . . . 44 <i>a</i>	
17. . . . . 84		8. . . . . 7 <i>a</i> , 101 R <i>b</i>		22. . . . . 113	
18. . . . . 22 <i>e</i> , 40 <i>b</i>		9. . . . . 60 R 4, 67 <i>a</i> , 86 <i>c</i>		14 2. . . . . 73 R 4, 73 R 7,	
19. . . . . 34 R 5, 83		10. . . . . 53 <i>c</i> , 108		100 R 5	
21. . . . . 117		11. . . . . 41 <i>c</i> , 80, 128, 145		3. . . . . 91 R 2, 109	
23. . . . . 44 <i>a</i> , 116 R 1		13. . . . . 83, 132 R 2		6. . . . . 67 <i>b</i> , 67 R 2	
24. . . . . 62		7 2. . . . . 116 R 5		8. . . . . 44 <i>a</i> , 99	
25. . . . . 101 R <i>d</i>		5. . . . . 101 R <i>d</i> , 147		17. . . . . 101	
26. . . . . 81 R 2		6. . . . . 29 <i>a</i>		19. . . . . 28 R 1, 98 <i>b</i>	
30. . . . . 24 <i>d</i> , 98 R 1		7. . . . . 1 R 2, 109 R 2		21. . . . . 1 R 2, 41 R 1,	
2 2. . . . . 57 R 1, 100 R 2,		8. . . . . 101		109 R 2	
136 R 1		9. . . . . 130 R 3		23. . . . . 78 R 5, 84	
7, 8 . . . . . 80		13. . . . . 34 R 2, 90		25. . . . . 105 R 2	
8. . . . . 116 R 1		14. . . . . 11 <i>b</i> , 21 <i>e</i>		27. . . . . 99 R 3	
9. . . . . 41 R 1, 49 <i>b</i>		15. . . . . 84		31. . . . . 29 R 6, 88 R 2	
11. . . . . 73 R 5, 128 R 2		23. . . . . 17		32. . . . . 108	
11. . . . . 51 R 2, 116 R 2		24. . . . . 29 <i>e</i> , 108		15 3. . . . . 29 R 6, 73 R 3	
20. . . . . 3, 24 R 2, 116 R 1		25. . . . . 71 R 4, 108 R 3		7. . . . . 115, 143	
22. . . . . 97 R 1, 101 R <i>b</i>		8 1. . . . . 101 R <i>b</i>		8. . . . . 69 R 1	
3 1. . . . . 100 R 1		4. . . . . 108		16 2. . . . . 22 R 2, 69 R 1	
3. . . . . 24 <i>d</i> , 98 R 1		6. . . . . 99, 147		4. . . . . 115	
5. . . . . 17 R 5		9, 10 . . . . . 64, 132 <i>b</i>		8. . . . . 116	
6. . . . . 69 <i>a</i>		12. . . . . 10 R 2		9. . . . . 20 R 4, 75	
7. . . . . 73 R 5, 75, 76		13. . . . . 106 <i>c</i>		10. . . . . 108 R 1, 109	
8. . . . . 41 R 1		20. . . . . 116 R 1		12. . . . . 41 <i>c</i> , 130 <i>b</i>	
9. . . . . 11 <i>b</i> , 41 R 3		23. . . . . 10 R 2		17 1. . . . . 101	
12. . . . . 106 <i>b</i>		9 1. . . . . 22 R 1, 41 <i>b</i> , 106 <i>b</i>		2. . . . . 100 <i>d</i> , 139	
15. . . . . 41 R 3		2. . . . . 28 R 1, 41 <i>b</i>		5. . . . . 91 R 3	
16. . . . . 1 R 3, 51 R 2,		5. . . . . 24 <i>a</i> , 41 R 1, 49 <i>b</i>		6. . . . . 32 R 2, 36 R 5, 113	
86 <i>c</i> , 147		6. . . . . 23		13. . . . . 116 R 1	
16, 17 . . . . . 56		8. . . . . 29 R 6, 115		14. . . . . 145 R 2	
24. . . . . 29 <i>e</i>		11. . . . . 4 R 1, 22 R 3		18 1, 2 . . . . . 116 R 5	
26. . . . . 141 R 3		14. . . . . 106 <i>d</i>		2. . . . . 1 R 1, 99	
4 1. . . . . 111		10 7. . . . . 29 <i>d</i> , 90		3. . . . . 96 R 5	
2. . . . . 4, 6		10. . . . . 34 R 3		5. . . . . 41 R 4, 56	
3. . . . . 106 <i>b</i>		12. . . . . 26		19 4. . . . . 31, 116 R 4	
4. . . . . 41 <i>c</i> , 51 R 2, 130 <i>b</i>		13. . . . . 51 R 6		8. . . . . 28 R 3	
5 1. . . . . 14, 24 R 3, 62,		14. . . . . 22 <i>e</i> , 91 R 1, 91 R 3		11. . . . . 32 R 5	
101 R <i>b</i>		15. . . . . 91 <i>c</i> , 91 R 2, 128 R 1		12. . . . . 65 <i>d</i> , 126 R 8	
2. . . . . 77		20. . . . . 98 <i>c</i>		13. . . . . 111, 115	
4. . . . . 94, 126 R 4		22. . . . . 73 R 2, 99		14. . . . . 67 R 1	
5. . . . . 55 <i>b</i> , 88		24. . . . . 101 R <i>a</i> , 143		18. . . . . 67 R 3	
6. . . . . 73 R 2, 78 R 3, 96 R 1		25. . . . . 56		19. . . . . 113	
8. . . . . 100 <i>e</i> , 100 R 4, 127 <i>d</i>		26. . . . . 56, 101 R <i>d</i>		22. . . . . 86 <i>c</i>	
9. . . . . 30, 120 R 3, 128		27. . . . . 57		20 1. . . . . 91 <i>a</i>	
11. . . . . 28 R 1, 141 R 3		28. . . . . 41 <i>b</i>		2. . . . . 88	
12. . . . . 29 <i>e</i> , 45 R 3		30. . . . . 32 R 1, 109 R 3		3. . . . . 70 <i>a</i>	
13, 14 . . . . . 41 <i>b</i> , 41 R 1, 115		32. . . . . 69 R 2, 94		4. . . . . 24 <i>d</i> , 70 <i>a</i> , 71 R 1	
17 . . . . . 41 R 1, 101 R <i>d</i> ,		3. . . . . 101 R <i>b</i>		6. . . . . 107	
111 R 1		5. . . . . 22 R 1		21 1. . . . . 93	
19. . . . . 63 R 1, 148		6. . . . . 52, 138 <i>b</i>		5. . . . . 84, 88 R 2	
23. . . . . 100 <i>e</i> , 116 R 1		8. . . . . 41 <i>b</i> , 111, 111 R 3		7. . . . . 32 R 1, 67 <i>b</i> , 132 <i>a</i>	
24. . . . . 91 <i>a</i> , 96		9. . . . . 73 R 7, 100 R 5		8. . . . . 70 <i>a</i>	
25. . . . . 4 R 1, 17 R 4, 49 <i>b</i>		10. . . . . 106 <i>b</i>		11. . . . . 108	
26. . . . . 71 R 2		13. . . . . 105 R 2		12. . . . . 83	

ISALIAH	§§	ISALIAH	§§	ISALIAH	§§
22 2.	24 c, 98 b, 98 R 1	30 14.	44 R 3, 67 R 1	41 7.	72 R 4
3.	98 R 1, 101 R 2	15.	84 R 1	15.	24 R 3
11.	109 R 2	16.	32 R 6, 118 R 2	20.	14 R 2, 33 R 1
13.	84, 88 R 2	19.	41 a, 86 b	23.	63 R 1
16.	21 f, 69 R 1	20.	113	24.	34 R 3, 144
17.	86 c	22.	24 R 2, 116 R 1	25.	69 R 4, 144
24.	32 R 5	31 1, 3	105 R 2	26, 28.	65 d
23 4.	128 R 6	4.	151	28.	63 R 1, 132 b
5.	23	5.	55 b, 86 R 4	42 2.	73 R 5
12.	28 R 6, 32 R 1, 97 R 1	6.	10 R 2	6.	65 R 6
15.	101 R d	8.	128 R 1	7.	31
16.	82	32 2.	23, 24 c	16.	143
24 2.	20 R 4, 151 R 2	4.	14	17.	67 b
7.	22 R 3	8.	14, 111	18.	21 f
12.	80, 113	11.	113	21.	83 R 1
16.	67 b	12.	108	22.	88 R 3, 88 R 5
18.	49 b	13.	28 R 3	24.	6 R 3, 9 R 1, 84
23.	32 R 6	33 1.	83 R 2	43 4.	92
25 9.	65 b, 65 R 1	4.	67 R 1	9.	41 R 5
26 3.	100 R 7	6.	28 R 1, 106 d	10, 13.	106 R 2
7.	109 R 3	9.	116 R 6	12.	146 R 4
9.	132 R 2	10.	40 b	13.	14 R 2, 32 R 2
10.	30	14, 16.	73	25.	106 R 2
27 1.	65 R 4	24.	98 R 1	28.	24 c, 51 R 6
4.	65 R 6	34 4.	22 c, 67 R 1	44 8.	145
5, 6.	17 R 2	10.	34 R 4	12, 13.	49 b
11.	35 R 2	13.	73 R 2, 116	14.	93
12.	109	16.	11 R c	16.	117
13.	28 R 3, 98 b	35 1, 2	65 R 6	21.	73 R 4
28 1.	22 R 3, 41 b	2.	28 R 1, 41 R 1, 86 R 3	28.	96 R 4
2.	108 R 1	3.	31	45 1.	96
4.	101	9.	32 R 5	4.	50 b
6.	22 d, 101 R c	6.	54 a	4, 5.	139
7.	22 R 3	8, 16.	20 R 4	9, 10.	45 R 1
8.	28 R 1, 75	9.	27, 35 R 2	14.	127 d
9.	53 c	18.	127 c	17.	16, 67 b
13.	69 R 4, 76, 78 R 3	37 16.	106 R 2	19.	69 R 1
15.	28 R 3, 99	22.	22 R 3, 24 a, 28 R 6	23.	120
16.	78 R 5, 111 R 1	29.	56, 90 R 1, 147	46 4.	106 R 2
17.	145	30.	60 R 2, 88	9.	127 d
19.	32 R 1, 101 R d	38 7.	146	47 1.	83 R 1, 140
21.	108 R 1	10.	80	8, 10.	127 d
24.	58 b	15.	58 R 1, 101 R d	9.	36 R 4, 41 R 1
26.	44 a, 128 R 6	17.	101	11.	139
27.	44 a, 86 a, 86 R 2	18.	98 R 1, 128 R 6	12.	9 R 3
29.	19 R 4, 65 R 2	20.	94	48 3.	51 R 6
29 1.	18, 25	39 1.	48 c, 48 R 2	8.	146 R 3
2.	73 R 7	3.	29 R 1	9.	101
4.	83	40 1.	40 b	12.	106 R 2
7.	98 R 1	7, 8.	40 c	13.	132 R 2
8.	54 a, 100 a	10.	101 R a	18.	39 d, 134
9.	88 R 4	14.	17 R 2	20, 21.	49 b
11, 12.	54 a, 132 a	17.	34 R 3, 80, 127 d	49 4.	71 R 2
14.	86 R 3	18.	8 R 2	6.	34 R 2, 111 R 2
15.	82	20.	24 R 5, 44 R 3, 143	21.	138 b
16.	51 R 5, 117, 122	22, 23.	99 R 2	50 2.	65 R 6, 86 a, 126 R 4, 128
20.	58 a	24.	49 a	4.	72 R 4, 75
30 1.	101	25.	40 b, 65 d	9.	144 R 1
6.	14 R 2	26.	69 R 2, 101 R c	10.	73 R 1
7.	71 R 2	27.	45 R 1, 53 R 1	11.	101 R b
8.	109 R 2	30.	59, 132 R 2	51 1.	143
12.	96, 147	41 1.	101	2.	44 R 3, 51 R 6
		2.	22 R 2, 144	9.	101 R d
		4.	106 R 2	9, 10.	106 R 2
		5.	45 R 2		

ISAIAH	§§	JEREMIAH	§§	JEREMIAH	§§
51 10.	22 R 4	1 5.	45	8 13.	86 R 2, 144
12.	44 R 3, 106 R 2	11.	111 R 1	15.	88 R 2
19.	8 R 1	12.	82	16.	28 R 1, 32 R 6, 49 b
21.	28 R 1, 98 R 1	2 1.	60 R 4	18.	101 R d, p. 143 n.
52 6.	106 R 2	2.	100 R 3, 101 R b	23.	65 b, 135 R 3
12, 13.	51 R 3	5.	8 R 2	9 1.	65 b, 135 R 3
15.	10, 41 R 1	6.	143	5.	96 R 3
53 2.	65 c	8.	144	14.	29 R 7, 98 c
3.	28 R 4, 100 R 7	11.	138 a, 144	17.	73 R 2
4.	28 R 4, 76, 98 b, 118	16.	71	21.	136 R 1, 139
5.	3, 39 R 1, 101 R 6, 109	17.	100 R 6	23.	72 R 1, 88, 108 R 1
6, 7.	22 e	17, 19.	90 R 1	10 3.	1 R 2
7.	138 b	18.	8 R 3	4.	78 R 5
9.	101 R d	21.	32 R 2, 71 R 4, 101 R b	5.	84
11.	32 R 1, 83 R 5	25.	32 R 5	10.	116 R 4
54 11.	100 R 3	27.	22 R 3, 55 c	14.	101 R c
14.	60 R 2	28.	69 R 3	20.	73 R 1
15.	130 R 3	31.	21 f	11 7.	87 R 1
55 4.	28 R 4	32.	140	12 1.	104
5.	143	34.	116 R 6	4.	116
9.	151	37.	138 a	6.	83 R 5, 106 a
10.	51 R 2, 154	3 1.	88 R 2	8.	73 R 6
13.	44 R 3, 143	5.	73 R 5, 116 R 6	12.	28 R 5
56 3.	22 R 4	7, 10.	32 R 1	17.	87
5.	116 R 1	15.	87	13 4.	20 R 2
9.	22 R 3	20.	151	7.	44 b
10.	28 R 1, 90	25.	65 R 5	10.	32 R 3, 65 R 6
57 2.	71 R 2	4 3, 4.	60	12.	86 b
3.	144 R 4	5.	83 R 5	18.	82, 83
8.	116 R 6	7.	128	19.	29 R 6, 116 R 5
11.	136 R 1	10.	58 b	20.	142, 143
17.	51 R 6, 87, 87 R 1	11.	28 R 3, 95	27.	24 R 4
20.	32 R 2, 70 a, 84	13.	41 a	14 8, 9.	143
58 6.	88, 88 R 3	14.	116	15.	138 c
10.	65 R 6	19, 21.	65 R 5, 65 R 6	16.	100 R 2
11.	78 R 5	22.	100 R 3	18.	130 b
59 2.	100 R 2	28.	109 R 2	19.	88 R 2
4, 13.	84, 88 R 2	30.	97 R 1, 141 R 3	22.	106 R 2
8, 12.	116	5 1.	60 R 4, 125	15 9.	24 R 6
10.	65 R 5	7.	8 R 4	10.	29 R 6
19.	140	9.	11 R c	13.	136 R 1
60 7.	101 R d	13.	19 R 2	15.	32 R 5, 90
14.	24 R 6, 71 R 2	15.	9 R 2, 143	18.	126 R 7
61 10.	65 R 6, 73 R 3	18.	78 R 7	12.	82, 95
10, 11.	22 R 2	22.	132 R 2	13.	72 R 4
62 1.	44 R 3	6 8.	100 R 3	14, 15.	155
5.	151	10.	65 R 5	17 2.	32 R 2
12.	100 R 3	13.	34	5-8.	54 a
63 3.	65 R 6	14.	101 R d	6.	73
3-5.	51 R 6	15.	86 b, 96 R 5	10.	96 R 4
7.	32 R 1	16.	8 R 4, 32 R 2	18.	62, 107
11.	28 R 3, 98 c	20.	32 R 2	23, 24, 27.	95
19.	39 d, 134	29.	86 c	18 4, 8.	132 a
64 9, 10.	24 R 2	7 6.	109	15.	100 R 3
10.	28 R 4, 116 R 2	9.	88 R 2	16.	73 R 6
65 1.	81, 144	9, 10.	55 b	18.	62
2.	99 R 1	13.	87 R 1	19 1.	11 R a
4.	29 e	17.	122, 123	12.	96 R 4
5.	73 R 4	18.	88 R 1	13.	88 R 1
18.	60 R 2, 78 R 3	19.	11 b	20 7.	73 R 4
20.	71 R 1	8 3.	41 c, 81	8.	145
66 6.	117 R 3	5.	29 R 5, 67 b	9.	32 R 4, 132 a
10.	67 b	7.	40 c	10.	53 R 1, 65 b
		9.	7 b	11.	67 R 2, 143



JEREMIAH §§			JEREMIAH §§			EZEKIEL §§		
20	17, 18	45 R 2, 48 a	38	23.	108	13	12.	132 R 2
21	1.	91 a	39	11.	48 R 2	22.	29 R 4,	96 R 4
9.		55 c	14.		91 R 4	14	3.	86 a
22	4.	28 R 5, 116 R 1	41	4.	96 R 5	7.		65 R 6
10.		86 c	6.		86 R 4	22.	72 R 4,	132 R 2
14.		88 R 1	42	6.	149	15	4.	132 R 2
16.		19	10.		86 R 2, 149 R 2	16	4.	86 R 2
17.		32 R 5	16, 17		57 R 3	7.		34 R 4
18.		117	19.		40 b	27.		29 R 4
19.		67 b, 87	44	19.	84 R 1, 96 R 4	34.		109
24.	120 R 5, 130 R 3		25.		84 R 1, 114	38.		67 R 2
30.		76, 83 R 2	26.		119	17	9.	91 R 3
23	14.	55 b, 149 R 2	28.		11 R f	10.		91 a
17.		86 c	46	5.	1 R 1, 86 R 3	21,		72 R 4
18.		65 d	6.		128 R 2	18	5, 18	130 R 5
28.		71 R 2	9.		28 R 6	6.		29 c
29.		44 R 3, 143	16.		32 R 2, 99 R 1	10.		35 R 2
36.		31, 116 R 4	48	2.	101	19.		41 R 2
39.		56, 86 c	9.		86 R 2	20.		101 R a
24	2.	29 e, 32 R 2	32.		20 R 4	23.		86 a
25	4.	87 R 1	36.		25, 115	29.		116 R 6
5.		64	38.		29 e	32,		136 R 1
26.		20 R 4	45.	24 R 3,	101 R c	19	9.	149
29.		121	49	12.	106 R 2	20	9.	149 R 2
30.		67 R 3	36.		21 e	26.		146
34.		96 R 5	50	10.	69 b	38.		116 R 6
26	5.	87 R 1	34.		86 R 3	21	19.	32 R 2
18.		71 R 4	46.		113	20.	96 R 1,	149 R 1
27	3.	32 R 2, 99 R 1	51	24, 35	69 b	25.		72 R 3
7.		1	46.		127 c	31.		88 R 2
8.		72 R 4, 91 R 4	49.		94	22	4.	116 R 6
16.		69 R 2	52	7.	44 R 2, 50 a	18.		29 c
18.		69 a, 149 R 2	20.		29 R 4	24.		100 R 3
28	9.	9 b, 146				23	16.	69 b
16.		21 R 1	EZEKIEL			28.		10
30	6.	98 R 1, 125, 140	1	1.	38	30, 46		88 R 2
12.		32 R 5	8.		36 R 4	32.		116 R 6
14, 15		96 R 2	23.		11 R c	40.		9 R 3
21.		41 R 2	2	8.	29 e	42.		113
31	1.	29 R 7	9.		31	43.		1
5, 6		41 a	3	3.	63 R 2	24	2.	11 c
7.		67 R 2	21.		29 R 7	25	3.	117
9.		116 R 6	4	13.	32 R 2	12.		67 b
15.		116 R 1, 127 b	14.		100 R 3	26	10.	28 R 1
18, 25		143	5	16.	63 R 3	14.		116 R 6
32	4.	86 a, 111, 140	6	9.	11 c	17.		22 R 4
10.		21 e	11.		28 R 3	20.		149
12.		20 R 4	7	2.	36 R 3	27	15.	3 R 2
14.		32 R 2, 55 a	24.		32 R 5	30.		70 b
20.		136	8	6.	91 R 1	34.		100 R 6
33, 44		88 R 1	14.		69 R 2	36.		29 e
33	20.	29 R 4	9	2.	32 R 2, 99 R 2,	28	7.	32 R 5
22.		28 R 1			100 R 7	16.		101
34	3.	86 a, 111	2, 3, 11		98 R 1	29	7.	54 a
35	14.	79	10	3.	29 R 7	30	2.	117
36	18.	44 R 1	9.		32 R 2	16.		24 R 4
22.		72 R 4	15.		1 R 2	31	16.	28 R 4
23.		88 R 1	11	7.	86 R 3	32	25.	108 R 2
32.		38 R 5	12.		9 R 1	33	4.	108 R 1
37	9.	9 R 3, 11 c, 51 R 4	13.		67 R 3	18.		14 R 2
17.		126	24.		69 b	33.		109 R 2
21.		88 R 1	12	12.	147	34	11.	56
38	4.	79	13	2.	28 R 1	12.		32 R 2
14.		32 R 2	3.		149 R 2	35	10.	72 R 4
16.		99 R 2	7.		108	36	3.	72 R 1, 147 R 2

Digitized by Google



ZEPHANIAH		§§	PSALMS		§§	PSALMS		§§
7	7.	72 R 4	6	11.	68	22	8.	73 R 6
9.		67 <i>b</i>	7	5.	98 <i>c</i>	22.	41 R 5,	51 R 5,
11.		101 R 5	7.		41 R 5			101
14.		17 R 5	10.		31	29.		100 <i>a</i>
8	2.	67 R 2	11.		22 R 3	30.		41 R 1, 49 <i>b</i>
10.		51 R 6	8	5.	19 R 4, 43 <i>b</i> , 150	32.	97 R 1,	100 R 1
13.		29 <i>e</i>	6.	51 R 4, 75,	78 R 2	23	2.	24 <i>c</i>
15.		83	7.		51 R 5	4.		19 R 4
17.		72 R 4	8.		19 R 4	6.		101
23.		146 R 3	9	7.	1	24	4.	24 <i>d</i>
9	5.	65 R 6	16.		6 R 3, 143	8.		7 <i>c</i>
9.	17 R 3,	136 R 1	18.		69 R 2	25	2.	62
10	7.	65 R 6	19.		128 R 6	9.		65 R 6
11	2.	32 R 2	21.		146 R 3	10.		29 <i>e</i>
4.		24 <i>c</i>	10	4.	146 R 1	11.		56
5.		116 R 1	5.	29 <i>e</i> , 69 R 1,	106 <i>b</i>	14.		94
7.		35 R 2	6.		146 R 2	26	1.	44 R 3
12	10.	9 R 3, 88 R 1	11, 13		146 R 1	4, 5		45 R 3
13	9.	91 R 1, 91 R 3	16.		41 R 5			62
14	4.	32 R 5	11	2.	41 R 3	27	1.	7 <i>a</i>
10.		32 R 2	3.		41 R 2	2.		58 <i>a</i>
12.		88, 116 R 1	4.		102, 106 <i>b</i>	6.		62
			6.		45 R 6	9.		65 R 3
MALACHI			12	3.	29 R 8,	67 R 3	10.	51 R 5
1	4.	83	4.		65 R 6	28	1.	101
7, 12		100 R 6	6.		40 <i>b</i> , 144	30		39 R 1
8.		126 R 1	8.		6			21 <i>c</i>
10.		135	13	4.	67 R 2	10.		8 R 2
10, 11		22 R 3	5.		73	13.		149 R 3
11.		109	14	2.	65 R 5	31	5.	6 R 3
13.		117	5.		67 <i>b</i>	6.		41 R 5
2	6.	113	7.		135 R 3	20.		32 R 1
11.	24 R 3,	116 R 5	16	6.	14	24.		101 R <i>d</i>
12.		65 R 6	9.		51 R 2	32	1.	98 R 1
13.		78 R 2	11.		17 R 2	2.		143
15.		100 R 6	17	3.	90 R 1	5.		51 R 5
16.		144 R 4	5.		88 R 5	8.		109 R 3
3	9.	21 <i>f</i>	8.		45 R 4	9.	94,	128 R 5
10.		125	9.		6 R 3	10.		32 R 1
19.		150	10.	17 R 4,	109 R 3	33	17.	22 <i>c</i>
24.		77	11.		71	34	6.	128 R 2
			13, 14		109 R 3	8.		49 <i>a</i>
PSALMS			18	1.	25	35	2.	101 R <i>a</i>
1	1.	21 <i>e</i> , 39 <i>b</i>	4.		97 R 1	8.		69 R 4, 139
3.		101 R <i>d</i>	7.		45 R 2	12.		78 R 1
3, 6		44 <i>a</i>	12.		51 R 5	14.		101 R <i>d</i>
4.	9 <i>b</i> , 22 R 2		18.		32 R 2	15.		144
2	1.	39 <i>b</i>	22.		101	16.		28 R 6
2.	19 R 4, 22 R 3		28.		31	19.		29 R 4
6.	3, 24 R 2, 155		31.		106	36	7.	34 R 6
8, 10		22 R 3	33.	78 R 2,	98 <i>c</i> , 99	13.		41 <i>a</i>
9.		24 <i>b</i>	35.		116	37	3.	73
12.	28 R 1, 53 R 1		36.		90 R 1	14.		22 R 3
3	5.	69 R 2, 101 R <i>b</i>	40.		98 R 1	27.		64
5.	50 <i>a</i> , 109 R 3		41.		78 R 7	31.		116
6.		51 R 7	47.		41 R 5	38.		41 <i>a</i>
8.	71, 71 R 3		19	8, 9, 10	98 <i>b</i>	40.		49 <i>b</i>
9.		133	10.		29 <i>e</i>	38	9.	58 <i>a</i>
4	7.	135	11.	97 R 1, 99		14.		143
8.	25, 28 R 1		20	4.	63 R 1	15.		100 R 3
5	4.	68	7.		41 <i>a</i>	20.		29 R 4
5.		73	8.		5	39	6.	28 R 3
7.	24 <i>c</i> , 28 R 4		9.		58 <i>a</i>	7.		101 R <i>a</i>
13.		78 R 2	21	2.	65 R 6	8.		41 R 2
6	9, 10	41 <i>a</i>	13.		78 R 7	12.		132, R 2

PSALMS	§§	PSALMS	§§	PSALMS	§§
40 6.	95, 132 R 2	59 17.	25	81 9	134
41 3.	128 R 2	60 5.	29 <sup>e</sup>	83 14	131, 134
7.	130 b	10.	23	5	101
42 2.	143	11.	41 R 2	6	71 R 2
4.	91 R 1, 96 R 5	12.	51 R 5	10	101 R d
5.	65 R 5, 73 R 4	13.	139	15	143
6, 12	51 R 4	61 8.	65 R 4	19	109 R 3
6, 7, 12	p. 143 n.	62 4.	32 R 2, 99 R 1	84 4	40 <sup>c</sup>
43 1.	128 R 1	5.	116 R 1	85 9	136 R 1
5.	p. 143 n.	10.	34 R 3, 132 R 2	14	65 R 6
44 3.	109 R 3	63 7.	17 R 2	87 3	109
5.	106 R 2	64 6.	146 R 1	5	106 R 2
10, 11	51 R 5	7.	27	88 5	101 R d, 140
19.	128 R 6	8-10	49 <sup>b</sup>	6	98 R 1
21.	130 b, 131 R 1	9.	116 R 1	8	77
45 8.	77	65 4.	17 R 3	9	17 R 2
9.	29 <sup>e</sup>	5.	25, 32 R 5, 144	11	83 R 4, 141 R 3
12.	136 R 1	66 6.	65 R 5	89 28	91 R 4
13.	34	9.	19 R 2	40	101
14.	28 R 3	10.	91 R 3	48, 51	1 R 1
46 3.	91 R 2	17.	109 R 3	51	32 R 1
4.	132 R 2	67 3.	96 R 5	90 2	145
5.	17 R 2, 32 R 5	68 5.	101 R a	3	65 R 6
7.	45 R 2	10.	136 R 1	15	25
47 4.	65 R 6	15.	65 R 6, 109	91 6	68
48 6, 11	151, 151 R 1	16.	34 R 6	14	59
49 4.	17 R 2	22.	28 R 3	92 9	29 <sup>e</sup> , 69 R 1
7.	99	69 5.	29 R 4	11	19 R 4
8.	86 b	10.	23	12	32 R 2
8-10	65 <sup>c</sup>	11.	109 R 3	94 9	126 R 2
11.	118	15.	62, 65 R 3	17	73, 131
13.	22 R 2, 143	22.	51 R 5	22, 23	49 <sup>b</sup>
14.	143	33.	45 R 2	95 7	134
15.	94	71 21.	63 R 2	8	101 R d
50 3.	109, 128 R 2	72 13, 16	65 R 6	10	22 R 3, 50 a
5.	101 R d	19.	81 R 2	11	150
10.	22 R 3	73 2.	116	96 4	97 R 1
16.	50 a	10.	32 R 5	97 1	39 R 1
18.	130 b	13.	71 R 2	99 6	101 R a
20.	83, 141 R 3	15.	131 R 1	101 3	91 R 3
21.	86 R 3, 146 R 1	17.	45, 65 R 5	5	22 R 3
51 3.	28	27.	98 R 1, 101	102 5	101 R c
4.	83	28.	91 R 3, 116 R 3	9	98 R 1
6.	149 R 3	74 7.	101	14	83, 141 R 3
14.	75	11.	136 R 1	28	106 R 2
18.	65 <sup>c</sup>	15.	32 R 5	103 5	116
52 5.	34 R 2	23.	98 R 1	14	100 R 2
9.	45 R 3, 50 a, 51 R 4	75 3.	71 R 2	104 6	78 R 7
53 6.	98 R 1	76 6.	67 R 2	6-8	45 R 2
54 6.	101 R a	7.	136	14, 15	96
55 3.	65 R 5	8.	97 R 1, 145	15	75
7.	65 b, 65 R 4	11.	17 R 2	16	34 R 6
9.	69 R 2	77 4, 7	65 R 5	18	32 R 2
13.	65 <sup>c</sup>	78 6.	44 R 3	20	22 R 3, 65 R 6, 132 b
18.	51 R 4, 65 R 5	9.	28 R 6	21	96 R 4
19.	101	15, 26, 49, 50.	51 R 5	22, 27-30	132 R 2
22.	29 <sup>e</sup>	17, 20	45 R 2	25	6 R 1
56 3.	71 R 2	49.	32 R 5	32	51 R 4, 51 R 6
4, 10	25	79 10.	99	33	3 R 1
57 5.	65 R 5, 98 R 1	80 5.	41 R 2	106 13	83
7.	41 R 5	9.	45 R 2	14	67 b
58 2.	71 R 2	11.	34 R 6, 80	18	51 R 5
5.	65 R 6, 143	15.	6 R 1	23, 26, 27	91 R 4
9.	71 R 1	81 6.	25, 144	42	44 R 1
59 16.	50 b, 130 R 4	7, 8	51 R 5		

PSALMS	§§	PSALMS	§§	PROVERBS	§§
107 6, 13 . . .	51 R 5	134 2 . . .	69 R 2	8 6 . . .	14
26-29 . . .	51 R 6	135 17 . . .	128 R 3	22, 25 . . .	145
29 . . .	65 R 6	136 4-7 . . .	98 b	30 . . .	29 e
108 2, 7 . . .	109 R 3	19, 20 . . .	73 R 7	32 . . .	25
109 2 . . .	67 R 3	137 3 11 R a, 75 .	101 R c	9 11 . . .	108 R 2
3 . . .	73 R 4	8 . . .	97 R 1	12 . . .	58 b, 130 R 4
4 . . .	29 e	8, 9 . . .	25	10 1 . . .	44 a
7 . . .	70 a	138 3 . . .	25, 50 b, 51 R 5	4 . . .	67 R 3
19 . . .	143	139 8, 9 . . .	132 R 2	25 . . .	132 R 2
24 . . .	101 R c	11 . . .	48 d, 132 R 2	26 . . .	16
28 . . .	49 b	12 . . .	34 R 2	11 2 . . .	48 d, 132 R 2
110 2 . . .	60 R 2	13 . . .	51 R 5	16 . . .	24 R 3, 151
3 . . .	29 e	14 . . .	71 R 2	21 . . .	22 R 3
111 7 . . .	29 e	18 . . .	3 R 1, 132 R 2	12 4 . . .	24 R 3
8 . . .	32 R 5	19 . . .	134	7 . . .	132 R 2
114 3 . . .	51 R 5	22 . . .	67 b	19 . . .	65 R 5
8 . . .	76, 78 R 3	140 9 . . .	65 R 4	26 . . .	65 R 6
115 7 . . .	3 R 2	12 . . .	24 R 3	28 . . .	128 R 2
8 . . .	99 R 2	141 5 . . .	128 R 2, 132 R 2	13 10 . . .	109 R 1
116 5 . . .	104	10 . . .	116 R 1	21 . . .	72 R 4
14, 15, 18 . . .	69 R 2	142 4 . . .	p. 143 n.	24 . . .	77
15 . . .	28 R 5	143 7 . . .	65 R 2	14 2 . . .	98 R 1
118 8, 9 . . .	33, 104	144 2 . . .	144	9 . . .	116 R 1
11 . . .	88 R 4	3 . . .	51 R 3	19 . . .	40 c
19 . . .	65 R 4	13 . . .	115	35 . . .	116 R 2
20 . . .	28 R 5	146 2 . . .	3 R 1	15 12 . . .	84
119 5 . . .	135 R 2	4 . . .	132 R 2	20 . . .	24 a
11, 80 . . .	149	5 . . .	101 R a	25 . . .	65 R 6
17 . . .	65 R 4	147 1 . . .	116 R 3	16 4 . . .	20 R 4
21 . . .	99 R 1	18 . . .	132 b	5 . . .	22 R 3
41, 77 . . .	69 R 4	148 13 . . .	22 R 3	19 . . .	32 R 5
62 . . .	68	149 2 . . .	16	29 . . .	54 a
72 . . .	116 R 3	6 . . .	139	17 1 . . .	116 R 3
75, 78, 86 . . .	71 R 2	PROVERBS			151
86 . . .	29 R 4	1 3 . . .	84	3 . . .	40 b
92 . . .	131	7 . . .	40 c	5 . . .	88 R 2, 88 R 5
103 . . .	115	9 . . .	24 c	12 . . .	132 R 2
136 . . .	73 R 2	12 . . .	70 a	20 . . .	24 R 5
137, 155 . . .	116 R 3	27 . . .	91 a	18 3 . . .	48 d
120 5 . . .	73, 117	2 5 . . .	131 R 2	9 . . .	24 R 3
7 . . .	29 e	19 . . .	98 R 1	10, 17 . . .	54 a
121 3 . . .	19 R 2, 128 R 2	3 10 . . .	73 R 2	13, 22 . . .	132 R 2
123 2 . . .	151	17 . . .	29 e	22 . . .	48 d
4 . . .	20 R 4, 28 R 5	18, 35 . . .	116 R 1	19 8 . . .	94
124 1, 2 . . .	131 R 1	23 . . .	67 R 2	25 . . .	108 R 3
3 . . .	70 a	24 . . .	132 a	20 3 . . .	101 R c
4 . . .	69 R 2	25 . . .	128 R 2	7 . . .	145 R 1
125 1 . . .	143	26 . . .	101 R a	10 . . .	29 R 8
4 . . .	24 R 5	28 . . .	139	13 . . .	64
5 . . .	22 R 3, 106 c	4 16 . . .	54 a	21 3, 9 . . .	33, 91 R 3
126 6 . . .	86 c	18 . . .	86 R 4	6 . . .	28 R 3
127 1 . . .	130 R 4	5 6 . . .	139	13 . . .	81 R 4
2 . . .	68, 90	19 . . .	24 c	16 . . .	84
128 5 . . .	65 d	22 . . .	29 R 7	19 . . .	24 R 3
129 3 . . .	108 R 1	6 11 . . .	57 R 1	22 . . .	49 a
6 . . .	145 R 2	13 . . .	73 R 6	22 12, 13 . . .	40 c
8 . . .	40 b	16 . . .	106 R 2	19 . . .	1
130 1 . . .	40 b	17, 18 . . .	31	21 . . .	29 e
2 . . .	31	22 . . .	132 a	23 . . .	71
131 2 . . .	120 R 3, p. 143 n.	7 7 . . .	51 R 5	24 . . .	24 R 3
132 1 . . .	90	10 . . .	71 R 2	23 1 . . .	86 R 3
5 . . .	17 R 2	14 . . .	101 R d	2 . . .	24 R 3
11, 12 . . .	6 R 3, 28 R 5	19 . . .	21 d	15 . . .	1
15, 16, 18 . . .	75	26 . . .	32 R 1	25 . . .	65 R 6
133 1 . . .	7 b			24 8 . . .	24 R 3

PROVERBS	§§	JOB	§§	JOB	§§
24 11. . . . .	134	4 11. . . . .	51 R 5	12 3. . . . .	100 R 3
23. . . . .	84	15, 16. . . . .	14, 45 R 2	7. . . . .	116
27, 33, 34. . . . .	57 R 1	19. . . . .	81	9. . . . .	41 R 2
31. . . . .	80	20. . . . .	73 R 5	11. . . . .	151
32. . . . .	107 R 1	5 7. . . . .	24 R 3, 151	17. . . . .	70 a, 71 R 1
25 3, 20, 25. . . . .	151	11. . . . .	51 R 5, 69 R 2	18, 22-25. . . . .	49 a
4. . . . .	50 b	15, 16. . . . .	49 b	24. . . . .	128 R 3
4, 5 84, 88 R 2, 132 R 2		20, 23. . . . .	41 b	13 5. . . . .	65 b, 135
17. . . . .	73	22. . . . .	60 R 2, 128 R 2	7. . . . .	126 R 1
24. . . . .	24 R 3	24. . . . .	29 e	13. . . . .	8
26 2. . . . .	93	6 2. . . . .	108 R 2, 134	19. . . . .	131 R 2, 144 R 1
7, 8, 14. . . . .	151	3. . . . .	17 R 2	27. . . . .	65 R 6
12. . . . .	108 R 3, 132 R 2	4. . . . .	73 R 4	14 1. . . . .	98 b
17. . . . .	143	8. . . . .	135, 135 R 3	2. . . . .	49 a
18. . . . .	99 R 1	9. . . . .	83	4, 13. . . . .	135 R 3
26. . . . .	132 R 2	9, 10. . . . .	65 b	10. . . . .	51 R 4
27 2. . . . .	65 R 3	10. . . . .	3 R 2	11. . . . .	151
16. . . . .	116 R 1	11. . . . .	150	19. . . . .	116
28 1. . . . .	116 R 1, 139	12, 28. . . . .	122	22. . . . .	p. 143 n.
20. . . . .	17 R 2	13. . . . .	126 R 2	15 3. . . . .	101
21. . . . .	84	17. . . . .	45 R 2, 109 R 1	7. . . . .	45 R 1, 71 R 1
29 1, 8. . . . .	24 R 3	21. . . . .	51 R 4	10. . . . .	24 R 5
21. . . . .	132 R 2	25. . . . .	84	16. . . . .	97 R 1
30 3. . . . .	16, 128 R 6	27. . . . .	73 R 5	21. . . . .	69 R 4
15, 24, 29. . . . .	106 R 2	7 2. . . . .	44 R 3, 143	33. . . . .	65 R 6
25. . . . .	128 R 1	3. . . . .	108 R 2	16 3. . . . .	126 R 1
28. . . . .	108 R 3	4. . . . .	130 b	4. . . . .	131
31 1. . . . .	29 R 1	9. . . . .	40 c, 49 a	8. . . . .	141 R 3
9. . . . .	71 R 2	12. . . . .	150	9, 10. . . . .	73 R 6
29. . . . .	32 R 1	13. . . . .	101 R a	16. . . . .	116 R 4
		14. . . . .	81	17. . . . .	101 R d
		17. . . . .	43 b, 51 R 4	20, 21. . . . .	65 b
		20. . . . .	101 R d, 132 R 2	17 1. . . . .	17 R 3
		8 3. . . . .	124	2. . . . .	65 R 6
		4. . . . .	130 b	18 7. . . . .	24 R 2
		6. . . . .	131 R 2	9, 12. . . . .	65 R 6
		8. . . . .	73 R 5	14, 15. . . . .	109, 109 R 2
		9. . . . .	29 e	19 3. . . . .	6 R 2, 83
		12. . . . .	44 R 3	4. . . . .	132 R 2
		19. . . . .	115	7. . . . .	81 R 4
		9 2. . . . .	7 b, 118	18. . . . .	65 R 5, 130 R 4
		4. . . . .	24 d, 48 b, 73 R 5		132 R 2
		5. . . . .	139	19. . . . .	6 R 3
		11-13. . . . .	44 a	23. . . . .	21 e, 135 R 3
		15, 16. . . . .	130 b	25. . . . .	70 a, 71 R 1, 146 R 3
		19. . . . .	117	26. . . . .	101 R c, 108 R 2
		26. . . . .	44 R 3, 101 R d	28. . . . .	146 R 1
		27. . . . .	96 R 3	20 4. . . . .	96 R 5
		29. . . . .	43 b	11. . . . .	116
		32, 33. . . . .	65 c, 65 R 4	14. . . . .	130 R 4
		10 1. . . . .	p. 143 n.	17. . . . .	23 R 6, 61, 128 R 2
		7. . . . .	101 R d	23, 26, 28. . . . .	65 R 6
		8. . . . .	51 R 4	26. . . . .	113
		14. . . . .	130 b, 131 R 1	21 5. . . . .	22 R 3
		16. . . . .	83	7. . . . .	71
		16, 17. . . . .	65 R 6	9. . . . .	101 R c
		22. . . . .	51 R 4, 128 R 3	16. . . . .	41 R 5
		11 2. . . . .	24 R 3	21. . . . .	116 R 2, 145 R 1
		5. . . . .	135 R 3	22. . . . .	105
		6. . . . .	65 d, 73 R 7	34. . . . .	71 R 2
		13. . . . .	130 b	22 3. . . . .	124
		15. . . . .	101 R c, 131 R 2	12. . . . .	69 R 1
		16. . . . .	41 R 3, 143	17. . . . .	146 R 1
		17. . . . .	34 R 3, 63 R 1, 109	21. . . . .	14 R 2
		12 2. . . . .	118	28. . . . .	65 b, 65 R 6

Digitized by Google



ECCLESIASTES	§§	EZRA	§§	NEHEMIAH	§§
9 11. . . . .	88 R 1	2 . . . . .	37 R 3	13 10. . . . .	116
12 4. . . . .	24 R 3	59. . . . .	125	17. . . . .	47
7. . . . .	65 R 6	62. . . . .	29 R 4, 101	21. . . . .	22 R 3
ESTHER		5. . . . .	32 R 3	23. . . . .	1 R 1, 41 R 3
1 8, 22 . . . . .	29 R 8	3 7. . . . .	24 R 6	24. . . . .	29 R 8
2 11. . . . .	29 R 8	8. . . . .	83 R 2		
15. . . . .	100 R 2	9. . . . .	116 R 3	1 CHRONICLES	
3 4. . . . .	146	12. . . . .	6 R 1, 29 R 7	2 3, 9 . . . . .	81 R 3
4 2. . . . .	95	4 22. . . . .	91 R 3	30, 32 . . . . .	128 R 3
14. . . . .	43 R 1	5 8. . . . .	80	3 1, 4 . . . . .	81 R 3
16. . . . .	114, 130 R 4	12. . . . .	1 R 1	1, 5 . . . . .	28 R 5
5 3, 6 . . . . .	65 d	7 8. . . . .	38 R 2	20. . . . .	36 R 3
8 6. . . . .	83	21. . . . .	1	4 9. . . . .	146 R 2
8. . . . .	88 R 1, 95	8 15. . . . .	36 c	17. . . . .	83 R 4
9 1. . . . .	88 R 5	16, 24. . . . .	73 R 7	5 1. . . . .	17 R 2, 95
4. . . . .	86 R 4	21. . . . .	29 a	9. . . . .	29 a
6, 12, 16, 17	88 R 1	25. . . . .	22 R 4	26. . . . .	29 R 7, 73 R 7
10 2. . . . .	123 R 2	29. . . . .	20 R 4	6 17. . . . .	100 R 2
DANIEL		9 1. . . . .	29 a, 29 R 7	34. . . . .	96 R 4
1 5, 12, 15 . . . . .	36 c	4. . . . .	44 R 2	7 5. . . . .	28 R 5
8. . . . .	146	15. . . . .	95	9 13. . . . .	26
16. . . . .	100 R 2	10 12. . . . .	67 R 3	22. . . . .	1 R 1, 29 R 7
17. . . . .	36 R 4	13. . . . .	29 e, 82	25. . . . .	94
20. . . . .	38 R 5	14. . . . .	20 R 4, 22 R 4,	27. . . . .	136 R 1
2 13. . . . .	146 R 4	17. . . . .	28 R 5, 29 R 8	10 13. . . . .	96 R 4
16, 18 96 R 4, . . . . .	111 R 2	NEHEMIAH	22 R 4	11 7. . . . .	108
26. . . . .	144 R 3	1 1. . . . .	38	8. . . . .	44 R 2
30. . . . .	108 R 2	4. . . . .	100 R 2	23. . . . .	37 R 4
37. . . . .	9 R 1	7. . . . .	86 R 3	12 8. . . . .	93
3 27. . . . .	17 R 4	2 1. . . . .	38 R 2	23. . . . .	34 R 6
4 5. . . . .	144 R 3	3. . . . .	147	34. . . . .	29 R 8
6. . . . .	9 R 1	9. . . . .	48 R 2	13 5. . . . .	101 R 6
22. . . . .	108 R 2	10. . . . .	67 b	14 15. . . . .	72 R 4
28, 29 . . . . .	108 R 2	12. . . . .	29 d, 114	15 2. . . . .	95
5 19. . . . .	100 R 2	13, 15 . . . . .	100 R 2	12. . . . .	144, 144 R 5
7 18. . . . .	16	4 4. . . . .	116 R 3	19. . . . .	29 c
8 1. . . . .	22 R 4	11. . . . .	17	27. . . . .	20 R 4
6. . . . .	24 R 3	12. . . . .	35 R 1	16 36. . . . .	88 R 1
12. . . . .	65 R 6	17. . . . .	98 R 1	37. . . . .	73 R 7
13. 20 R 4, 29 e, 32 R 2	35 R 1, 136	5 5. . . . .	1 R 1	17 4. . . . .	127 a
16. . . . .	6	7. . . . .	101 R c	21. . . . .	8 R 2
9 5. . . . .	88 R 1	14. . . . .	p. 143 n.	18 14. . . . .	100 R 2
13. . . . .	72 R 4	18. . . . .	38 R 2, 114	19 3. . . . .	149 R 1
23. . . . .	29 e	6 1. . . . .	84 R 1	20 3. . . . .	44 R 2
25. . . . .	83	2. . . . .	81	21 17. . . . .	6 R 1, 106 R 2
26. . . . .	99 R 1	6. . . . .	17 R 3	18. . . . .	146 R 2
10 1. . . . .	144 R 3	12. . . . .	100 R 6	22 1. . . . .	106 R 2
9. . . . .	100 R 2	18. . . . .	127 a	23 26. . . . .	95
11 1. . . . .	96 R 3	7 64. . . . .	24 R 3	24 12-18 . . . . .	38
4, 10 . . . . .	65 R 6	8 8. . . . .	29 R 4	16. . . . .	38 R 3
10, 13 . . . . .	86 c	10. . . . .	88 R 1	25 8. . . . .	101 R d
11, 27 . . . . .	29 R 7	11. . . . .	144 R 5	18-31 . . . . .	38
14. . . . .	28 R 6	13. . . . .	117	19. . . . .	38 R 3
16-19 . . . . .	65 R 6	9 3, 5 . . . . .	96 R 4, 136 R 1	26 13. . . . .	29 R 8
25, 28, 30 . . . . .	65 R 6	6. . . . .	100 a, 100 R 6	27 2-13 . . . . .	38
31. . . . .	32 R 2	19, 32, 34 . . . . .	106 R 2	28 5. . . . .	32 R 1
12 2. . . . .	5	28. . . . .	72 R 4	18. . . . .	29 R 4
11. . . . .	96 R 4	31. . . . .	73 R 4, 109	19. . . . .	88 R 1
EZRA		35. . . . .	83 R 2	29 3. . . . .	144 R 5
1 5. . . . .	144 R 5	10 29. . . . .	17 R 6	4. . . . .	29 R 3
7. . . . .	39 R 1	37. . . . .	84 R 1	8, 17 . . . . .	22 R 4
		39. . . . .		14. . . . .	146 R 2
				22. . . . .	73 R 7
				29. . . . .	123 R 2

2 CHRONICLES	§§	2 CHRONICLES	§§	2 CHRONICLES	§§
1 4. . .	22 R 4	9 21. . .	44 <sup>b</sup>	23 1. . .	73 R 7
10. . .	32 R 3	28. . .	108	25 16. . .	108, 126 R 5
2 12. . .	73 R 7	10 8. . .	116 R 1	20. . .	22 R 3
13, 14. . .	22 <sup>d</sup>	11 12. . .	29 R 8	26 13. . .	17
3 4-9. . .	78 R 2	16 9. . .	113, 144, 144 R 5	27 7. . .	123 R 2
4 10. . .	32 R 5	11. . .	123 R 2	28 9. . .	101 R 6
13. . .	29 <sup>c</sup>	12. . .	71 R 3	20. . .	73 R 4
5 11. . .	95	17 12. . .	86 R 4	29 27. . .	25, 136 R 1
7 17. . .	96 R 4	14. . .	116 R 6	36. . .	22 R 4
18. . .	73 R 5	18 3. . .	151 R 2	30 10. . .	100 R 2
8 11. . .	28 R 5	19 5. . .	29 R 8	19. . .	144 R 5
13. . .	96 R 4	20 6. . .	95, 106 R 2	31 7, 10. . .	111 R 2
16. . .	20 R 4	15. . .	155	32 32. . .	123 R 2
18. . .	29 R 3	17. . .	95	33 20. . .	69 R 1
9 9, 13. . .	29 R 3	22. . .	144 R 5	34 22. . .	144 R 5
20. . .	128	22 6. . .	44 R 2	36 16. . .	100 R 2

# INDEX OF SUBJECTS

(Figures refer to §§.)

**ABSOLUTE** object, 67.  
**Abstract** ideas, expressed by *sem.*, 14; by *plur.*, 16.  
**Accentuation** of ptc. with Art. 22 R 4; error in, 141 R 1.  
**Accusative**, idea of, 66; kinds of, 66; acc. of absolute obj., 67; cognate acc., 67, in plur., 67 R 2; organ of expression as cog. acc., 67 R 3; acc. of time, 68; of place, 69, 69 R 1, 69 R 2; acc. of condition, 70; adverbial acc., 70, 71 R 2; acc. of specification, 71, 71 R 3; of motive, 71 R 4; acc. of direct obj., 72; verbs governing obj., 73; verbs with two acc. of obj., 74-77; acc. of product, 76; predicate acc., 76, 78 R 6; two acc. of different kinds, 78; acc. after pass. 79 seq. *Nota acc.* rare in poetry, 72; cases where use necessary, 72 R 1; rare except with acc. of obj., 72 R 3; apparent anomalous use, 72 R 4.  
**Active** infin. for pass., 96 R 5.  
**Addition**, idea of, expressed by prep., 101 R 6, 101 R d.  
**Adjective**, placed exceptionally before noun, 30 R 1; concord of, 30; with dual, 31; with plur. of Eminence, 31, 116 R 4; with collectives, 31, 115; determination of adj., 30, 32 R 2, demons. adj., 32, 32 R 3; adj. used nominally, 32 R 5, 28 R 3; the epithet used instead of noun, 32 R 6; adj. little developed in early Shemitic, 24, 102. *See* Comparison.  
**Adverb**, 70 b; follows verb, except negatives, 110; adverbial use of inf. abs., 87; adverbial idea expressed by a verb, 82; some adv. of time, 145 R 3.  
**Adversative** Sent., 155.  
**Affirmative** Sent., 118; the oath, 119.  
**Agreement** of subj. and pred., 112; simple subj., 113; dual subj., 113; composite subj., 114; when consisting of noun and pron., 114; when of different genders, 114. Agreement of collectives, 115; of plur. of Eminence, 31, 116 R 4; of

*plur. inhumanus*, 116; anomalies in agreement, 116 R 1, 116 R 3, 116 R 6; agreement with gen., 116 R 2; names of nations, 116 R 5.  
**Answer**, in interrog. sent., 126.  
**Anticipative** pron. resumed by noun (permutative), 29 R 7.  
**Apposition**, nominal, 29 seq.; repetition of prep., &c., before proper name, 29, 29 R 2; some apparent cases may be acc. of specification, &c., 29 R 4, and others due to errors of text, 29 R 5; the word *all* in appos., 29 R 6; appos. (permutative) to pron., 29 R 7; various senses of same word repeated in appos., 29 R 8; words in appos. as double acc. of obj., 76.  
**Article**, 19 seq.; numeral *one* for indef. Art., 19 R 1; pred. and inf. without Art., 19; Art. not used with words determinate in themselves or by consn., 20; exceptions to this rule, 20 R 4; Art. with vocative, 21; with classes and in comparisons, 22, 22 R 2; omitted in poetry, 22 R 3; used as Rel., 22 R 4; with ptc., 22 R 4, 99.  
**Attributive** (Adj.) circumscribed by gen. of noun, 24; especially with the words *man*, *woman*, &c., 24 R 3, and in neg. clauses, 128 R 3, 128 R 5; by perf., 41 R 3, and impf., 44 R 3.  
*Beth essentia*, 101 R a.  
**CARDINAL** Numbers, 35 seq.  
**Cases**, 18.  
*Casus pendens*, 106.  
**Causal** Sent., 147; causal sense of prep., 101 R c, 147 R 1.  
**Circumscription** of Gen. by prep., 28 R 5.  
**Circumstantial** Clause, 137 seq.; order of words in, 137; ptc. greatly used, 138; circumstance placed parallel to main action, 141; use of impf. in cir. cl., 44 R 3, 141 R 3.  
**Cognate** acc., 67. *See* Acc.

Cohortative, occasionally in 3rd pers., 63 R 1; use of, 62; with light vav, 65; anomalous coh. forms, 65 R 5; with strong vav, 51 R 7.  
 Collectives, used for plur., 17; concord of, 115.  
 Comparative Sent., 151.  
 Comparison of adj., 33 seq.; *tertium compar.* expressed by verb, 33, sometimes unexpressed, 33 R 3; superlative, 34; expressed by noun with its gen. pl., 34 R 4; by abstract noun with gen., 34 R 5; by use of divine name, 34 R 6; by adj. and gen., 32 R 5.  
 Complement of verbal sent., 110; order of words in sent., 111.  
 Compound Sent., 106.  
 Condition, acc. of, 70; chiefly adj. or ptcp., occasionally noun, 71 R 1.  
 Conditional Sent., 129; cond. particles, 129; protasis strengthened by inf. abs., 130 R 3; hypothetical sent., 131; idiomatic cond. sent. with two *vav perf.*, 132; with two imper., 132; without conditional particles, 132 R 2.  
 Conjunctive Sent., 136; exegetical use of *and*, 136 R c; use of *and* to express informal consequence or conclusion, 136 R d; in letters, 136 R d.  
 Co-ordination of verbal ideas for subordination, 83, 51, 51 R 1; of clauses in interrog. sent., 126 R 4; in obj. sent., 146 R 4.  
 Copula, logical, unexpressed in nominal sent., 104; 3 pers. pron. as copula, 106 *in fin.*; regulated as to gen. and numb. by subj., 106 R 2.  
 Consequential Sent., 150.  
 Construct, 18; before adverbs, &c., 24 R 4; before a clause, 25; before prepp., 28 R 1; before vav cop., 28 R 1; apparent separation from gen., 28 R 3; attraction of noun in appos. into cons., 28 R 6; Art. anomalously with cons., 20 R 4.  
 Conversive Tenses, 46 seq.  
 DATES, expression of, 38.  
 Dative, expressed by prep. *to*, 101 R b; *dat. commodi*, 101 R b; ethical dat., 101 R b.  
 Demonstrative pron., 4; adj., 32, 32 R 3.  
 Determination of noun, *see* Art.; of adj., 30; of noun with numerals, 37 *in fin.*; of numerals, 37 R 5.  
 Disjunctive Sent., 152.  
 Distributive Numerals, 38 R 4.  
 Dual, concord of, with adj. and verb, 31, 113; of numerals as multiplicative, 38 R 5.  
 ELEGY, how raised, 117.  
 Ellipse of pronom. obj., 73 R 5; of pron. subj. and obj. to inf. cons., 91 R 1; of pron. subj. to ptcp., 100; of obj. of verb by brachylogy, 73 R 5.  
 Eminence, plur. of, 16; concord of, 31, 116 R 4.

Emphasis on subj. expressed by *casus pendens*, 106; shown by expression of pron. in verbal sent., 107, 107 R 1; expressed by repetition of word, 29 R 8.  
 Equation, *vav* of, 151.  
 Ethical Dative, 101 R b.  
 Exceptive Sent., 154.  
 Exclamation. *See* Interjec. Sent.  
 FEMININE, of living creatures, 12; classes of inanimate things, 13; abstracts and collect., *nomen unitatis*, 14; for *neut.* of other languages, 14 R 2, 1 R 2, 109 R 2.  
 Final Sent., 148.  
 Fractions, how expressed, 38 R 6.  
 Future, expressed by impf., 43; fut. perf. by perf., 41.  
 GENDER, 1 seq.; mas. pron. for fem., 1 R 3.  
 Genitive, 23 seq., *see* Construct; gen. of subj. and obj., 23 R 1; of *respect* usual with adj. and ptcp., 24 R 5; gen. of proper names, 24 R 6; clause as gen., 25; circumscription of gen., 28 R 5.  
 Government of Verb, 66 seq. *See* Acc.  
 HE local, used in enfeebled sense, 69 R 2.  
 Hypothetical Sent., 131.  
 IMPERATIVE, 60; not used with neg., 60; lengthened imper., 60 R 1; as strong fut., 60 R 2; plur. imper. in poetry, 60 R 3; imper. with light vav, 64.  
 Imperfect, 42 seq.; as fut., 43; in dependent actions, 43; as subjunct. after telic particles, 43; as frequentative, 44; use in attributive clauses, 44 R 3; impf. in single actions, 45; in interrogation, 45 R 1; in poetry, 45 R 2, 51 R 5; interchange of perf. and impf., 45 R 3; impf. as imper., 45 R 4.  
 Imperf. with strong vav, *vav impf.*, 47 seq.; continues perf. in its various uses, 48; pointing of vav impf. with light vav, 51 R 6. Imperf. with light vav, 59.  
 Impersonal consn., 109.  
 Indefinite Pron., 8.  
 Indefinite subj., *one, they*, expressed by 3 sing. and 3 plur. of verb, 108; real subj. the ptcp., 108 R 1; by ptcp. in pl., rarely sing., 108; by 2nd pers. in phrase *as thou comest to*, 108 R 3; indef. consn. in later style for pass., 108 R 2.  
 Infinitive, abstract noun of verb, 84; infin. abs., 84; as absolute obj., 67; uses of inf. abs., 85; with its own verb, 86, 86 R 2; adverbial use, 87; use instead of fin. verb, 88; continued by fin. vb., 88 R 3; subj. expressed with inf. abs., 88 R 5; infin. abs. in these uses in *ucc.*, 88 R 6.  
 Infinitive cons., 89; does not admit Art., 19; its consn., 90; governs as its own

- verb, 91; order of inf., subj. and obj., 91; omission of pron., subj. and obj., 91 R 1; subj. in gen., or nom., 91, 91 R 2; obj. when noun or pron. in acc., 91 R 3, 91 R 4; adverbial (gerundial) use, 93; use as gerundive and periphrastic fut., 94; with neg., 95; continued by finite tense, 96, 96 R 2; later use for finite form, 96 R 3, 96 R 4; act. inf. for pass., 96 R 5.
- Interjectional Sent.**, 117; elliptical, 117 R 3.
- Interrogative Pron.**, 7; particles, 125 R 6.
- Interrogative Sent.**, without particles, 121; particle at head of clause, 122; disjunctive question, 124; oblique question, 125; answer, 126; accumulation of interrog. particles, 126 R 2; co-ordination of clauses, 126 R 4; question used in remonstrance, &c., 126 R 5, R 6.
- JUSSIVE**, used occasionally in 1st pers., 63 R 1; in 2nd pers. with neg., 63 R 2; use of juss., 63; anomalous use, 65 R 6; juss. with light vav, 65; with neg. often merely subjective fut., 128 R 2.
- Kaph* when repeated in comparisons, 151 R 2; cf. p. 143.
- Ki* recitativum, 146 R 2.
- MATERIAL**, acc. of, 76.
- Moods**, 60 seq.; moods with light vav, 64 seq.
- Multiplicatives**, 38 R 5.
- NEGATIVE Sent.**, with fin. verb, 127; with imper., 60; with infin., 95; with ptcp., 100; negative particles, 127; double neg., 128; neg. extends to following clause, 128 R 6; neg. as privative, 128 R 1; poetical forms of neg., 128 R 5.
- Neuter**, supplied by fem., 14 R 2, 109 R 2.
- Nomen unitatis*, 14.
- Nominal Sent.**, 103.
- Nota acc.* See *Acc.*
- Noun** as pred. in Nom. Sent., 29 *in fin.*, 102.
- Number**. See *Plur.*, 15 seq.
- Numerals**, 35; Cardinals, 35 seq.; Ordinals, 38 seq.; Distributives, 38 R 4; Multiplicatives, 38 R 5; Fractions, 38 R 6; rules for prose composition, 38 *Obs.*
- OATH**, 119; of denial and affirmation, 120.
- Object**, acc. of, 72; verbs governing, 73; pronom. obj. omitted, 73 R 5; obj. regarded as means of realizing the action, 73 R 6; prep. *to* conveys action to obj., 73 R 7; double obj., 74 seq.
- Object Sent.**, 146.
- Optative Sent.**, 133; *wish* expressed by
- impf., imper., ptcp., 133; by *who?* with verb, esp. *who will give?* 135; consn. of this phrase, 135 R 3.
- Oratio obliqua*, 146 R 1.
- Ordinal Numbers**, 38 seq.
- PARTICIPLE**, 97; act. ptcp. as noun, and pass. as adj., 97 R 1, 99; consn. of ptcp., 98, in poetry, 98 R 1; ptcp. with Art. as rel. clause, 99; restrictions to this use, 99 R 1; place of ptcp. in sent., 100; pron. subj. omitted, 100; neg. of ptcp., 100, 100 R 3; continued by fin. vb., 100, 100 R 4; much used in description, 100, 138; time of ptcp., 100, 100 R 1; joined with verb *to be* to express duration, 100 R 2; governs obj. by prep. *to*, 100 R 5; in later style used as fin. verb, 100 R 6.
- Passive**, expresses an action the agent of which is not named, 79; hence governs acc., 79, 81 R 3; connected with agent by prep., 81; the nearer of two acc. becomes subj., 80, rarely the more remote, 81 R 1; impersonal use, 81 R 3, 109; act. inf. for pass., 96 R 5.
- Perfect**, 39 seq.; in stative verbs, 40; in verbs of speaking, 40; perf. of experience, 40; of confidence, 41; prophetic perf., 41, 41 R 1; perf. in questions, 41 R 2; in attributive clause, 41 R 3; precativ. perf., 41 R 5.
- Perf. with strong vav**, 52 seq.; in continuance of impf., 53 seq.; as frequentative, 54, 54 R 1; in continuance of imper., coh., juss., inf., ptcp., 55; in apodosis of temporal, causal and conditional sent., 56, 57 R 1. Perf. with vav copulative in narration, later usage, 58.
- Pluperfect**, expressed by Perf., 39; by vav impf., 48, 48 R 2.
- Plural**, of compound expressions, 15; in things composed of parts, abstracts, 16; of Eminence, 16; expressed by collectives, 17; used to express the idea generally, 17 R 3; referred to as collect. unity by sing. pron., 116 R 1. See *Agreement*.
- Potential**, expressed by Impf., 42, 43.
- Precative Perf.**, 41 R 5.
- Predicate**, without Art., 19; stands after subj. in Nom. Sent., 103; before subj. when simple adj., and in dependent sentences, 104; precedes subj. in Verbal Sent., 105, unless subj. be emphatic, 105, as in Circ. Cl., 105, and where connexion of narrative is broken, 105, 105 R 1. Pred. coextensive with subj., 19 R 3, 99 R 3. See *Agreement*.
- Pregnant Construction**, 101.
- Prepositions**, 101; uses, 101 R 1; compound prepp. in later style, 101 R 2.
- Present tense**, expressed by impf., 42; by perf. in stative verbs, 40; of freq. actions by impf., 44; of single actions

by ptc. in prose, 45, by impf. in poetry, 45 R 3.

Privative use of prep., 101 R c; of negatives, 128 R 1.

Product, acc. of, 76.

Pronouns, 1 seq.; expression of pers. pron. gives emphasis to suff., 1, and to subj. in verbal sent., 107; demons. pron. used in appos. to noun, 6 R 1, always when noun has suff., 32, 32 R 3; demons. used to give vividness in questions, 6 R 2, 7, 125 R 6; used as Rel., 6 R 3. Reflexive pron., how expressed, 11; pronominal ideas expressed by nouns, 11 R 1; pron. as copula in Nom. Sent., 106 end; anticipative pron., 29 R 7.

Prophetic Perf., 41, 41 R 1.

Purpose Sent., 148.

REFLEXIVE PRON., how expressed, 11.

Relative Pron., 9; Art as Rel., 22 R 4.

Relative Sent., 142; Eng. rel. sent. often descriptive sent. in Heb., 142; omission of so-called rel. pron. in rel. sent., 143, 144.

Repetition of same word in various senses, 29 R 8.

Restrictive Sent., 153.

SECUTION of perf. by vav impf., 48 seq.; of impf. by vav perf., 52 seq.; of impf. after *then*, &c., 51 R 2; of fut. perf., proph. perf., and perf. of confidence, 51 R 2.

Sentence, the, 102; nominal, 103; verbal, 105; compound, 106; order of words in sent., 111; kinds of sent., 117 seq.

Singular, used for pl., in such words as *hand*, *head*, &c., 17 R 4; used distributively in ref. to a plur., 116 R 1.

Style, point of, to vary order of words, 105 R 2, 111 R 3; later style, 9 R 2, 22 R 4, 29 R 1, 7, 8; 36, 36 R 2, 37 R 3, 4; 58, 65 R 6, 69 R 2, 73 R 7, 81 R 3, 88, 88 R 1, 96 R 3, 4; 100 R 2, 100 R 6, 101 R d, 108 R 2.

Subject, place in Nom. Sent., 103; in Verb. Sent., 105; resumption of, in Compound Sent., 106; emphasis on, 107, 107 R 1; omission of subj. of ptc., 100; double subj., 109 R 3; indefinite subj., 108.

Subjunctive expressed by Impf., 42.

Subordination of words to verb by prepp., 101; of one verb to another, 82, 83; in impf., 83 R 1; in ptc., 83 R 2.

Suffix to noun, in gen., 2; to verb, in acc. of obj., 2; occasionally indirect obj., 73 R 4; suff. to inf. often acc., 91 R 4.

Superlative. *See* Comparison.

TEMPORAL Sent., 145.

Tenses, *see* Perf., Impf.; converse tenses, 46.

Times (once, twice, &c.), 38 R 5.

VAV, *see* Conjunct. Sent., 136; vav explicative, 136 R 1; of informal inference, 136 R 1; of equation, 151; of concomitance, 114 *note*.

Verb, government by. *See* Acc.

Verbal Sent., 105.

Vocative with Art., 21 end.



# The International Theological Library

EDITED BY

PROFESSORS S. D. F. SALMOND, D.D., AND C. A. BRIGGS, D.D.

---

*No. I. of the Series. Fifth Edition, with APPENDIX. Post 8vo, price 12s.,*

## AN INTRODUCTION TO THE LITERATURE OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.

BY PROFESSOR S. R. DRIVER, D.D., OXFORD.

\* \* The APPENDIX may be had separately, price One Shilling. It contains supplementary information likely to prove useful to Students, and notes of all material changes introduced into the text since the first Edition.

'The service which Canon Driver's book will render in the present confusion of mind on this great subject, can scarcely be overestimated.'—*The Times*.

'By far the best account of the great critical problems connected with the Old Testament that has yet been written. . . . It is a perfect marvel of compression and lucidity combined. A monument of learning and well-balanced judgment.'—*The Guardian*.

---

*No. II. of the Series. Second Edition. Post 8vo, 10s. 6d.,*

## CHRISTIAN ETHICS.

BY NEWMAN SMYTH, D.D.,

AUTHOR OF 'OLD FAITHS IN NEW LIGHT,' 'THE REALITY OF FAITH, ETC. ETC.

'There is not a dead, dull, conventional line in the volume. It is the work of a wise, well-informed, independent, and thoroughly competent writer. It removes a reproach from our indigenous theology, fills a glaring blank in our literature, and is sure to become the text-book in Christian Ethics.'—Professor MARCUS DODS, D.D., in *The Bookman*.

'It is so beautifully clear, devoid of dullness, and has so many "bursts of eloquence," that it will take the reader who considers Christian Ethics for the first time under his tuition literally by storm.'—*Methodist Times*.

---

*No. III. of the Series. Second Edition. Post 8vo, 10s. 6d.,*

## APOLOGETICS; OR, CHRISTIANITY DEFENSIVELY STATED.

BY PROFESSOR A. B. BRUCE, D.D.,

AUTHOR OF

'THE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE,' 'THE HUMILIATION OF CHRIST,' 'THE KINGDOM OF GOD,' ETC.

'In this noble work of Dr. Bruce, the reader feels on every page that he is in contact with a mind and spirit in which all the conditions for a genuine apologetic are fulfilled. . . . At the end of Dr. Bruce's work the reader is uplifted with a great and steady confidence in the truth of the gospel; the evangel has been pleading its cause with him, and he has felt its power.'—*British Weekly*.

---

Detailed Prospectus of the 'International Theological Library' free on application.



*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

NOW IN COURSE OF PUBLICATION.

*Parts I. and II. ready, price 4s. net, each,*

## A NEW SYRIAC LEXICON.

BY DR. C. BROCKELMANN, Breslau.

WITH A PREFACE BY PROFESSOR T. NÖLDEKE.

NOTE.—The Parts will be issued in steady succession, and it is hoped that the publication will be completed (in about 500 pages) this year. The price (in parts) will probably not exceed 30s. A detailed Prospectus, with SPECIMEN PAGE, will be sent by the Publishers free on application.

'The appearance of a new Syriac Lexicon, designed to meet the wants of students, is an event of considerable importance for the progress of Semitic studies at home and abroad. The work, of which the first part has just been issued, will be welcomed on all hands as fulfilling what has long been the most conspicuous *lacuna* in Semitic bibliography. . . . The publishers have earned, and will certainly receive, the thanks of every Semitic student for thus coming forward to remove what had almost become a scandal to international scholarship, the lack of a student's dictionary of a language so important to the philologist, the historian, and the theologian.'—A. R. S. KENNEDY, D.D. (Professor of Oriental Languages in the University of Aberdeen), in *The Expository Times*.

*In demy 8vo, price 7s. 6d.,*

## CANON AND TEXT OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.

BY PROFESSOR DR. FRANTS BUHL, LEIPZIG.

TRANSLATED BY REV. JOHN MACPHERSON, M.A.

\*.\* *Professor Buhl is successor to the late Prof. Franz Delitzsch, at Leipzig.*

'By far the best manual that exists on the subject of which it treats.'—Prof. A. B. DAVIDSON, D.D., in *The Expositor*.

'It would be difficult to find a more comprehensive, succinct, and lucid digest of the results of recent study of the Old Testament canon and text than is given in this volume. Instead of bewildering us with a crowd of discordant opinions, the author sifts the evidence and indicates the right conclusion. His tone is eminently free and impartial. He is no slave to tradition, and no lover of novelty for its own sake. The discussion in the text is kept clear by the relegation of further references and quotations to supplementary paragraphs. These paragraphs are a perfect mine of exact, detailed information.'—Prof. J. S. BANKS in *The Critical Review*.

*Second Thousand now ready. Crown 8vo, price 2s.,*

## THE SUPERNATURAL IN CHRISTIANITY.

With Special Reference Statements in the recent Gifford Lectures.

BY PRINCIPAL RAINY, D.D., PROFESSOR J. ORR, D.D., and  
PROFESSOR MARCUS DODS, D.D.

WITH A PREFATORY STATEMENT BY PROFESSOR A. H. CHARTERIS, D.D.

'We have here a calm, masterly, and truly pious statement of the main positions of churchly Christianity. . . . This little book is intrinsically important; it is very timely; and we could wish that it were read by every minister of every church.'—Dr. W. ROBERTSON NICOLL in *The British Weekly*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

'The best New Testament Greek Lexicon. . . . It is a treasury of the results of exact scholarship.'—BISHOP WESTCOTT.

**GRIMM'S LEXICON.**

*Now ready, THIRD EDITION, demy 4to, price 36s.,*

**GREEK-ENGLISH LEXICON OF THE  
NEW TESTAMENT,**

BRING

**Grimm's *Wörterbuch der Hebräischen und Griechischen Sprache*.**

**TRANSLATED, REVISED, AND ENLARGED**

**By JOSEPH HENRY THAYER, D.D.,**

**BUSSEY PROFESSOR OF NEW TESTAMENT CRITICISM AND INTERPRETATION IN THE  
DIVINITY SCHOOL OF HARVARD UNIVERSITY.**

'I regard it as a work of the greatest importance. . . . It seems to me a work showing the most patient diligence, and the most carefully arranged collection of useful and helpful references.'—THE BISHOP OF GLOUCESTER AND BRISTOL.

'An excellent book, the value of which for English students will, I feel sure, be best appreciated by those who use it most carefully.'—Professor F. J. A. HORT, D.D.

'This work has been eagerly looked for. . . . The result is an excellent book, which I do not doubt will be the best in the field for many years to come.'—Professor W. SANDAY, D.D., in *The Academy*.

'Undoubtedly the best of its kind. Beautifully printed and well translated, with some corrections and improvements of the original, it will be prized by students of the Christian Scriptures.'—*Athenæum*.

'It should be obtained even at the sacrifice of many volumes of sermons and homiletical aids. There is nothing so intellectually remunerative in ministerial life as foundation work of this kind. Without it no ministry can be solid and strong, nor can its results be profound and abiding. Rarely have Messrs. Clark laid our British Churches under deeper obligations than they have done by the issue of this noble and scholarly work.'—*Baptist Magazine*.

*Just published, in Two large Vols. 8vo, price 18s. net,*

**OLD TESTAMENT THEOLOGY.**

**The Religion of Revelation in its Pre-Christian Stage of Development.**

**By PROF. HERMANN SCHULTZ, D.D., GÖTTINGEN.**

**AUTHORISED ENGLISH TRANSLATION**

**By PROFESSOR J. A. PATERSON, D.D.**

'Professor Paterson has executed the translation with as much skill as care. . . . Readers may rely on his having given the meaning of the original with the utmost accuracy.'—*From the Author's Preface to the Translation*.

'The book will be read with pleasure, and, it need not be said, with profit, not only by professional students, but by all intelligent persons who have an interest in the Old Testament. . . . Though externally popular and of singular literary finish, the author's work within is a laborious and able study of the whole subject.'—Professor A. B. DAVIDSON, D.D.

'A standard work on this subject may be said to be indispensable to every theologian and minister. The book to get, beyond all doubt, is this one by Schultz, which Messrs. Clark have just given to us in English. It is one of the most interesting and readable books we have had in our hands for a long time.'—Professor A. B. BRUCE, D.D.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*In crown 8vo, price 5s.,*

## MESSIANIC PROPHECIES IN HISTORICAL SUCCESSION.

BY FRANZ DELITZSCH.

TRANSLATED BY PROF. S. I. CURTISS, D.D., CHICAGO.

'The proofs of this volume were corrected by the author on his deathbed, and the Preface was dictated by him five days before his death. There is something sacred about such a book. It embodies the results of the most recent scholarly investigation, and at the same time breathes the spirit of deep and fervent Christian faith. In times when it needs the greatest care to handle wisely the subject of Messianic Prophecy, the student could not well have a better guide than this short but comprehensive volume. It is as full of instruction as it is a help to discriminating faith. We heartily wish it a wide circulation.'—*Methodist Recorder*.

---

### DELITZSCH'S NEW COMMENTARY ON GENESIS.

*In Two Vols., 8vo, price 21s.,*

## A NEW COMMENTARY ON GENESIS.

BY PROFESSOR FRANZ DELITZSCH, D.D., LEIPZIG.

NOTE.—While preparing the translation, the translator was favoured by Prof. Delitzsch with numerous improvements and additions. It may therefore be regarded as made from a revised version of the New Commentary on Genesis.

'We congratulate Prof. Delitzsch on this new edition. By it, not less than by his other commentaries, he has earned the gratitude of every lover of biblical science, and we shall be surprised if, in the future, many do not acknowledge that they have found in it a welcome help and guide.'—Professor S. R. DRIVER in *The Academy*.

'We wish it were in our power to follow in detail the contents of Dr. Delitzsch's most interesting introduction, and to give specimens of the admirable, concise, and lucid notes in his exposition; but we have said enough to show our readers our high estimate of the value of the work.'—*Church Bells*.

'The work of a reverent mind and a sincere believer, and not seldom there are touches of great beauty and of spiritual insight in it.'—*Guardian*.

---

*In Two Vols., 8vo, price 21s.,*

## THE PROPHECIES OF ISAIAH.

BY PROFESSOR FRANZ DELITZSCH, D.D., LEIPZIG.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FOURTH AND LAST EDITION. *The only Authorised Translation.*

*With an Introduction by Prof. S. R. DRIVER, D.D., Oxford.*

'Delitzsch's last gift to the Christian Church. . . In our opinion, those who would enter into the meaning of that Spirit as He spake long ago by Isaiah, words of comfort and hope which have not lost their significance to-day, cannot find a better guide; one more marked by learning, reverence, and insight, than Franz Delitzsch.'—Professor W. T. DAVISON in *The Expository Times*.

'Commentaries in Europe are not often republished after their authors' deaths, whatever is of permanent value in them being appropriated by their successors. But it may be long before one undertakes the task of expounding the Prophets possessing so many gifts and employing them so well.'—*Guardian*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*In demy 4to, Third Edition, with Supplement, price 38s.,*

**BIBLICO-THEOLOGICAL LEXICON OF NEW  
TESTAMENT GREEK.**

By HERMANN CREMER, D.D.,

PROFESSOR OF THEOLOGY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF GREIFSWALD.

TRANSLATED FROM THE GERMAN OF THE SECOND EDITION

By WILLIAM URWICK, M.A.

THE SUPPLEMENT, WHICH IS INCLUDED IN THE ABOVE, MAY BE HAD  
SEPARATELY, price 14s.

**TRANSLATOR'S NOTE.**

SINCE the publication of the Large English Edition of Professor Cremer's *Lexicon* by Messrs. T. & T. Clark in the year 1878, a third German edition (1883), and a fourth in the present year (1886), have appeared, containing much additional and valuable matter. Articles upon important words already fully treated have been rearranged and enlarged, and several new words have been inserted. Like most German works of the kind, the *Lexicon* has grown edition by edition: it is growing, and probably it will still grow in years to come. The noble English Edition of 1878 being stereotyped, it became necessary to embody these Additions in a SUPPLEMENT involving the somewhat difficult task of gathering up and rearranging alterations and insertions under words already discussed, together with the simpler work of translating the articles upon words (upwards of 300) newly added. The present Supplement, extending over 328 pages, embodies both classes of additional matter.

To facilitate reference, a NEW and very copious INDEX of the entire work, *Lexicon* and Supplement, has been subjoined, enabling the student to consult the work with the same ease as the earlier edition, the arrangement of words by Dr. Cremer not being alphabetical save in groups, and requiring in any case frequent reference to the Index. Here at a glance it will be seen where any word is treated of in either Part.

One main feature of Dr. Cremer's additions is the consideration of the HEBREW EQUIVALENTS to many Greek words, thus making the *Lexicon* invaluable to the Hebraist. To aid him, the very full and important Hebrew Index, embracing upwards of 800 Hebrew words, and extending over several pages, is appended.

'It is not too much to say that the Supplement will greatly enhance the value of the original work; while of this we imagine it needless to add many words of commendation. It holds a deservedly high position in the estimation of all students of the Sacred tongues.'—*Literary Churchman*.

'Dr. Cremer's work is highly and deservedly esteemed in Germany. It gives with care and thoroughness a complete history, as far as it goes, of each word and phrase that it deals with. . . . Dr. Cremer's explanations are most lucidly set out.'—*Guardian*.

'It is hardly possible to exaggerate the value of this work to the student of the Greek Testament. . . . The translation is accurate and idiomatic, and the additions to the later edition are considerable and important.'—*Church Bells*.

'We cannot find an important word in our Greek New Testament which is not discussed with a fulness and discrimination which leaves nothing to be desired.'—*Nonconformist*.

*In One large 8vo Volume, Ninth English Edition, price 15s.,*

**A TREATISE ON THE  
GRAMMAR OF NEW TESTAMENT GREEK,**  
*REGARDED AS THE BASIS OF NEW TESTAMENT EXEGESIS.*

TRANSLATED FROM THE GERMAN OF DR. G. B. WINER.

With large additions and full Indices. Third Edition. Edited by Rev. W. F. MOULTON, D.D., one of the New Testament Translation Revisers.

'We need not say it is the Grammar of the New Testament. It is not only superior to all others, but so superior as to be by common consent the one work of reference on the subject. No other could be mentioned with it.'—*Literary Churchman*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

**WORKS BY PROFESSOR HEINRICH EWALD.**

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

**OLD AND NEW TESTAMENT THEOLOGY.**

**BY HEINRICH EWALD,**

LATE PROFESSOR IN THE UNIVERSITY OF GÖTTINGEN;  
AUTHOR OF 'THE HISTORY OF ISRAEL,' 'REVELATION, ITS NATURE AND RECORD,' ETC.

*Translated from the German*

**BY PROFESSOR THOMAS GOADBY, B.A., NOTTINGHAM.**

'Leading principles which can never be out of date enforced with the energy of genius.'—*Spectator*.

'Suggestive on every page, and therefore essential to every student of theology.'—*Record*.

'We have no scruple in characterising it as a noble and useful work, full of luminous and suggestive teaching. . . . No thoughtful or intelligent man can study it as it deserves to be studied without receiving from it both mental and spiritual stimulus, and being confirmed in the belief of the truth of the gospel of Christ.'—*Baptist Magazine*.

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

**REVELATION:  
ITS NATURE AND RECORD.**

**TRANSLATED BY REV. PROF. THOS. GOADBY, B.A.**

**CONTENTS.**—Introductory: The Doctrine of the Word of God.—PART I. The Nature of the Revelation of the Word of God.—PART II. Revelation in Heathenism and in Israel.—PART III. Revelation in the Bible.

**NOTE.**—This first volume of Ewald's great and important work, 'Die Lehre der Bibel von Gott,' is offered to the English public as an attempt to read Revelation, Religion, and Scripture in the light of universal history and the common experience of man, and with constant reference to all the great religious systems of the world. The task is as bold and arduous as it is timely and necessary, and Ewald was well fitted to accomplish it. . . . The work has not simply a theological, but a high and significant apologetic value, which those who are called upon to deal with the various forms of modern scepticism will not be slow to recognise.'—*Extract from Translator's Preface*.

'This volume is full of nervous force, eloquent style, and intense moral earnestness. There is poetry of feeling in it also; and, whilst it manifests an original mind, it is accompanied by that spirit of reverence which ought always to be brought to the study of the Holy Scripture. A masterly intellect is associated in Ewald with the humility of a child.'—*Evangelical Magazine*.

'Ewald is one of the most suggestive and helpful writers of this century. This is certainly a noble book, and will be appreciated not less than his other and larger works. . . . There is a rich poetic glow in his writing which gives to it a singular charm.'—*Baptist Magazine*.

*In demy 8vo, price 8s. 6d.,*

**SYNTAX OF THE HEBREW LANGUAGE  
OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.**

**TRANSLATED FROM THE EIGHTH GERMAN EDITION**

**By JAMES KENNEDY, B.D.**

'The work stands unique as regards a patient investigation of facts, written with a profound analysis of the laws of thought, of which language is the reflection. Another striking feature of the work is the regularly progressive order which pervades the whole. The author proceeds by a natural gradation from the simplest elements to the most complex forms.'—*British Quarterly Review*.

'It is well known that Ewald was the first to exhibit the Hebrew Syntax in a philosophical form, and his Grammar is the most important of his numerous works.'—*Athenæum*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

**WORKS BY DR. C. VON ORELLI, Basel.**

TRANSLATED BY REV. J. S. BANKS, HEADINGLEY COLLEGE, LEEDS.

*Just published, in demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## **THE TWELVE MINOR PROPHETS.**

'It is rarely that a commentary is given us so scholarly and yet so compact.'—*Glasgow Herald.*

'A very valuable and trustworthy compendium of the latest results of critical research, written in a sober and devout spirit.'—*Christian World.*

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## **THE PROPHECIES OF ISAIAH.**

'The characteristics of this admirable commentary are brevity, separation of the more grammatical from the more expository notes, and general orthodoxy combined with first-rate scholarship.'—*The Record.*

'Characterised by consummate ability throughout, this work will undoubtedly take high rank among the expositions of the "Evangelical Prophet."'—*The Christian.*

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## **THE PROPHECIES OF JEREMIAH.**

'Will be found a most trustworthy aid to the study of a book that presents many difficult problems.'—*John Bull.*

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## **THE OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY OF THE CONSUMMATION OF GOD'S KINGDOM.**

*Traced in its Historical Development.*

'Cannot fail to be regarded as a standard work upon the subject of Old Testament prophecy.'—*Sword and Trowel.*

'An unusually interesting work for the critical student . . . it possesses that intrinsic quality which commands attention and inquiry such as scholars delight in.'—*Clergyman's Magazine.*

*In crown 8vo, price 5s.,*

## **THE LEVITICAL PRIESTS.**

**A Contribution to the Criticism of the Pentateuch.**

BY PROFESSOR S. I. CURTISS.

'We can strongly recommend Dr. Curtiss' book as a real contribution to the criticism of the Pentateuch.'—*Literary Churchman.*

*In Two Volumes, 8vo, price 21s.,*

## **THEOLOGY OF THE OLD TESTAMENT.**

TRANSLATED FROM THE GERMAN OF

DR. GUST. FR. OEHLER.

'These volumes form a treatise of rare worth.'—*Bibliotheca Sacra.*

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*Now complete in Five Vols., 8vo, price 10s. 6d. each,*

## **HISTORY OF THE JEWISH PEOPLE IN THE TIME OF OUR LORD.**

**By EMIL SCHÜRER, D.D., M.A.,**

**PROFESSOR OF THEOLOGY AT THE UNIVERSITY OF KIEL.**

*First Division, in Two Vols., POLITICAL HISTORY OF PALESTINE, from B.C. 175 to A.D. 135.*

*Second Division, in Three Vols., INTERNAL CONDITION OF PALESTINE IN THE TIME OF CHRIST.*

\* \* Prof. Schürer has prepared an exhaustive INDEX to this work, to which he attaches great value. The Translation is now ready, and is issued in a separate Volume (100 pp. 8vo). Price 2s. 6d. net.

'Under Professor Schürer's guidance, we are enabled to a large extent to construct a social and political framework for the Gospel History, and to set it in such a light as to see new evidences of the truthfulness of that history and of its contemporaneity. . . . The length of our notice shows our estimate of the value of his work.'—*English Churchman*.

'We gladly welcome the publication of this most valuable work.'—*Dublin Review*.

'As a handbook for the study of the New Testament, the work is invaluable and unique.'—*British Quarterly Review*.

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## **THE JEWISH AND THE CHRISTIAN MESSIAH: A STUDY IN THE EARLIEST HISTORY OF CHRISTIANITY.**

**By PROF. VINCENT HENRY STANTON, M.A., D.D.,**

**TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.**

'Mr. Stanton's book answers a real want, and will be indispensable to students of the origin of Christianity. We hope that Mr. Stanton will be able to continue his labours in that most obscure and most important period, of his competency to deal with which he has given such good proof in this book.'—*Guardian*.

'We welcome this book as a valuable addition to the literature of a most important subject. . . . The book is remarkable for the clearness of its style. Mr. Stanton is never obscure from beginning to end, and we think that no reader of average attainments will be able to put the book down without having learnt much from his lucid and scholarly exposition.'—*Ecclesiastical Gazette*.

*In demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,*

## **AN EXPLANATORY COMMENTARY ON ESTHER.**

**With Four Appendices,**

**CONSISTING OF**

**THE SECOND TARGUM TRANSLATED FROM THE ARAMAIC,  
WITH NOTES, MITHRA, THE WINGED BULLS  
OF PERSEPOLIS, AND ZOROASTER.**

**By PROFESSOR PAULUS CASSEL, D.D., BERLIN.**

'A specially remarkable exposition, which will secure for itself a commanding position in biblical literature. It has great charms from a literary and historical point of view.'—*Sword and Trowel*.

'A perfect mine of information.'—*Record*.

'It is manifestly the ready expression of a full and richly stored mind, dispensing the treasures accumulated by years of labour and research. . . . No one whose fortune it is to secure this commentary will rise from its study without a new and lively realisation of the life, trials, and triumphs of Esther and Mordecai.'—*Ecclesiastical Gazette*.

*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

*'For devotional warmth and practical application, Godet is perhaps unsurpassed by any modern commentator amongst foreign Protestants.'*—GUARDIAN.

**PROFESSOR GODET'S WORKS.**

(Copyright, by arrangement with the Author.)

*In course of Publication,*

**INTRODUCTION TO THE NEW TESTAMENT.**

**VOL. I., THE EPISTLES OF ST. PAUL, now ready.**

The authorised English translation of Professor Godet's 'Introduction to the New Testament' will be published by Messrs. Clark shortly. The original Edition is to form three large volumes, Vol. I. (*ready in September*) containing 'St. Paul's Epistles,' Vol. II. 'The Gospels, and Acts of the Apostles,' and Vol. III. 'Hebrews, Catholic Epistles, and the Apocalypse.'

*In Two Volumes, demy 8vo, price 21s.,*

**A COMMENTARY ON  
ST. PAUL'S FIRST EPISTLE TO THE  
CORINTHIANS.**

By PROFESSOR F. GODET, D.D., NEUCHÂTEL.

'We do not know any better commentary to put into the hands of theological students.'—*Guardian*.

'A perfect masterpiece of theological toil and thought. . . . Scholarly, evangelical, exhaustive, and able.'—*Evangelical Review*.

*In Three Volumes, 8vo, price 31s. 6d.*

(A New Edition, revised throughout by the Author.)

**A COMMENTARY ON  
THE GOSPEL OF ST. JOHN.**

'This work forms one of the battle-fields of modern inquiry, and is itself so rich in spiritual truth that it is impossible to examine it too closely; and we welcome this treatise from the pen of Dr. Godet. We have no more competent exegete, and this new volume shows all the learning and vivacity for which the author is distinguished.'—*Freeman*.

*In Two Volumes, 8vo, price 21s.,*

**A COMMENTARY ON  
THE GOSPEL OF ST. LUKE.**

'Marked by clearness and good sense, it will be found to possess value and interest as one of the most recent and copious works specially designed to illustrate this Gospel.'—*Guardian*.

*In Two Volumes, 8vo, price 21s.,*

**A COMMENTARY ON  
ST. PAUL'S EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS.**

'We prefer this commentary to any other we have seen on the subject. . . . We have great pleasure in recommending it as not only rendering invaluable aid in the critical study of the text, but affording practical and deeply suggestive assistance in the exposition of the doctrine.'—*British and Foreign Evangelical Review*.

N.B.—Professor Godet's 'Commentaries' are issued in *The Foreign Theological Library*, from which selections of eight or more volumes may be had at half published price.

*In crown 8vo, Second Edition, price 6s.,*

**DEFENCE OF THE CHRISTIAN FAITH.**

TRANSLATED BY THE HON. AND REV. CANON LYTTELTON, M.A.

'There is trenchant argument and resistless logic in these lectures; but withal, there is cultured imagination and felicitous eloquence, which carry home the appeals to the heart as well as the head.'—*Sword and Trowel*.



*T. and T. Clark's Publications.*

**BISHOP MARTENSEN'S WORKS.**

'The greatest Scandinavian, perhaps the greatest Lutheran, divine of our century. The famous "Dogmatics," the eloquent and varied pages of which contain intellectual food for the laity no less than for the clergy. . . . His "Christian Dogmatics" has exercised as wide an influence on Protestant thought as any volume of our century.'—*Expositor*.

In Three Volumes, 8vo, price 10s. 6d. each,

**CHRISTIAN ETHICS.**

Volume I. GENERAL ETHICS.—II. INDIVIDUAL ETHICS.—III. SOCIAL ETHICS.

'As man is a member of two societies, a temporal and a spiritual, it is clear that his ethical development only can go on when these two are treated side by side. This Bishop Martensen has done with rare skill. We do not know where the conflicting claims of Church and State are more equitably adjusted. . . . We can read these volumes through with unflagging interest.'—*Literary World*.

'Dr. Martensen's work on Christian Dogmatics reveals the strength of thought as well as the fine literary grace of its author. . . . His chief ethical writings comprise a system of Christian Ethics, general and special, in three volumes. Each of these volumes has great and singular excellence, and it might be generally felt that in them the author has surpassed his own work on "Christian Dogmatics."'—Rev. Principal CAIRNS.

In One Volume, 8vo, price 10s. 6d.,

**CHRISTIAN DOGMATICS.**

'To students this volume will be helpful and welcome.'—*Freeman*.

'We feel much indebted to Messrs. Clark for their introduction of this important compendium of orthodox theology from the pen of the learned Danish Bishop. . . . Every reader must rise from its perusal stronger, calmer, and more hopeful, not only for the fortunes of Christianity, but of dogmatic theology.'—*Quarterly Review*.

'Such a book is a library in itself, and a monument of pious labour in the cause of true religion.'—*Irish Ecclesiastical Gazette*.

In demy 8vo, price 9s.,

**A POPULAR INTRODUCTION TO THE  
HISTORY OF CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE.**

By REV. T. G. CRIPPEN.

'A clear and intelligible account of the course of religions from the earliest times to our own; . . . indeed, the student who masters this volume only will have no mere acquaintance with this department of theological work.'—*Freeman*.

'Mr. Crippen is studiously, on some points startlingly, and enviably fair. His book shows wide reading and honest thinking. It abounds in acute distinctions; its statement of varying views of doctrine is sometimes very happy, and it sufficiently illustrates the pathology of theological speculation.'—*Wesleyan Methodist Magazine*.

In Three Volumes, 8vo, price 31s. 6d.,

**A HISTORY OF CHRISTIAN DOCTRINES.**

By THE LATE DR. K. R. HAGENBACH.

Translated from the Fifth and Last German Edition, with  
Additions from other Sources.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY THE VERY REV. DEAN PLUMPTRE.

'This scholarly and elaborate history.'—*Dickinson's Theological Quarterly*.

'There is no work which deals with this subject in a manner so scientific and so thorough as Hagenbach's. Moreover, there is no edition of this work, either in German or in English, which approaches the present as to completeness and accuracy.'—*Church Bells*.

'No work will be more welcome or useful than the present one. We have a whole system of theology from the hand of the greatest living theologian of Germany.'—*Methodist Recorder*.



1111111111



3 2044 036 355 022

Order for [redacted] [redacted]

I. Chap. 27-

§ 9. § 10

§ 44 rem. 3.

Circumstantial 1 vol. sent.

Final Clause. Consecutive  
Modes - & Causal  
 Tabulated Scheme.  
Circumstantial

Driver: Tenses

Need 3<sup>rd</sup> Appendix (Arabic as  
 illust. of Hebrew)

Chap. VII Accents (not necessary)  
 Driver & Moore



